

# THE SPANISH LANGUAGE

# THE GREAT LANGUAGES

## GENERAL EDITOR:

WILLIAM J. ENTWISTLE, M.A., LITT.D., LL.D., D. EM L., F.B.A.  
*King Alfonso XIII Professor of Spanish Studies in the University  
of Oxford, Fellow of Exeter College, Oxford*

## PUBLISHED

### THE CHINESE LANGUAGE

By *R. A. D. Forrest, M.A.*

Lecturer in Tibeto-Burman Linguistics at the School of  
Oriental and African Studies, University of London

### THE FRENCH LANGUAGE (2nd ed.)

By *A. Evert, M.A.*

Professor of the Romance Languages in the University of Oxford

### THE GERMAN LANGUAGE (2nd ed.)

By *R. Priebsch, Ph.D.* and *W. E. Collinson, M.A., Ph.D.*

The former late Professor Emeritus of University College, London, and  
the latter Professor of German and Honorary Lecturer in  
Comparative Philology in the University of Liverpool

### THE SPANISH LANGUAGE, TOGETHER WITH PORTUGUESE, CATALAN, BASQUE

By *William J. Entwistle, M.A.*

### THE GREEK LANGUAGE (2nd ed.)

By *B. F. C. Atkinson, M.A., Ph.D.*

Under-Librarian of the University Library, Cambridge

### RUSSIAN AND THE SLAVONIC LANGUAGES

By *William J. Entwistle, M.A.* and *W. A. Morrison, B.A., Ph.D.*

The latter of the British Broadcasting Corporation, sometime Lecturer in the  
School of Slavonic and East European Studies, University of London

## IN PREPARATION

### SANSKRIT AND THE LANGUAGES OF INDIA

By *T. Burrow, M.A.*

Boden Professor of Sanskrit in the University of Oxford

### THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE

By *Helge Kokeritz, Ph.D.*

Professor of English in Yale University

### THE SEMITIC LANGUAGE

By *W. J. Martin, M.A., B.C.*

Lecturer in Semitics in the University of Liverpool

### THE CELTIC LANGUAGES

By *Kenneth Jackson, M.A.*

Professor of Celtic in the University of Edinburgh

### THE LATIN LANGUAGE

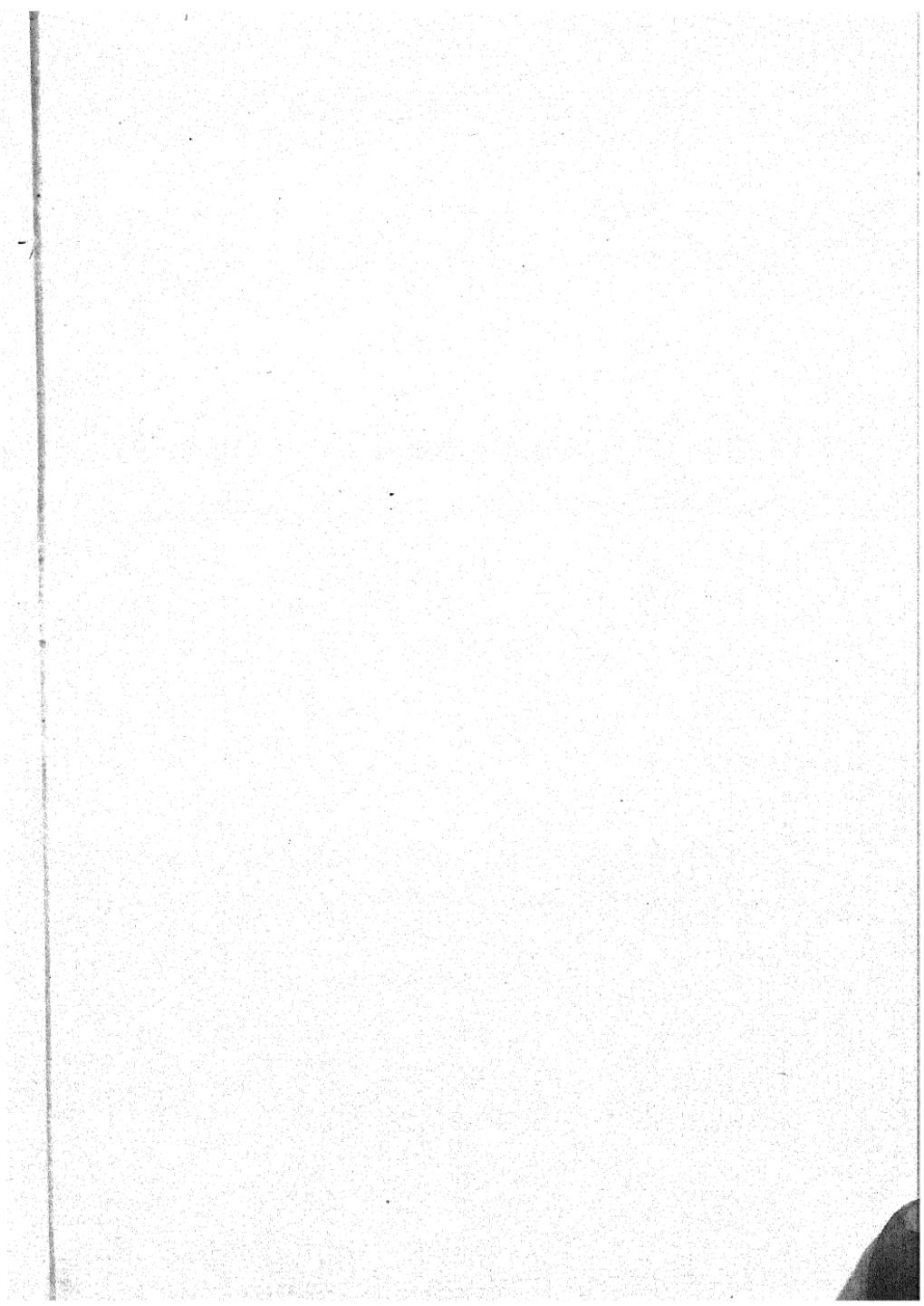
By *L. R. Palmer, M.A.*

Professor of Greek, King's College, University of London

### THE ITALIAN LANGUAGE

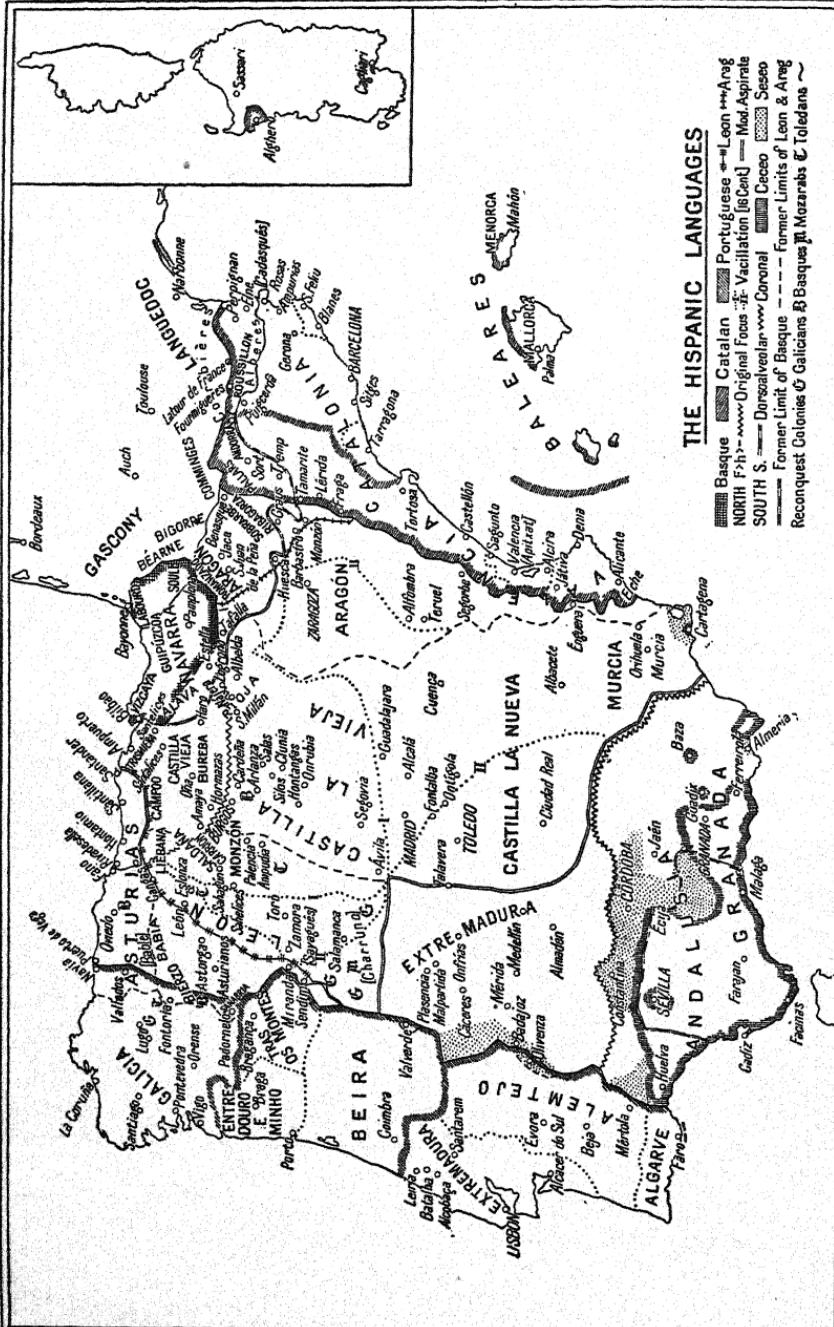
By *Bruno M. Gliorini, D.Litt.*

Professor of Italian Philology in the University of Florence



THE HISPANIC LANGUAGES

Basque ■■■■■ Catalan ■■■■■ Portuguese ■■■■■ Leon ■■■■■ Arag  
 NORTH ■■■■■ Original Focus ■■■■■ Vasconia [Is] Cantabria ■■■■■ Mod. Aspirate  
 SOUTH ■■■■■ Dorsogalveolar ■■■■■ Canario ■■■■■ Seseo ■■■■■ Ceco  
 former limit of Basque — — — former limits of Leon & Arag  
 Reconquest Colonies & Basques & Galicians & Mozarabs & Toledans ~



THE  
SPANISH LANGUAGE  
TOGETHER WITH  
PORTUGUESE, CATALAN AND  
BASQUE

by

WILLIAM J. ENTWISTLE, M.A.

19295



460.9  
ENT

LONDON  
FABER & FABER LIMITED  
24 RUSSELL SQUARE

FIRST PUBLISHED IN MCMXXXVI  
BY FABER & FABER LIMITED  
24 RUSSELL SQUARE LONDON W.C. I  
REPRINTED MCMXLVIII  
MCMLI  
PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN  
AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS CAMBRIDGE  
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL  
LIBRARY, NEW DELHI.

Acc. No. .... 10295 .....  
Date. .... 16-9-60 .....  
Call No. .... 460:9 .....  
Ent

## CONTENTS

CHAP.

I. The Languages of the Spanish Peninsula *page* 1

II. Before the Romans 14

Basque—Basque and Iberian—Basco-Iberian and Peninsular Romance—Celtic and Peninsular Romance—Phœnicians and Carthaginians—The Greeks

III. The Latin of Spain 46

The Testimony of Inscriptions and Classical Authors—Relation to the Rest of Romania—Characteristics of Ibero-Romance—Causes of the Differentiation of the Peninsular Languages—The Germanic Element in Peninsular Romance

IV. Catalan 82

Catalan and its Neighbours—Catalan Origins and Expansion—Medieval Literary Catalan—The Revival of Catalan and Valencian

V. The Rise of Castilian 106

Mozarabic Dialects—Spanish Arabic—The Arabic Element in Spanish—Asturo-Leonese—Navarro-Aragonese Dialects—The Rise of Castilian

VI. Standard Spanish 151

Fixation of Orthography—The Expansion of Castilian—Castile's Casting Vote—The Languages of Literature—Jewish Spanish—Phonetic Development in the Golden Age—The Ennoblement of the Language: Latin Influence—Various Changes in Morphology, Syntax and Loan-words after 1140 (a) Medieval Period; (b) The Golden Age; (c) The Modern Period—The Southern Dialects and Andaluz—Aragonese and Asturo-Leonese

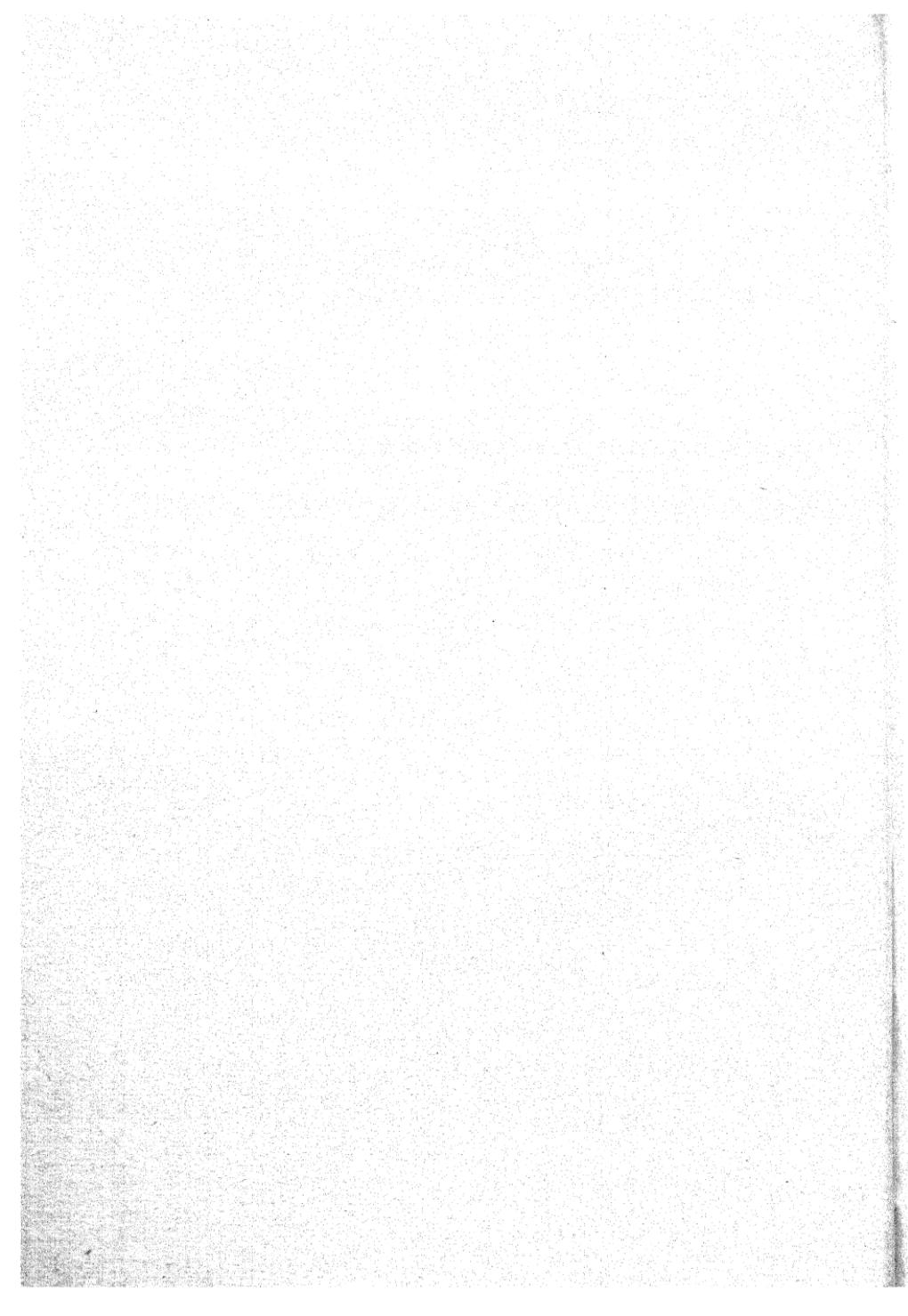
## CONTENTS

CHAP.

VII. The Extension of Spanish to Spanish America	<i>page</i> 229
The Aboriginal Languages—American Indian Loan-words in Spanish—American Indian Evidence for the Evolution of Spanish—American Variations on Standard Spanish—Details of the Spanish of America—The Northern Frontier—Cosmopolis	
VIII. Portuguese	278
Gallæco-Portuguese and Spanish—The Divergence of Portuguese from Galician—Modern Portuguese—Galego—Portuguese Dialects—Insular Portuguese	
IX. The Portuguese Language Overseas	313
In Africa—Indo-Portuguese—Macau and Malaya—Brazilian Portuguese	
Appendix	324
Comparative Tables of Hispanic Phonetics and Phonology	
Indices	337

## MAPS

The Hispanic Languages	<i>frontispiece</i>
Racial Distribution in Roman Spain	<i>facing page</i> 33
The Catalan Frontier	93
Peninsular Romance after the Visigothic Era	113
The Rise of Castilian	147
The Expansion of Castilian	161
The Hispanic Languages and the World after the Great Discoveries	229
Aboriginal Races of Central and South America	233



## CHAPTER I

# THE LANGUAGES OF THE SPANISH PENINSULA

The purpose of this book is to give an account of the Peninsular group of Great Languages. The epithet 'great' can have no purely linguistic meaning. To the philologist all languages are of equal interest; they all contribute to our knowledge of the great human fact of Language. What each has to display is not equally essential, since many belong to vast speech-families and so in the main repeat the same or similar phenomena. Outside these families there exist, however, some languages which are unique. They do not reiterate the experience of many others, but, in their independence, offer the student an unusual wealth of fresh facts. Such a language is Basque. For peers it does not admit the circumjacent Romance tongues, French and Spanish, which are comparatively recent immigrants into its neighbourhood. It is comparable, in its antiquity and originality, not even with Latin, but with primeval Indo-European and the ancestral stocks of the great speech-families. For these qualities Basque draws to itself the eyes of the most proficient and broad-minded students of language, who find in its structure alternative and original solutions for the problems of human expression. In respect of its uniqueness the Basque language merits the description 'great'.

Greatness, however, is not a philological quality, but social and historical. Richness of thought-content and ample diffusion, singly or in combination, confer prestige on a language. The speech of the Athenians in the day of Euripides and Plato, enriched with the thoughts and rhythms of Homer, the lyrists, the tragedians and the historians, was already more copious and beautiful than any tongue before or since, though it was confined within part of one peninsula and some

adjacent islands. The conquests of Alexander made it also territorially great. With less cultural experience the language of imperial Rome exercised in its time, and increasingly exercises, a portentous territorial domination. Extensive and intensive greatness are not necessarily combined; the cases of Bantu and Swahili may be cited as proof. But in general, use over a wide area and by millions of speakers endows a language with depth and experience. Languages of rich thought-content tend to propagate themselves over the largest areas, and conversely they come to know, like the travelled Odysseus, 'the minds and cities of many men'. High social and cultural value expands the use of French and Italian wherever the decencies and loveliness of life are esteemed; English, Spanish and Portuguese are of enormous spatial and numerical importance. These languages do business on the oceans and converse with the ends of the earth, and by such intercourse they have been enriched with a marvellous booty of experience.

Such is the greatness, then, of the Peninsular languages. They are not philologically unique, like Basque, for they are but forms assumed by Latin in particular areas. Even within the Latin group, Spanish, Portuguese and Catalan show fewer ramifications and innovations than a restless tongue such as French. Theirs is a wealth of thought, art, and, above all, human experience. The genius of Cervantes and Camões, of an infinite number of playwrights, novelists, moralists, mystics, has entered into the innermost fibres of these tongues. In their expansive and colonizing urge and their contact with American, African and Asiatic races, Spanish and Portuguese are supreme among Romance Languages. But for the additions they made to the Latin-speaking world in the age of the great discoveries the frontiers of Romania would have shown a permanent contraction since Roman times. Summoning, before Canning, the New World to redress the balance of the Old, Spain and Portugal brought into being that equipoise of Latin and Germanic speech which is a characteristic mark of western civilization.

The expansion of Spanish and Portuguese was principally the work of the great discoverers who followed Columbus to America and Gama to Calicut. Their feats have sometimes been deemed fortuitous, particularly in the case of Spain, which was preoccupied, during the Middle Ages, with merely European interests. In the case of Portugal, the circumnavigation of Africa was a policy deliberately conceived in one great mind, that of Henry the Navigator, and obstinately followed for sixty years at great cost in life and treasure. Columbus, who was prone to exaggerate, perhaps, estimated in 1492 that half the population of the small kingdom had been used up on the African adventure. Gama's successful voyage and the thalassocracy set up by Almeida and Albuquerque are immediate consequences of a great idea courageously applied. Portugal had no Moors on its soil in the fifteenth century, and one of the Navigator's motives was to carry the war across the Straits, not by a frontal attack, but by encircling the rear of Islam. Spain, at that time, still had to reduce the Moslem remnant in Granada. Yet Spain had already extended overseas in a south-westerly direction by occupying the Canary Islands (1402 ff.), and could be expected to pursue an expansionist policy beyond the Straits. The Aragonese monarchs, who were also freed from Moorish complications on their own soil, extended their dominion over Sardinia, Sicily, Naples, Athens and the Morea in the fourteenth century, following a course of Mediterranean ambitions; and in consequence of their action Sicily and Naples maintained at least a family connection with Spain until the unification of Italy last century. We may take it therefore that expansion and colonization are not accidents, but characteristic marks of Spanish history. The experience gained in 'populating' devastated lands, won in the early Middle Ages from the Moors, gave the Hispanic peoples an aptitude for conquest and colonization in which their only modern rivals are the English. It is one of many resemblances between Britain and the Spanish Peninsula which constitute a just claim for mutual study and appreciation.

Determined by the circumstances of the age of great discoveries, the extension of Spanish and Portuguese over the globe corresponds closely with the world as known at the close of that period. The Portuguese extension is African and Asiatic, and as it was essentially maritime, it has made permanent settlements only in islands and ports—Cape Verde, Portuguese Guinea, Santo Tomé, Daman, Diu, Goa, Ceylon, Malacca, Macau, Ternate, Tidore and the Spice Islands. Landward territories like Angola and Moçambique are the result of capitalizing the vague coastal dominion of the earlier explorers under the influence of the nineteenth-century scramble for Africa. Early settlements in Brazil were also of the factory and insular type. Extension into the interior came partly as a result of a change of method in the eighteenth century, when colonization ceased to be conquest and exploitation, but rather occupation of the ground; partly also because the Amazonian forest converted eastern Brazil into a kind of vast island, immune on the land side from attack. The Portuguese penetrated to the edge of this area, to the line where began the Andine dominion of Spain. Spain occupied with her arms and her language the other half of South America, with the sickle of Antillian Islands (though losing many of the smaller ones to France and England in the eighteenth century); she occupied also Mexico and Central America, together with an undefined area to the north of the Río Grande—an area of conquistadors, missionaries, and sailors. Thus in New Mexico and Arizona there is still an area of Spanish speech, assaulted by the dominant English; but in former times the Spanish claim was thinly asserted over a much wider area. Florida was Spanish, together with some coast forts further north. Contracting towards the Mississippi delta, the indefinite frontier ran far enough northward to give Spanish names to a number of western States—Nevada, Texas, California, Oregon (?), to towns—San Francisco, Los Angeles, Santa Fe, Sacramento, rivers—Colorado, Grande, Verde, Brazos, mountains, islands and straits. The last-named extend as far as the Alaskan border.

Only Basque has shown no urge to expansion, but it displays the characteristic of tenacity, the prime condition on which colonies are retained; and in the fifteenth century Basque whalers established something like a thalassocracy in the waters of the Atlantic.

To estimate the number of persons speaking one or other of the Peninsular languages is not easy, and widely varying figures have been given. Census returns for American states are not always available, and it is uncertain how large a deduction is to be made for aborigines totally or partially unacquainted with the language of their rulers. To commence with the smallest, some 550,000 speakers have been attributed to Basque, of whom some 450,000 reside on Spanish soil. The number is decreasing as the territory contracts. Bilbao is a town that can no longer be deemed Basque-speaking, as it was sixty years ago, and the loss of speakers has been estimated at 70,000 in the same period. Catalan is spoken still in Roussillon, since the primitive frontier between France and the Peninsula followed the line of the Corbières, the northern fork of the Pyrenean chain. The language occupies all Catalonia and the Balearic Islands, the coastal half of Valencia, and the single town of Alghero in Sardinia. It was formerly in use in Cagliari, and in medieval times must have had a considerable official standing in the whole island and in Sicily. A total of 5,410,000 has been claimed for Catalan, which includes the 10,000 Algherese and some 100,000 who have emigrated to America and still use their native tongue as a means of private communication. In Roussillon, the use of Catalan runs concurrently with the official and cultural use of French; and from the Alberes southward educated men are to be deemed bilingually Spanish.

About sixteen and a half million Spanish subjects have Spanish for their mother-tongue. The remainder—Catalans, Galicians and Basques—use the language for official purposes, and comparatively few are to be reckoned wholly unacquainted with the dominant speech. Thus we may reckon as speakers of Spanish the 24,242,039 inhabitants of Spain

and the Canary Islands.<sup>1</sup> Spanish dependencies are found on the Moroccan coast (especially Tetuan, Ceuta, Melilla, Alhucemas) and in Río de Oro, Adrar, Ifni, Guinea, Annobon, Corisco, the Great and Little Elobey. Almost a million persons live in these places, but they do not proportionately augment the number of Spanish-speakers. On the other hand, along the northern littoral of Africa and in the Balkans (Salonica, Constantinople, Üsküb, Monastir, etc.) there are still some 200,000 Jews who use ancient varieties of Castilian, derived from the days before their expulsion in 1492. In the Philippine Islands there is a Castilian literature in prose and verse, and 660,000 persons claim a knowledge of the language, though the use of English is rapidly growing. North of the Mexican frontier there must be between 150,000 and 250,000 speakers of Spanish. The estimated total population of Mexico and Central America is 22,663,672; of the Spanish-speaking Antilles (Cuba, Dominican Republic, Puerto Rico), 6,555,000; of the Caribbean and Andine states (Bolivia, Colombia, Ecuador, Peru, Venezuela), 23,744,557; of Chile, 4,287,445; of the Plate republics (Argentina, Paraguay, Uruguay), 14,918,900. While all these millions are ruled in Spanish, they do not all know the language; and there are heavy deductions to be made in Mexico, Guatemala, Ecuador, Peru, Bolivia and Paraguay especially, before we can reach the linguistic census. Roughly speaking, there are at least 85,000,000 persons who habitually speak Spanish as their first or second tongue, and about 100,000,000 in its penumbra. The figure is the highest for a Romance language, and most directly comparable with the hundred and sixty millions who use English.

The numerical strength of Portuguese is lower, but still stands high among Romance languages. In Portugal, Madeira and the Azores there are 6,825,883 persons, and in the Galician provinces of Spain another 2,180,000. Portuguese possessions include almost nine million souls, of whom six and a half million are found in Angola and Moçambique.

<sup>1</sup> *The Statesman's Year Book* (London, Macmillan, 1935).

These latter provinces furnish probably 35,500 Portuguese speakers. Portuguese Asia contains 1,211,507, scattered in islands and ports, and there is some use made of the language in Ceylon. Brazil is estimated to include 43,323,660 inhabitants, subject to a very slight deduction for the Indians of the Amazon unfamiliar with the official tongue, and another for unassimilated immigrants. At least 53,000,000 persons speak Portuguese or a dialect of the same language, and sixty millions are governed through Portuguese.

Remembering that Portuguese and Spanish are closely related and mutually intelligible tongues, it is not unreasonable to claim that the Peninsular group of languages has power over 150,000,000 souls. It controls all South America (save the Guianas), Central America, most of the Antilles, and points along the African and southern Asiatic littoral. With English, Russian, Japanese and Chinese, Spanish makes a ring round the mighty Pacific; with English, Spanish and Portuguese are valid languages of intercourse on the southern Atlantic; and Portuguese occupies key-ports on the Indian Ocean. They are oceanic languages of continental magnitude.

This vast extension in area and population is mirrored in the enrichment and diversification of the languages. The first impressions of the newly found continents, their strange birds, beasts and customs, their rites and polity, were conveyed to Europe and the world through the Spanish and Portuguese languages; these tongues still contain what is, in many ways, the most accurate series of correspondences with the native terms. They have exercised, conversely, a powerful influence on the languages they encountered, mingling them, breaking down their forms, and augmenting their vocabulary. Many varieties of 'Creole' speech have arisen. The nett result of this linguistic experience is that when once we raise the eyes of our minds off the single continent of Europe, it is from Spanish and Portuguese, apart from our own tongue, that we have most to learn. Entirely congruent with Spanish experience is the fact that the first scientific catalogue of the languages of the world, that of

Hervás y Panduro, should have been the work of a Spanish scholar. Not only do the Peninsular languages reflect the conditions found in so vast a portion of the earth, but they contain evidence of experiments in colonization, transient states of society, and a cultural equilibrium which is rather coming into existence than already established. They contain, as it were, some sort of augury for the future.

The Peninsular group is determined not merely by philological considerations. Basque is philologically isolated, and Catalan has been deemed by a majority of experts to stand rather closer to Provençal than to Spanish. But the four languages have lived together for many centuries in a sharply defined area. They enjoy a kind of symbiosis. They offer similar solutions to the same linguistic problem, indicating a common mental attitude in their speakers. They have experienced the same influences under the same conditions, though each has also its own history. Despite the differences between the literary languages, no frontier line can be drawn between the three Romance tongues, which merge into each other over wide bands of country, except in their more recently conquered southern extensions. The instinct for the positive and concrete is as marked in Basque as in Castilian. The phonetic bases of all four languages present much agreement, as, for instance, the fricative values assigned to *b d g* and the general forward articulation. In other respects Spanish, Portuguese and Catalan offer nuances. If we consider Castilian as characterized by a regular alternation of vowels and consonants, then Portuguese appears as predominantly vocalic, and Catalan as predominantly consonantal; though this does not prevent Portuguese from possessing a rich consonantal, and Catalan a subtle vocalic, system. Fundamentally the same material is subjected to three differing rhythms. Romanization, the Moorish invasions, the great discoveries, humanism, Italian and French influences have left similar impressions on the three Romance tongues, so that their vocabularies largely coincide. Even Basque has experienced a romanization of its lexicon, and one of a

generally Spanish complexion. There is a high common measure of agreement between the Peninsular languages, though there is no identity. Unity has never been achieved; only hegemony. Even the theocracy of the Philips brought no more than a single ruler of independent states. The centre of Peninsular balance has, however, always occupied the same area, though the precise point has shifted between Córdoba, León, Burgos and Toledo. There has thus been no doubt that the Castilian point of view is central, and others peripheral and divergent. Catalonia falls away from the Meseta to look towards the Mediterranean: it is related to Provence, reaches out hands to Italy, and aspires (or aspired) to Mediterranean empire and trade; but at the same time Catalonia remains indivisibly part of the Peninsula. The amphitheatre of Lisbon has the Atlantic for its stage: it sees English ships and the highway to India and Brazil. Navarre is a land of mountainous cup-depressions (*navas*); Galicia, of *rias* and valleys; Andalusia, of the Guadalquivir and Genil *vegas* and the coast lands that face Africa. All these divergent interests make for variety in Peninsular life, and therefore in Peninsular languages; but they have not always been equally prominent, and the unification of the whole area has more than once been within sight.

Language is the repository of man's experience. It contains a record of what is normal and of what has occurred but once. Were it possible fully to analyse the languages of our study, we should doubtless be able to present a portrait of the peoples more intimate and exact than that which we see in their literatures. But we should require a more precise psychological method than is at present at our disposal. It has been possible to cull from the Spanish language, for instance, evidence of realism, courtesy, stoicism, fancy, impulsiveness, etc. But a phenomenon like the 'courtly style' of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries is itself complex. That *usted* 'you' was originally *vuestra merced* 'your worship' is certain, but its use was as much to exact a corresponding honorific as to show deference to another person; and it has

lost all implications of 'courtliness' since the Golden Age, to become merely a symbol of formality. Indeed it has gone so far as to become familiar and suspect in some varieties of American Spanish, so that new devices have been adopted to indicate respect. Moreover, though *usted* represents an experience common to all Spaniards, at least in a given epoch, there are other words which must be deemed exceptional. To give meaning to the word *quijotismo* 'quixotry' required the divine accident of *Don Quixote* and Cervantes' genius, while by *quijotizar* 'to defy public opinion with the sang-froid of a Don Quixote' Sr Unamuno indicates hostility to the common norm. Yet more, the linguistic experience is not necessarily ethical; it may have its basis in plain fact. Thus there is a small, but definite, nautical element in American varieties of Spanish (e.g. *amarrar* for *atar*, 'to tie a hawser' becoming simply 'to tie'), which suggests colonists seeking, while still on shipboard, to adopt the colonial pose. So the qualitative interpretation of these languages is one which lies within the more ample historical account of their growth and the influences affecting their development; and it is on the historical statement, though in mere outline, that I wish to dwell. Such an account is often described as the 'external' history of the language, as opposed to the 'internal' history of its sounds, forms and constructions; but there is reason to reject the invidious adjective. The analyses of sounds, forms and constructions separately are partial studies which look forward to the history of the language as a whole. They are essential to the training of the philologist, but he should also not fail to strive towards the whole of which these studies are part. It is this whole which concerns the general reader and student of literature, who must strive to acquire a sense of phases of development in the speech and an appreciation of differences in its texture.

In view of these considerations this book imposes its own plan. A sketch is first attempted of the Peninsula before romanization so as to indicate the linguistic conditions encountered by the Romans. Basque survives from that epoch,

either as representing a widespread 'Iberian' speech or on a narrower basis, and I describe Basque chiefly by its contacts with the Romance languages, its successors. The latter are forms taken by Latin in different portions of the Peninsula; the primitive conditions are in no sense the foundation of Spanish Romance, since they have no relevance except in so far as adopted into the Latin of Spain. With an account of Spanish Latinity the main theme of the book is proposed, and suggestions are made as to possible causes of the later diversity of languages. The earliest of these bifurcations is that which drew apart Catalan and Ibero-Romance. Catalan therefore occupies the fourth chapter, and is studied down to the present day. The remaining chapters are devoted to Ibero-Romance in its two leading forms: Spanish and Portuguese. As this study is pivoted on Spanish, much of what is common to both tongues, and even to both and Catalan, is described under the rubric of Spanish. For instance, the strong Arabic element in all three tongues is treated in association with the Mozarabic dialect of Old Spanish. In three stages we follow the rise of Castilian, so as to understand why Castilian, and not Mozarabic or Leonese, has come to be standard Spanish, though in the older periods Castilian was at variance with common Hispanic speech-habits; we watch the standardization of this Castilian-Spanish under the influence of literature, and its enrichment at various periods; and we note the effect of the American adventure on the language, and the traffic with European and aboriginal tongues. In two more chapters we see how Portuguese-Galician bifurcated from the central dialects at a relatively late date, how they themselves separated, and how Portuguese acquired a rich literature and maintained its cultural independence; briefly we note also what effects have been produced on Portuguese by the expansion of the language in Africa, Asia and Brazil. An anthology which would fairly illustrate this diversity of Hispanic languages and dialects would be more bulky than the format of this book permits. It must be left to the reader's initiative. No attempt is made to give the systematic account

of phonology and morphology which can be obtained in several excellent and well-known text-books, since this work treats only of those facts which have most historical significance; but a tabular summary of comparative phonology is appended, so as to serve for a first reference.

In writing this book I have sought to keep in mind the languages as they can now be heard. It is an account of modern Spanish, Portuguese and Catalan, and how these have come to be what they are. This is not a study of Vulgar Latin in the Peninsula, and nothing is to be gained by picking on medieval or hypothetical forms which would be unfamiliar to the reader, save when attempting the description of a particular period in past time; but on the other hand, I hope attention will be called to the amount of Old Spanish which may be found to-day in use by archaic dialects. This method brings as much of the subject as possible under a listener's personal observation, and should involve the least admixture of conjecture. Lastly, I have endeavoured to choose examples from the most obvious and fundamental elements of the Peninsular speeches, risking a charge of platitude. In constructing a history of the Peninsular languages the best evidence for conclusions is what is self-evident.

The reader is recommended to study the treatises of Sr Menéndez Pidal on subjects connected with Spanish philology, and particularly his *Manual de gramática histórica española* and *Orígenes del español* (Madrid, 1926), to which I am deeply indebted in this book. His article 'Filología (idiomas y dialectos españoles)' in *España* (Madrid, 1925) is the treatment of this subject which stands closest to that which I am attempting. Useful also are the articles in Gröber's *Grundriss der romanischen Philologie* (by Baist, Cornu, Saroñandy, etc.), and the comparative sketch of the Peninsular languages in E. Bourcier, *Éléments de linguistique romane*. F. Hanssen's *Spanische Grammatik auf historischer Grundlage* (Halle, 1910; Spanish translation, 1913) contains syntax as well as phonology and morphology, and the same is true of Sr Menéndez Pidal's *Cantar de mio Cid*, i, ii: *Gramática* (Madrid, 1908). The standard inventory of modern Spanish idiom is R. J. Cuervo's revision of A. Bello's *Gramática castellana*. A number of suggestive details are discussed in R. Lenz, *La Oración y sus partes* (Madrid, 1925). Spanish has received an 'idealistic' analysis from E. Lerch in *Handbuch der Spanienkunde* (Frankfurt a.M. 1932). For Portuguese consult particularly J. Leite de Vasconcellos, *Opúsculos* (Coim-

bra, 1928 ff.), *Lições de Filologia Portuguesa* (Lisbon, 1926) and *Esquisse d'une dialectologie portugaise* (Paris, 1901), together with J. J. Nunes, *Gramática histórica portuguesa* (Lisbon, 1919). For Catalan there is A. Griera's *Gramática histórica del català antic* (Barcelona, 1931) and W. Meyer-Lübke's *Das Katalanische* (Heidelberg, 1925). Useful also are A. Zauner's *Altspanisches Elementarbuch* and J. Huber's *Altportugiesisches Elementarbuch* (both from Heidelberg).

Texts illustrative of linguistic history may be seen in Menéndez Pidal's *Orígenes* and his *Documentos lingüísticos*, J. Leite de Vasconcellos's *Textos arcaicos* (Lisbon, 1923), J. D. M. Ford's *Old Spanish Readings*, and W. Giese's *Anthologie der geistigen Kultur auf der Pyrenäen-Halbinsel (Mittelalter)* (Hamburg, 1927).

The standpoint of this book resembles that of O. Jespersen's *Growth and Structure of the English Language* (8th ed. Leipzig, 1935) and W. von Wartburg's *Évolution et structure de la langue française* (Leipzig, 1934).

The current bibliography of linguistic studies referring to the Spanish Peninsula is to be found in the quarterly *Revista de Filología Española* and in the annual *Year's Work in Modern Language Studies*. These works may excuse me from attempting a formal bibliography.

I take this opportunity of thanking Professor González-Llubera, of Belfast, for his great kindness in reading the book in its first draft and suggesting improvements. I thank also my colleague Mr A. A. Rodrigues, Lecturer in Portuguese in the University of Oxford, for similar courtesies. Neither gentleman is responsible for any blemishes that may remain in the book. I desire also to tender my respectful homage and thanks to my distinguished master in these studies, Sr R. Menéndez Pidal, Litt.D. (Oxon.), who has generously permitted me to make use of his innumerable additions to Spanish philological science. He has discovered much of the truth, and we who write after him, if we would wish to speak the truth, cannot do otherwise than repeat his conclusions and demonstrations.

To my friend, Professor A. Ewert, I am indebted for courteously reading the proofs.

## CHAPTER II

### BEFORE THE ROMANS

When the legions of Scipio Africanus entered the Peninsula by its north-eastern extremity to add the Spains to the Roman dominion, they discovered the land in the power of many masters, several of whom were immigrants like themselves. A few Greek trading-ports descended the eastern coast, and were then continued by the more flourishing Phœnician factories of the far south. The Carthaginians had established an uneasy lordship over the whole south and centre of the Peninsula, and were in contact with the Celtiberian tribes, powerful when they acted together. These tribes, by their name, bore witness to the presence of Celts, who had been mentioned by Herodotus as early as the fifth century B.C. The second half of the word—‘Iberians’—was of a more indefinite value: it meant at least ‘persons dwelling near the mouth of the Iberus or Ebro’, and at most ‘the inhabitants of the Iberian peninsula’. An intermediate extension of the term designates an ‘Iberian’ racial bloc, surrounded by others still less perfectly known to science. Thus we hear of Tartessians, Lusitanians, Gallæci and Vaccæi, who may not have been ‘Iberians’. One of these groups survives to this

---

The shortest introductions to Basque are H. Schuchardt, *Primitæ linguae Vasconum* (Halle, 1923) and J. van Eys, *The Basque Language* (London, 1883). A definitive grammar is H. Gavel’s *Grammaire Basque, I. Phonétique, Parties du discours autres que le verbe* (Bayonne, 1929). There are many discussions of the Basque verb, mostly inventories, notably K. Bouda, *Das transitive und das intransitive Verbum des Baskischen* (Amsterdam, 1933). On pronunciation there is a useful article by T. Navarro Tomás, ‘Pronunciación guipuzcoana’, *Homenaje a Menéndez Pidal*. R. M. Azkue’s *Dictionnaire Basque-espagnol-français* (Bilbao, 1905–1906) is the best complete lexicon. For further information consult the *Revue Internationale des Études Basques* and works by Schuchardt, Vinson, and Uhlenbeck.

day in its ancient emplacement and speaking its ancient language: the Basques. The Vascones of classical times have given their name to Biscay, the Basque Provinces and Gascony. Their frontiers have contracted, and their language has suffered from, or profited by, contact with the neighbouring Latin tongues; but it is essentially a survival from pre-classical antiquity. A description of the main features of Basque therefore will give us a platform for discussing the linguistic state of Spain before the Romans.

### BASQUE

Basque is known as *Vascuence* to the Spaniards, but as *Euskera* to the Basques. There are seven independent provinces protected by the Pyrenean ranges, and as they have known no other unity than that of language, they are wont to call themselves by its name: *Euskalerri*, the people (*herri*) who speak *Euskera*. The unit of society is the 'house' (*etxe-a*), and millennia of isolation without literary or cultural control have split Basque into numerous dialects, which are not mutually intelligible, such as Biscayan, Guipúzcoan, Lower and Upper Navarrese, Labourdin and Souletin; with at least twenty-five subdialects, and local differences for each village and even for each generation of speakers. Under such circumstances only a summary description of the language can be effected here. It has been known adequately since the publication of Dechepare's poems in 1545 and Leizarraga's Basque New Testament in 1571; but we have medieval jottings by the traveller Arnold von Harff in the fifteenth century, the pilgrim guide to Compostela in the twelfth century, and the *Glosas Emilianenses* in the tenth (two verbs),<sup>1</sup> which show that the language was then substantially what it is now. Basque before the tenth century of our era is territory for conjecture.

The Basque accent differs from that of the Latin languages by being movable; it is transferred from one syllable to

<sup>1</sup> See R. Menéndez Pidal, *Orígenes del Español*, p. 492.

another according to the structure of the phrase and the requirements of emphasis. When a word is cited separately there tends to be an accentuation of the final syllable. In present-day practice speakers of Basque are influenced by the habits of their neighbours, and in the Spanish provinces there is a perceptible castilianization of the accentual scheme. At any rate, so malleable an accent constitutes no obstacle to the adoption of a foreign system.

The vowel system is very simple. There are only five vowels, as in Spanish, and they have much the same values. The vowels *e o* are not divided into an open and a closed series as in French, Italian, Catalan and Portuguese [e ε o ɔ], but they allow of considerable variation under the influence of neighbouring vowels and consonants. Thus *e* has a range almost from *i* to *a*, and seems rather more open in general than Castilian *e*. Middle vowels, so frequent in French, are absent from Basque apart from the *ü* of the Souletin dialect which is doubtless due to the influence of French and Provençal. There are no nasal vowels, but only a slight nasalization in the vicinity of *n m*.

The system of consonants agrees mainly with that of Spanish. The Basque *f* has attracted most attention. It is present in all dialects, but it nowhere appears indigenous. In many cases it is found in foreign words, and its presence has been held to be due to French or Spanish influence. Romance words in *f*, moreover, tend to be reproduced with a Basque *p*, as *FILU* 'thread' B. *piru*, which hints at an even greater aversion from *f* in past times. But there are a few words, particularly in French Basque, which are apparently indigenous and yet show *f*. All that can be asserted is that the acquisition of a foreign *f* is not of insuperable difficulty for Basques. *V* does not exist in Basque as a labiodental sound, the voiced equivalent of *f*, but is identified, as in Spanish, with *b*. Akin to *f* is the aspirate *h*. This is now wanting in Spanish Basque dialects, but occurs in French Basque, and is also frequently employed to denote an aspirated pronunciation of some other consonant, *p t k l n r*.

So we have equivalents like *erri herri* 'people', or conventional distinctions like *aur* 'child' *haur* 'this', and the Labourdin aspirations *ikhusi* 'see' *ethorri* 'come' *ekharri* 'bring'. It is probable that there was a weakly aspirated *h* in medieval Spanish Basque also, which accounts for such spellings in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries as *Harriaga Harrigorria* from (*h*)*arri* 'stone'. There is no evidence that Basques treated *h* as the nearest equivalent for Latin *F*, though such a substitution is not inherently improbable.

The language shows reluctance to use initial voiceless *p t k*, with the result that *p* also is of infrequent occurrence. *K* is much used in suffixes, and it permutes also with *h* and may then disappear. In *b d g* Basque, like the three Peninsular Romance languages, recognizes two series of consonants: an occlusive order in absolute initial positions or after a nasal and some other consonants [b d g], and a fricative order in 'weak' positions [b̪ d̪ g̪]. When final, as in Old Spanish and Catalan, they become unvoiced. There are many fricative and affricate consonants, all of which can be paralleled from the Peninsular Romances. The sibilants are three: a cacuminal *s* pronounced with the tip of the tongue on the gums [ś], a voiceless *z* with the tip of the tongue on the lower teeth [s̪], and the palatal *x* which has the value of English *sh* [ʂ]. When the tongue makes a momentary contact before these sounds, they pass into the affricates *ts tz tx* [ś̪ ʂ̪ ć̪]. The last is represented by *ch* in Spanish borrowings, as *Echeverría* from *etxe* 'house' and *berri* 'new'. 'Impure' *s*, that is an initial *s* followed by a consonant, is not tolerated in Basque, but a vowel is prefixed, generally *e* as in Spanish but sometimes *i*: *esker* 'thanks', *ezker* (Soul. *ixker*) 'left' Sp. *izquierdo* Cat. *esquerre*. Similarly the language does not tolerate an initial *r*, but prefixes *a* or *e*: *Erramon* Sp. *Ramón*, *errege* REGE 'king'. An initial *r* is strongly vibrated, and this vibrant *r* (written *r̪* or *rr*) generates a fugitive vowel, as it also does in the history of many words in Spanish, Portuguese and Catalan. There is also a weak fricative *r* [r̪] in such words as *iri* 'city', *ur* 'water'. Weak *r* is not far distant from *l*, and

this explains the uncertainty as to which consonant is the original in the suffixes *la ra*. For *iri* ancient place-names show *ili*. The pronunciation of *j* depends on geography. The French provinces pronounce *j* as in French and Older Spanish [ž or j], but in the Spanish provinces the modern Spanish [χ] is normal. [š] also occurs. Spanish Basque, like Spanish, rejects final *-m* in favour of *-n*.

There are one or two general features of Basque pronunciation. One is a facility for palatalizing consonants; not only *ñ l* as in Spanish *ñ ll*, but also *ł d*. The effect is frequently that of a Spanish diminutive. Basque reduces double consonants to singles and resolves groups. Peculiarly Basque are the numerous metatheses of consonants, as *bage=gabe* 'without', and the interchange of consonants in accordance with tables of permutation, as *m b* in *mezpera* OSp. *viespera* VESPERE 'eve'.

Basque vocabulary bears witness to the tenacity with which its speakers have clung to the essentials of their language in the face of overwhelming pressure from highly civilized peoples. Such pressure was exerted even before Roman times by the Celts. The Celtic influence is debatable, but it is probable that their example helped the Basques to a better family organization (*andre* 'young woman' Celt. \**andera* OIr. *ainder* OFr. *andier* MFr. *landier* Eng. *andiron*; possibly *aita* 'father' OIr. *athir* with Celtic loss of *p-* PATRE), and to name certain animals better known to the Celts ((*h)artz* 'bear' OIr. *art* W. *arth*; *ork(h)atz* 'roe' Celt. *iorkos* W. *iwrch*; *izoki* 'salmon' Asturian *esquin* OIr. *eo iach* W. *eog* *ESOX*). The Basques use the vigesimal system in reckoning: *ogeい 20 berrogeい 40 = 2 × 20 irurogeい laurogeい*. This is comparable with Fr. *quatre-vingts*, and may be of Celtic provenance. One of the oldest Basque verbs, *ekarri* 'bring', may be of Celtic origin, and so connected through CARRU CARRICARE with Eng. *carry*.

Though the Celtic element is small, the Latin and Romance influence is greater than in any other language that has maintained its independent character, such as German or Albanian, and it gives the Basque lexicon a markedly

Romance appearance. Almost all terms of administration, Christian rites and usages, thought and culture are drawn from the Latin reservoir. At the present day the invasion continues in the speech of younger Basques, who discard native terms for a foreign equivalent lightly adapted to Basque speech-habits. Striking instances of such changes are *seme* 'son' SEMEN, *gorputz* 'body' CORPUS, *boronte* 'forehead' FRONTE. Administrative terms of Latin origin are *lege* 'law' LEGE, *errege* 'king' REGE. Of ecclesiastical origin are *eliza* 'church' ECCLESIA Fr. *église*, *gurutz* 'cross' CRUCE, *aphezpiku* 'bishop' EPISCOPU, *pake* *bake* 'peace' PACE, *besta* 'festival' FESTA. Educational words are also ecclesiastical in inspiration: *eskola* 'school' SCHOLA, *liburu* 'book' LIBRU. Words denoting a high standard of social intercourse, trade and communications, stone and gypsum architecture, textiles, milling, blacksmith's work, agriculture and viniculture, fruits, domestic economy and cooking, etc., are generally of Latin or Romance provenance. The names of some most common animals are striking evidence of this indebtedness: *a(h)ate* 'duck' ANATE, *antzar* 'goose' ANSERE, *asto* 'ass' ASINU, *zamai* 'horse' (larger than the Basque breed *zaldi*) SAGMARIU. All abstract terms are foreign to Basque: *zentsu* 'meaning' SENSU, *borondate* 'will' VOLUNTATE, *gauza* 'thing' CAUSA, *arima* 'soul' ANIMA, *asturu* 'luck' ASTRU, *zeru* 'heaven' CAELU.

The Latin element in Basque resembles Spanish or Provençal rather than French, but is notable for its archaic character. Between vowels *p t k* are conserved, as in the valleys of Upper Aragón, and unaccented vowels do not suffer apocope as in the Romance languages: *aphezpiku* EPISCOPU Fr. *évêque* Sp. *obispo* Ptg. *bispo* Cat. *bisbe* 'bishop'. The Latinisms of Basque are also drawn from an old stratum of the language, which has shown little power to survive into Romance: *atxeter* 'doctor' ARCHIATER, as well as *mediku* *miriku* MEDICU, *seme* 'son' SEMEN, *opus* 'physical effort' OPUS.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See especially G. Rohlf's, 'Baskische Kultur im Spiegel des lateinischen Lehnwortes', *Voretzsch-Festschrift* (Halle, 1927).

When we turn from the sounds and words of Basque to the forms taken by the words in preparation for the sentence, we are arrested by the extraordinary appearance of the Basque verb, and in particular by its 'passivity'. It cannot be said yet to have yielded to analysis. Humboldt alleged that there were 216 Basque conjugations, and Schuchardt amassed 50,000 verbal forms in search of a solution; but the work of inventory still goes on. There is substantial agreement on the principle of verbal 'passivity', which was formulated by Schuchardt thus: if *aitak maitatua da* can only be translated 'he is loved by the father', then *aitak maitatzen du* is not 'the father loves him' but 'he is loved by the father'. He admitted that, though the present tenses are purely passive, the imperfect is partly passive and partly active, and further that there remain problems puzzling to any theorist. Accepting the same restrictions as to the imperfect, the theory of verbal passivity implies that the arrangement of parts in a Basque verb and of relevant words outside the verb corresponds to the passive construction in Indo-European languages; that is, it rests, ultimately, on equivalence in translation. Thus, to simplify, *dut* 'it is-had by-me' consists of *d*- 'it', *-u-* the verb proper and *-t* 'by me'. But the Indo-European passive is a device for ringing the changes on the Indo-European active. Instead of the normal order Subject-Verb-Object, we make the Object take the Subject's place, and express the Subject adverbially by means of a preposition and noun. Hence the Indo-European passive depends on the active and is highly unstable. It has suffered constant remodelling, as in Latin, Romance, Slavonic, German and Scandinavian, in each of which it has been rebuilt out of the active with a suffix, or out of a participle with an auxiliary (prefixed or suffixed). But there is no such opposition of active and passive in Basque, but only the one voice, which denotes the verbal activity. *Dut* is translated 'it is-had by-me', but also '*lo teng-o*', where *lo* is third personal and *-o* first personal; thus it is also equivalent in form to a Spanish active. What is gained by the theory of passivity is chiefly the elimination

of the terms 'subject' and 'object', which are quite misleading in dealing with Basque. A verbal activity affects a Patient and proceeds from an Agent, and the Basque order is Patient-Verb-Agent in the verbal paradigm. We are referring here to the pronominal elements that enter into the verbal form. The sentence may contain nouns indicating the Patient and Agent, and these do not necessarily adopt the same order around the verb that is taken by the pronominal elements. Apart from Patient and Agent, one other relation of importance is that of the Recipient, corresponding to our dative. The Recipient may also appear as a personal pronominal element in conjugation.

What has been said above refers to the transitive verb, in which an activity passes from one party to another. In the intransitive verb, the activity or state proceeds from or affects only one party, and it is not relevant to enquire whether this party be Patient or Agent, sufferer or cause. In 'I live' 'I' do not cause the living, unless by a grammatical convention; in 'I run' 'I' cause the running, but 'I' alone am put in motion by the running. One does not know, therefore, whether the subject of an intransitive verb be Patient or Agent until one compares with the grammatical forms of the transitive verb. One then discovers that in Indo-European languages, the pronominal elements in the intransitive verb correspond with those of the Agent in the transitive; but in Basque, with those of the Patient. To *dut* corresponds *doa* 'he goes'.

Thus the Basque verb has only one voice, and the subject is the Patient. Other persons in the action, if any, are the Agent and Recipient. These are represented by pronominal elements which make up the conjugation of the verb. In Indo-European languages generally the Agent forms part of the verbal form (e.g. Sp. *tienes*, where *-s* indicates the second person singular), but the Patient is grammatically separate (e.g. *lo tienes*, where *lo* indicates the third person singular), though enclitic and thus brought under one accent with the verb. There is some tendency to repeat an object by means

of a pronoun associated with the verb, e.g. Sp. *todo lo puede* 'he can do everything' (where *lo* merely repeats *todo*). This *must* be done in Basque. As for the Recipient, his attitude to the main activity varies. He may receive it directly, or be interested in it (ethic dative), or merely be supposed to have an interest. This usage leads to the 'familiar' constructions in Basque and elsewhere. An interlocutor is supposed to have a controlling interest in all that a speaker says. So in German 'ich habe es dir gesehen' 'I have seen it (by your leave)', 'gestern gehe ich dir in den Wald' 'yesterday I went (by your favour) into the wood'. The dative Recipient is represented by an infix *-(k)i-*, of which the *k* is liable to disappear. The ethic Recipient is given by infix *-ki-* for a man, or *-n-* for a woman (probably from *ña na*, 'shortened forms of *doña* 'lady'). Thus, with third person singular Patient *d-*, we have

Intrans. 3 *doa* 'he goes'

Trans. 1 *dut* 2 *duk* 3 *du* 4 *dugu* 5 *duzu* 6 *dute* 'I, thou, etc. have him'

And varying the Patient we get

Intrans. 1 *noa* 2 (*h*)*oa* 3 *doa* 4 *goaz* 5 *zoaz* 6 *doaz* 'I, thou, etc., go'

while the transitive forms have the thirty-six permutations of Patients *n-* (*h*)- (*from k*) - *g-* *z-* *d-* with Agents *-t* *-k* - *-gu* *-zu*. To these we must add the Recipient and Ethic forms, and allow for the insertion of vowels of support, the elision of consonants, plural *-z-* and *-te*, and the modification of vowels in hiatus, including the stem-vowels of the verb itself. Hence from *euki* 'have' we get *dot* *jon* *dabe* *ditue*, etc., which bear no obvious relation to the original stem.

The conjugation of the imperfect tenses stands apart from this explanation, since it is normally 'active'. The Patient is not expressed in the verb, and the Agent is prefixed. A final *-n* is a characteristic of this tense.

Trans. *nekarren* *hekarren* *ekarren* *gekarren* *zekarren* *ekarren* 'I bore, etc.'

Intrans. *nioan* *hioan* etc. 'I went, etc.'

Moods are indicated by particles, usually suffixed. The

negative is *ez-*, as *da* 'it is' *ezta* 'it is not'; hypothesis *ba-*, as *ni eroriko banintz* 'if I fell'; potentiality *-ke*; gerund, indirect speech *-la*; cause *-lako*; imperative third person singular *b-*. The suffix *-n* gives to a whole clause the nature of an adjective qualifying a noun, and this is the means of representing relative sentences. The clause thus made adjectival is capable of taking the further suffix *-a* 'the'. Thus the *Paternoster* opens: *aita gurea, zeruetan zaudena*, which might be rendered 'Our Father, thou the being in Heaven', and so 'which art'. This use of the definite article to make noun-clauses out of relatives is also a feature of Spanish: *el que compra = el comprador* 'the one-who-buys', 'the buyer'. Suffixes and prefixes are also used to make up the various infinite forms of the verb: past participles in *-i -n -tu*, which may have a prefixed *e- i-* (*izan* 'been' *ikusi* 'seen' *artu* 'taken'); gerund in *-i(z)e* (*ibiltze* 'walking'); adjectival *-ko*.

Actually the intricacies of Basque conjugation affect only a small group of ancient verbs, generally called 'auxiliaries'. Some of these are employed with gerunds and participles to conjugate all remaining verbs. Thus *ikusi* 'seen' has: present *ikusten dut* 'I see it', *ikusi dut* 'I have seen it', *ikusiko dut* 'I shall see it'. The system is attested for the tenth century by the *Glosas Emilianenses*, and is thus as old as our earliest evidence. A striking resemblance between Basque and the Peninsular Romance tongues is the wealth of auxiliaries and quasi-auxiliaries, and especially the two each for 'to be' and 'to have'. Subtle refinements of time and mode of action characterize all these languages, and an important rôle is assigned to auxiliaries which imply motion.

When contrasted with the verb the Basque noun is simple. In principle the word does not vary, but adds suffixes to indicate relations with the verb and other nouns. In practice, however, these suffixes are not all on the same footing. Some are long and readily detached, as *bage* (*gabe*) 'without' or *gana* 'toward'. Others have no independent meaning or existence, and it is not certain that they ever possessed one. These are the most common, and can be arranged as a declensional

scheme, which varies slightly in accordance with the final sound of the stem. So for the village of Licq:

Inert (Patient)	<i>Ligi</i>	Adjectival	<i>Ligiko</i> 'of'
Agent	<i>Ligik</i> 'by'	Locative	<i>Ligin</i> 'in'
Recipient	<i>Ligiri</i> 'to'	Aditive	<i>Ligira(t)</i> 'to, toward'
Instrument	<i>Ligiz</i> 'with, by'	Abitive	<i>Ligitik</i> 'from'
Sociative	<i>Ligirekin</i> 'along with'	Partitive	<i>Ligirik</i>
Possessive	<i>Ligiren</i> 'of'		

The plural signs are *-k* and also *-eta-* as an infix in certain oblique cases. The origin of *-eta-* is apparently the Latin collective suffix in ROBURETU Sp. *robledo* 'oak-wood', and so 'oaks' as compared with *roble* 'oak'. A relic of an old demonstrative *-a* is used as a suffixed definite article (as in Scandinavian languages and Rumanian).

Of these cases, only the first three correspond with the verbal conjugation, the remainder being either adverbial or (in the possessive and adjectival) adjectivally attached to nouns. The Patient of a verbal activity is properly described as inert, and there is even in Indo-European a tendency to prefer in this capacity inert and lifeless objects. Hence it is that the Indo-European neuters exist primarily in the accusative case, and merely lend that case for the uses of the nominative. On the other hand, the notion of Agent is cognate with that of personality, and involves in Basque and Indo-European a modification of the noun-stem: in Basque by *-k*, in Indo-European generally by *-s*. There is thus no essential difference between the Basque Agent-case and the Indo-European nominative; just as the suffixed sign of the Agent in Basque verbs corresponds with the suffixed subject-pronominal element in the Greek or Latin verbs.

Where words are grouped, suffixes are applied only to one member of the group, as *aita gurea* 'our Father' (*-a* 'the'). The adjective thus has no special declension, and offers only the peculiarity of eschewing the 'comparison of inferiority'. To say that 'A is less than B' is merely the negative way of putting 'B is more than A'. The pragmatic Basque temperament prefers the positive affirmation in such cases.

Particles often belong to the oldest strata of a language. They include numerals, pronouns, some adverbs and conjunctions. The cardinal numbers are

1 <i>bat</i>	7 <i>zazpi</i>	20 ( <i>h</i> ) <i>ogei</i>	Ordinals: 1st <i>len(en)go</i>
2 <i>bi(ga)</i>	8 <i>zortzi</i>	21 ( <i>h</i> ) <i>ogei eta bat</i>	2nd <i>bigarren</i>
3 ( <i>h</i> ) <i>iru(r)</i>	9 <i>bederatz</i>	30 <i>ogei ta amar</i>	and so on in - <i>garren</i>
4 <i>lau(r)</i>	10 ( <i>h</i> ) <i>amar</i>	40 <i>berrogei</i>	
5 <i>bost, bortz</i>	11 ( <i>h</i> ) <i>amaika</i>	60 <i>irurogei</i>	
6 <i>sei</i>	12 ( <i>h</i> ) <i>amabi</i>	80 <i>laurogei</i>	
		100 <i>e(h)un</i>	
		1000 <i>mila</i>	

One notices the vigesimal arrangement. *Bat* has a plural *batzu* 'some', Sp. *unos*. *Lenengo* is from *len* 'before' with the adjectival suffix *-ko*.

The personal pronouns are 1 *ni* 2 (*h*)*i* 4 *gu* 5 *zu*, with possessives in *-re*. The third personal possessive is *bere*, and forms a reflexive *bere burua* 'his head' 'himself'. The third personal pronouns in the singular and plural are drawn from the demonstratives, which distinguish, as in Spanish and the other Peninsular languages, three degrees of distance from the speakers: 'this by me' on Sp. *este*, 'that by you' *ori* Sp. *ese*, 'that away from both of us' *ar-* Sp. *aquel*. There are no relative pronouns, as that idiom is turned by the verb and *-n* as already noted. The interrogatives are *nor* 'who?' *zen* 'who? which?' *zer* 'what?'

There are primitive adverbs like (*h*)*an* 'there' (*h*)*emen* 'here', but the greater number of adverbs are nouns in the locative case, as *aitzinean* 'in the front' 'before'. *Ba* affirms 'yes', and also serves as a verbal prefix of intensity; *ez-* 'not' is a verbal prefix. *Eta ta* 'and', *ala edo* 'or'. Generally the office of our conjunctions is performed by verbal prefixes and suffixes, as already described.

### BASQUE AND IBERIAN

The Basques have occupied their present sites from time immemorial, but their territory was formerly more extensive. The last sixty years have seen a widening of the bilingual

belt on the Spanish side, a castilianization of the principal towns, and an estimated loss of 70,000 speakers. The present southern and eastern frontiers pass through Salinas, north of Estella and Tafalla, and thence north-eastward to the Pic d'Anie. Beyond this frontier, however there are numerous Basque village-names, such as *Ulliberry Echaberry Baigorri Iriberry Benagorri* (containing *iri* 'town', *etxe* 'house', *bai* 'river', *berri* 'new', *gorri* 'red'), which indicate a frontier running from west to east *south* of Estella and Tafalla, and then turning abruptly northward toward the Pic d'Anie. To the east of the line thus established, around Navascués and Lumbier, there is a district traditionally labelled *Romançado*, which indicates a still earlier romanization. In it the vowels *ě* *ö* of Basque place-names do not persist, as in the Estella-Tafalla area, but give diphthongs *ie ia ue ua*; that is to say, the romanization must have taken place here while the processes which give diphthongs in the Spanish dialects were still active. The area extends eastwards of the *Romançado* as far as the Catalan frontier, and we have *Javier* (a form of *etxe berri*) *Lumbier* (*irum berri* 'new town') *Ligüerre Lascurarre* (*gorri* 'red'), *Aragüés* (*ara-otz* 'cold plain'), as well as hybrids like *Montiberri Paternuy Aquilué* (MONTE PATERNA AQUILA plus *berri* *oi*). This evidence extends the earliest known frontier eastward from Tafalla to Ejea, and thence just north of Huesca by a loop which touches the Isuela; another larger loop carries the line north of Barbastro and Graus, whence it descends towards Tamarite, and at last takes a north-easterly direction to Tremp and the valley of the Noguera Pallaresa. In this way we know that the Basque area included all the foothills of the western and central Pyrenees until well within the Vulgar Latin period. The frontier was determined by the thrust of Roman civilization along the great military road leading to the Upper Ebro valley, passing through Lérida, near Barbastro, Huesca and Zaragoza, whence it ascended the right bank as far as Logroño, before branching off to the west. In the area affected by this road the traces of Basque are much slighter.

Along the northern frontier Basque has been stationary at Bayonne since the twelfth century, but must formerly have extended up to Bordeaux. Here again it was a road which carried the Roman influence, that from Narbonne to Toulouse and Bordeaux.

In the south the pilgrims' guide to Compostela fixed the Montes de Oca as the limit of Navarrese territory in the twelfth century, but that was presumably a political rather than a linguistic estimate. The linguistic frontier doubtless lay to the north of the Ebro, though there may have been a bilingual belt of considerable depth. In the tenth century Basque was not normal at the monastery of San Millán de la Cogolla, but the insertion of a couple of Basque glosses in the *Glosas Emilianenses* hints that the language was understood by some of the monks. The province of Álava, now quite Spanish in speech, is otherwise conspicuously Basque in its characteristics.

Towards the west the Basques, astride the Cantabrian mountains, were in contact with the Cantabrians, who were the ancestors of Old Castilians. The political and social connection between these tribes was close, both in resistance to the Roman conquerors and in opposition to the Visigoths. It was against the Basques and Cantabrians that King Rodrigo was campaigning when he heard the news of Târiq's invasion in 711. Ethnically, Basques and Cantabrians seem to have been connected, and in point of language we shall have reason to attribute to the Cantabro-Basques the substitution of *h* for *f*, which is characteristic of Spanish.

Thus far we may proceed with assurance; but the identification of Basque with 'Iberian' is a matter of conjecture. The most helpful evidence is that of classical place-names and some of more recent times, but these have gone through phonetic developments which are imperfectly known, and classical authorities are notoriously lax in rendering 'barbarous' names. Wherever an etymology is not self-evident, there is a risk of error through our ignorance of all Basque before 1545, and of any other language which may have been

used in the Spanish Peninsula. There are, however, a number of persuasive etymologies. *Araduey* in León is evidently 'the land of plains' (*ara* 'plain', *-toi* 'the place where anything is found'). The suffixes *-otz* 'cold' and *-oi* 'tendency, propensity' give Sp. *-ues* *-uas* and *-ue* *-uy* *-oy* over a wide area, though these suffixes have unfortunately no great individuality. Place-names show frequently the element *iri ili uri uli* 'town', as in *Iria Flavia* (Galicia) *Iliberris* (*Elvira*, Granada, and *Elne*, Roussillon). In Roussillon there is considerable use made of *ur* 'water'. Such names indicate knowledge of a Basque-like language over most of the Peninsula, though one cannot exclude the possibility of borrowing. On the other hand there are, particularly in Lusitania and Baetica, names of a non-Basque type, such as *Baetis Baetulo Ulisipo Scallabis Saetabis Asido*, etc. The name *Ilerda* (Lérida Cat. *Lleida*) is probably to be interpreted *il-erda* 'foreign town' (cf. *erdera* 'foreign speech' as opposed to *euskera*), and so bears witness to racial mixture. Hybrid names occur: Basque-Celtic *Medu-briga* 'lead town'; Latin-Basque *Pompaelo* 'Pompey's town', *Graccuris* 'Gracchus' town', *Iria Flavia* 'the Flavian town'.

Iberian inscriptions have been preserved, but few are of any length. They have been transcribed with fair probabilities of accuracy, but they have not been interpreted. In the Alcoy lead-tablet, which is the longest prose text, we notice the absence of *f*, initial *r* and 'impure' *s*: a simple vowel system and freedom from consonantal groups; prefixes *i-* *b-* *ba-* *da-*; suffixes *-la* *-ra* *-k-* *-ik* *-n-* *i*; *iri* 'town' *gara* 'height' *ildu* 'furrow' *kide* 'companion'; a general disyllabic basis for the roots. Inscriptions on coins conform to strict formulæ, and so offer a basis for inferences as to Iberian declension. Basque may be treated as declensional and so parallel to Latin: *alaba alabai FILIA FILIAI*. 'daughter, to a daughter'. Thus we establish further equations of the type *Laiešcen* = *Laietanorum*, *Urkskn* = *Urcitanorum*, and deduce a genitive plural in *-cen*. On this plan Schuchardt reconstructed the Iberian declension:

Case	Iberian		Basque	
	Singular	Plural	Singular	Plural
Inert	—	<i>c</i>	—	<i>k</i>
Agent	<i>c</i>	?	<i>k</i>	<i>kek</i>
Recipient	<i>i e</i>	<i>ce(a)i</i>	<i>i</i>	<i>ki</i>
Instrument	<i>š s</i>	<i>ciš</i>	<i>z</i>	<i>kez</i>
Possessive	<i>n m</i>	<i>cen</i>	<i>n</i>	<i>ken</i>
Adjectival	<i>co</i>	—	<i>ko</i>	—

Such comparisons would be quite convincing had they stood the test of translation; despite them the relics of the Iberian language remain uninterpreted.

Archaeology does not throw a sure light upon these problems, since it is faced with others of equal difficulty. Instead of assuming a homogeneous mass of inhabitants before the known invasions, we should rather believe the Peninsular populations swollen by fresh waves, in ancient times as in modern, some of African, and some of European origin. History shows an ebb and flow of European Celts, African Carthaginians, European Romans and Germans, African Moors; and so we must conceive of prehistory also. Indigenous elements were probably the Cantabro-Basques, but it is supposed that the Iberians were invaders from Africa, racially akin to the Kabyle tribes of the Riff, who thrust north into the centre and east of the Peninsula, and hedged the Cantabro-Basques within their mountains. It is possible that their rule was strengthened by the formation of 'towns' (*iri*), as that of the later Celts who mingled with the Iberians was by similar works (*-briga*); and if so, the method and the name may have been borrowed by non-Iberians also. As for the remaining inhabitants of the Peninsula, some authorities see in them Ligurians from Genoa and Provence, while others maintain that the Ligurians did not reach Roussillon. It seems only logical to suppose that the Iberians also encountered a racial mixture, of unknown ingredients. From the archaeological point of view, it would seem most probable that the Basques were not Iberians in race; but race and language are independent, and the Basque language may not be indigenous.

Speculation as to the origin of the language has taken two main directions: some aver that Basque resembles North African languages, others prefer the Caucasus. It is even held that these hypotheses are not mutually exclusive. Now, though language is independent of race, it does not migrate except with its speakers; and of the two suggestions, the North African presents fewest physical improbabilities. It is also the one which looks most probable on the proofs offered. The Basque verb does not enter into such a comparison, but tends to be discounted as less original in fact than in appearance. We have seen that extremely complex forms are built up by the association of pronominal fractions in a verb, for instance, *draukat*. But we have also seen that our own languages group these elements under one accent, and that their separation is merely a grammatical convention. We might conjugate Sp. *lo tengo* as *loténgo lotiénes lotiéne lotenémos*, etc., and similarly for *la los las te os* and the other pronouns. This would produce a conjugation of great apparent complexity. If, further, colloquial abbreviations were left unrestricted, we should write *hy't'm* for Dutch *hebt gij het hem*, and *yufseem* for 'you have seen them'. The nominal suffixes are not easily paralleled, and in consequence we can say that this argument is borne entirely upon the vocabulary. Schuchardt produced an imposing list of 105 words fundamental in the Basque lexicon which have, or seem to have, parallels in Berber, Coptic-Egyptian, Nubian, African Semitic, Cushite, Nilotic and Sudanese. They include the numerals 2 3 5 6 7, primitive verbs like *joan* 'go' *eman* 'give' *artu* 'take' *egin* 'do' *etorri* 'come', adjectives like *on* 'good' *berri* 'new' *otz* 'cold' *andi* 'big', particles like *bage* 'without' *nor* 'who?', and the names of fundamental things like 'sun' 'moon' 'man' 'woman' 'town' 'people' 'name' 'bread' 'meat' and parts of the body. For the Caucasus claims have been made on *gu* 'we' and *zu* 'ye', but the resemblances are harder to see. Unfortunately, a recent writer has shown that these methods would prove German to be an African or Caucasian language! Their degree of

probability is very low, amounting to little more, in the African thesis, than an intelligent guess.

Classical writers and inscriptions supply a store of words listed as peculiar to the Spains. Some of these are certainly, some probably, Celtic, and the remainder are not very often to be explained by Basque. Hübner cites

*acnua amma aparia apitascus arapennis arrugae asturco bacca balluca balsa balux  
barca celia cætra cantabrum cantus celdo corrugus cuscolium dureta gangadria  
gurdus iduma inula lancea lausia pala palacurna palaga paramus reburrus saliunca  
salpuga sarna segutilum talutatium tasconium urium viriae.*

To sum up: Iberian may have been a language of North African origin. In its vocabulary and structure it probably resembled Basque closely, but the gap of a millennium between its documents and the earliest Basque texts prevents an accurate identification; it was used over a wide area of the central and eastern Peninsula, and contributed at least place-names to the west and south.

The literature concerning Basque origins is vast. Among the most serviceable contributions on the linguistic side are W. von Humboldt, *Prüfung der Untersuchungen über die Urbewohner Hispaniens* (Berlin, 1821); H. Schuchardt, 'Die iberische Deklination', *Sitzungsberichte der kais. Akademie der Wissenschaften in Wien, Phil.-Hist. Kl.* clvii, 2, and 'Baskisch-hamitische Wortvergleichungen', *Revue Internationale des Études Basques*, vii; R. Lafon, 'Basque et langues kartvèles', *Revue Internationale des Études Basques*, xxiv (the Caucasian case); R. Menéndez Pidal, 'Las vocales ibéricas e ο en los nombres topónimicos', *Revista de Filología Española*, v; E. Hübner, *Monumenta Linguae Ibericae* (Berlin, 1893).

The following texts may assist the reader to form a clearer conception of Basque and Iberian:

*The Alcoy lead-tablet* (as read by M. Gómez Moreno, *Homenaje a Menéndez Pidal*, Madrid, 1925):

Irike or'ti garokan dadula bask/buistiner' bagarok sssxc turlbai/lura  
legusegik baserokeiunbaida/urke basbidirbar'tin irike baser/okar'  
tebind belagasakiur isbin/ai asgandis tagisgarok binike/bin salir'  
kidei gaibigait.

Ar'nai/sakarisker.

Iunstir' salir'g basirtir sabadi/dar bir'inar gurs boistingisdid/sesgers-  
duran sesdirgadedin/seraikala naltinge bidudedin ildu/niraenai  
bekor sebagediran.

Untranslated. Apparently Basque features mentioned on p. 28.

From the *Liber Quartus S. Jacobi Apostoli*, cap. vii:

Barbara enim lingua penitus habentur. Deum vocant *urcia*; dei genitricem *andrea Maria*; panem *orgui*; vinum *ardum*; carnem *aragui*; pisces *araign*; domum *echea*; dominum domus *iaona*; dominam *andrea*; ecclesiam *elicera*; presbyterum *belaterra*, quod interpretatur pulchra terra; triticum *gari*; aquam *uric*; regem *ereguia*; sanctum Jacobum *iaona domne iacue*.

*ortzi* 'thunder, thunder-cloud, God, sky', replaced by *Jaun-goiko* (from *jaun*) 'the Lord'. *belaterra OBLATORE?* The other words are still usual.

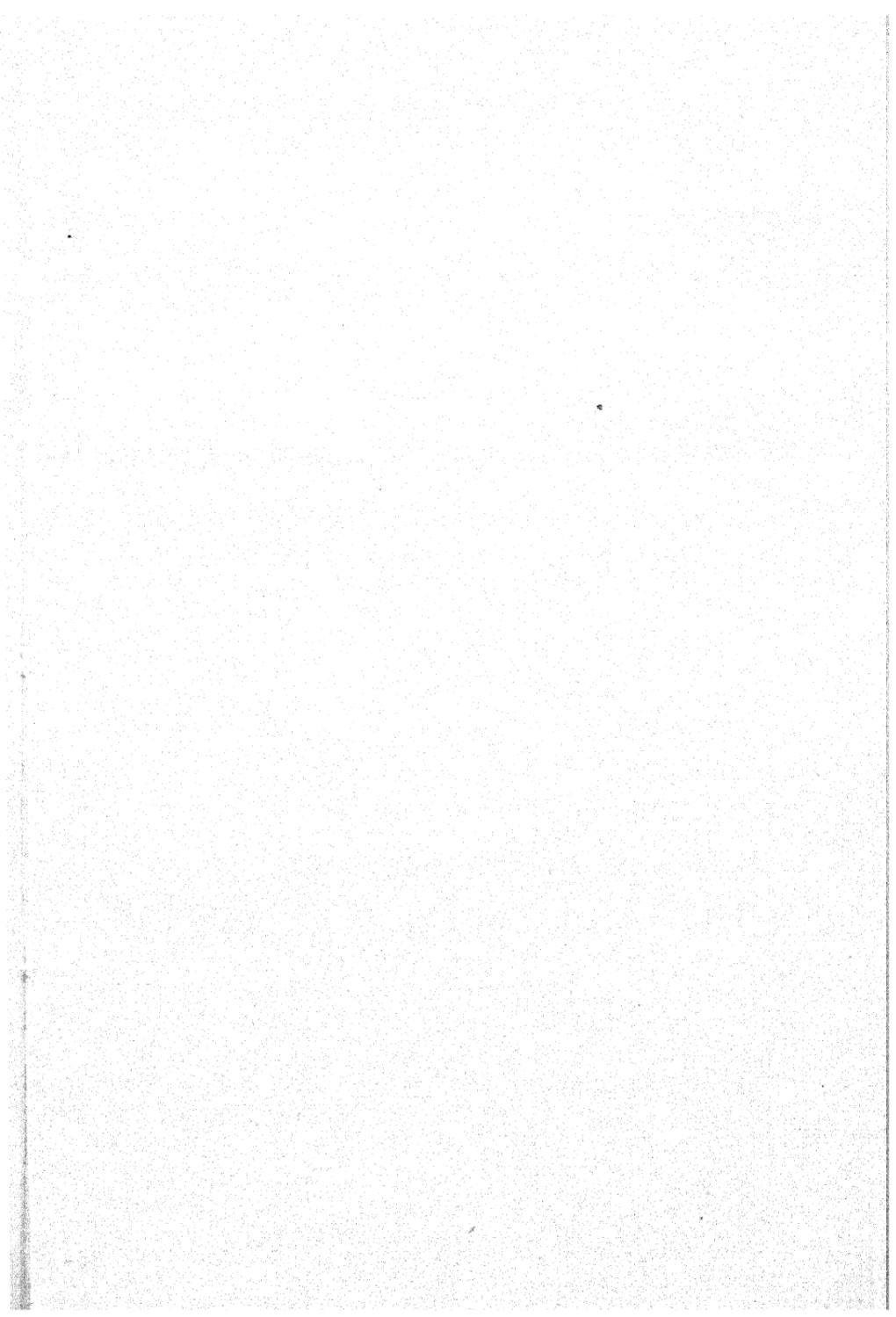
The *Paternoster* (Guipúzcoa):

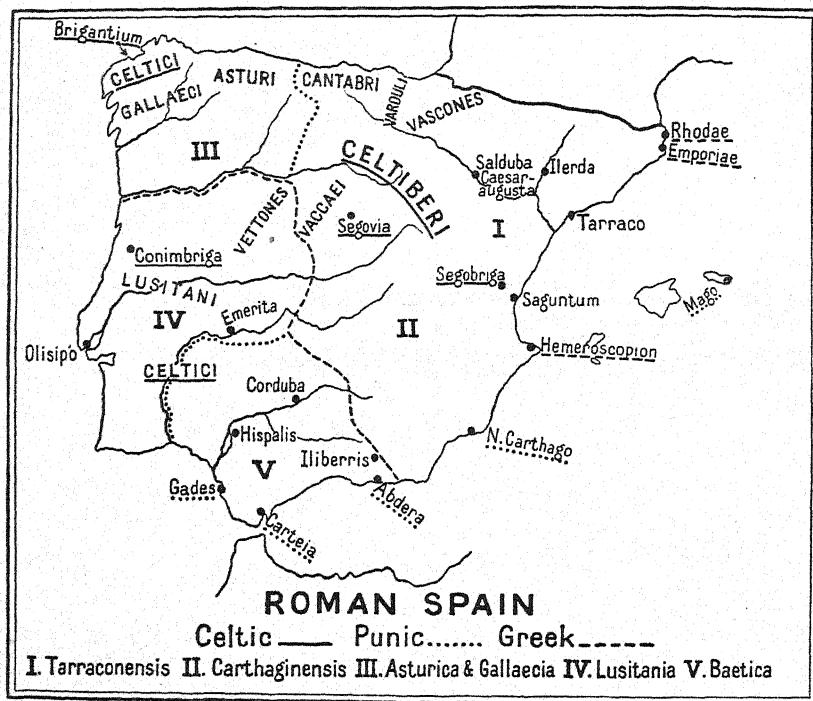
Aita gurea, zeruetan zaudena; santifikatua izan bedi zure izena; betor gugana zure erreinua; egin bedi zure borondatea zeruan bezela lurrean ere. Emaiguzu gaur gure egunero ko ogia; barka zazkiguzu gure zorrak, guk geren zordunai barkatzen diegun bezela; ez gaitzazu utzi tentazioan erortzen baizikan libra gaitzazu gaitzetik. Amen.

Latin and Romance: *zeru CAELU* 'heaven', *santifikatu* 'blessed', *erreinu*, Sp. *reino* 'kingdom', *borondate* 'will', *barka(tzen)* *PARCERE* 'pardon'. *tentazio* 'temptation', *libra* 'free', *-eta-* plural sign.

Analysis of the *Paternoster*:

*aita* 'father', Celtic origin? *gu* 'we', *gure* 'our', *-a* 'the'. *zeruetan*, *-eta-* plural sign, *-n* locative, 'in heaven'. *zaudena*, *z-de* 2 Pl. for 2 S., verb *egon* 'be', *-n* relative, *-a* 'the', 'You who are'. *santifikatua* 'hallowed', *-a* 'the'. *izan* 'be'. *bedi*, *b-* 3 S. imperative, verb *edin* 'may'. *izen* 'name', *-a* 'the'. *betor*, *b-* 3 S. imperative, verb *etorri* 'come'. *gugana*, *gu* 'we, us', *-gana* 'towards', 'to us'. *zure*, *zu* 'you', *-re* possessive, 'your'. *erreinua*, *-a* 'the', added only to the second member of a group (so *zure*, but *gurea* above), 'the kingdom'. *egin* 'done'. *bedi* 'let it be', as above. *zure* 'your'. *borondatea* 'the will'. *zeruan*, *-a* 'the', *-n* locative, 'in the heaven'. *bezela* 'as'. *lurrean*, *lur* 'earth', *-a* 'the', *-n* locative, 'in the earth'. *ere* 'also'. *emaiguzu*, verb *eman* 'give', *-zu* 2 Pl. for 2 S. imperative, *(k)i-gu-* 'to us' dative. *gaur* 'to-day', *gure* 'our'. *egunero*, *egun* 'day', *-ero-* adjectival suffix, *-ko* adjectival, 'daily'. *ogia*, *-a* 'the', 'the bread'. *barka* 'pardon'. *zazkiguzu*, *izan* 'be', *-ki-gu-* 'to us' recipient, *-z-zu* 'you' agent. *gure* 'our'. *zorrak*, *zor* 'debt', *-a* 'the', *-k* plural inert. *guk* 'we', *-k* agent. *geren* 'our'. *zordunai*, *zordun* 'debtor', *-a* 'the', *-k-* (elided for euphony) plural, *-i* recipient, 'to the debtors'. *barkatzen*, *barka-tze* gerund, *-n* locative, literally 'in the pardoning'. *diegun*, *d-* 'them' 3 Pl. patient, *-(k)i-* 'to them' recipient, verb *euki* *egin* 'have', *-gu* 'we' agent, 'we pardon them to them', *-n* subordinating particle with *bezela*. *bezela* 'as'. *ez* 'not'. *gaitzazu*, *g-tz* 'us' inert, verb *euki*, *egin* 'have, do', *-zu* 'you' agent, 2 Pl. for 2 S. subjunctive. *utzi* 'leave, abandon', 'leave us not'.





Racial distribution in Roman Spain

*tentazioan*, *-a* 'the', *-n* locative, 'in the temptation'. *erorizen*, *erori* 'fall', *-tze* gerundial suffix, *-n* locative, 'in the falling', 'to fall'. *baizikan* 'but'. *libra gaitzazu* 'make us free'. *gaitzetik*, *gaitz* 'evil', *-tik* 'away from' origin.

### BASCO-IBERIAN AND PENINSULAR ROMANCE

Spanish vocabulary shows elements in common with Basque and (so far as we know it) Iberian. It is not always certain which language is the debtor, since Spanish Romance has propagated in Basque not only a large body of Latinisms, but also some probable Celticisms of ancient date; while other elements may belong to unknown tongues. Nor is it possible sharply to mark off what Spanish owes to Iberian, from its more recent indebtedness to Basque. Beyond this traffic in vocabulary it is a fact that Iberian constituted, with some Celtic, Greek and Punic elements, the substratum of Spanish Latin, and its influence in shaping Spanish Romance has been variously computed. The 'substratum-theorist' would hold that the Latin of Spain was modified in important particulars by the peculiar speech-habits of the Iberians, and so inevitably differed from the Gallic type of Latin spoken in France; others hold that the speech-habits of a substratum have little or no effect on the language they learn. The linguistic deficiencies of the first generation of speakers (supposing it is possible to conceive of anything so abstract as a generation) are corrected by the second; for children are wont to acquire languages to perfection. As the proof or disproof of these contentions depends on the evidence of loan-words, we may settle the simpler question first.

The best-attested Peninsular word of ancient date is *páramo* 'bare plateau', which occurs on a Leonese inscription (*CIL*, ii, 2660: *QUOS VICTI IN PARAMI AEQUORE*). The term is not Basque, and is possibly not Iberian. It may belong specifically to the language of the *Vaccæi* or *Vettones* who inhabited the high plains. On the other hand *nava* 'plain among mountains' is not attested by ancient authors, but is universal in Peninsular Romance; it is the Basque *naba*, and, as a characteristic of Basque scenery, it gives the name *Navarra*. *Vega*

'wooded ground by a river', Sp. *vega* Ptg. *veiga*, is the Basque *ibaiko* 'riverine', and was borrowed early enough to suffer the same changes as Lat. -AI- > e. BALSA 'pond', B. *balsa*, occurs as the name of a Lusitanian city. BALLUX and PALACRA 'nugget' are attested by Pliny the Elder and may both be Iberian; Sp. *baluz* *palacra*(*na*) Cat. *palacra*. ARRUGIAE 'channels used in mining' may be connected with Sp. *arroyo* Ptg. *arróio* 'rivulet', and with the place-names *Requejo* *Requena*. SARNA 'itch' is found in Basque, as well as the other Peninsular languages, but it may be Celtic; and similarly CANTUS 'dressed ashlar', which Quintilian says was Spanish or African (Basque *kanto*(*in*) 'corner, angle'). The majority of loan-words are definitely Basque, and later than the romanization. A conspicuous group is in -rra -rra; B. *ezker* 'left' Sp. *izquierda* Ptg. *esquerda* Cat. *esquerra*; B. *bei* 'cow' *zekor* 'bullock' Sp. *becerro* Ptg. *bezero*; B. *txakur* 'whelp' Sp. Ptg. *cachorro*; B. *pizar* 'fragment' Sp. *pizarra* Ptg. *piçarra* Cat. *pissarra* 'slate'; B. *bizar* 'beard' Sp. Ptg. *bizarro* 'gallant' (whence our *bizarre*, through French depreciation); B. *gisuarri* 'limestone' Sp. *guijarro* 'pebble'. Gk. *kithara*+B. -rra gives Sp. *guitarra* 'guitar'. *Abarca* 'rustic shoe or sandal' is attested in the *Codex Compostellanus* (twelfth century) and yields a nickname to the Navarrese king Sancho *Abarca*; *ardite* 'coin of little value' is from B. *ardit*. Berçeo uses *çatico* 'piece of bread', B. *zati*. *Urraca* 'magpie', used also as a proper name, is probably of Basque origin. With Sp. Ptg. *zorra* 'fox, vixen' compare B. *zugur* 'prudent, clever'. Some knowledge of Basque extended as far as Portugal in the fourteenth century, as may be seen in the *Livro de Linhagens*, cap. ix: '*Arguriega, que tanto quer dizer por seu linguagem de vasconço como pedras vermelhas*' ('Arguriega means in Basque red stones').

Basques have originated or popularized a number of Christian names and surnames. Such are *Ximena* *Jimena* *Jiménez* *Eiximeniç* (obsolete *Ximeno*), *Sancho* *Sancha* *Sánchez*, *Íñigo*, *Ignacio* (after Loyola), *Xavier* *Javier* (after St Francis Xavier, B. *etxe-berri* 'new house'), *Echeverría*, *Mendizábal* 'broad hill', *Zumalacárregui* 'place of willows', *Arteaga* 'place

of holm oaks', *Madariaga* 'place of pears', *Lizárraga* 'place of ash-trees', *Jáuregui* 'palace', *Irigoyen* 'upper city', etc. As for place-names, apart from those cited as evidence of the former extension of Iberian, Basque names are seen to be withdrawing before Roman equivalents from the earliest historical times. Thus *CAESARAUGUSTA* (*Zaragoza*) has ousted *Salduba* (*zaldi* 'horse' or *saldo* 'troop'), *AUGUSTA AUSCIORUM* (*Auch*) stands on an older *Eliberris*, *Granada* has displaced *Elvira* *ILIBERRIS*. Doublets occur in the Basque country itself. What is *Pamplona* 'Pompey's town' to Romance-speakers, is *Iruña* 'the good town' to the Basques; and similarly *Burguete* = *Auritz*, *Valcarlos* = *Lusaide*, *Bonloc* = *Lecuine*, all on the 'French Way' to Compostela. In some cases the doublet is due to translation: *Roncesvalles* = *Orreaga* 'place of junipers', *Villanueva* = *Iriberry* 'new town'.

The traffic in loan-words between Basco-Iberian and Romance is thus seen to be slight, but ancient. It is very far from remodelling the Latin vocabulary of Spain. The claims for a considerable influence as a substratum are based, in consequence, mainly on phonology. In one case, at least, Basque or Iberian has modified the pronunciation of all Spain, namely the elimination of *f* and then of aspirated *h*: *FABULARE* *hablar* 'speak'. This point will be discussed more fully when we treat of the expansion of Castilian against the other Spanish vernaculars, for the phenomenon is, in Spanish, strictly Castilian. The change does not take place at all in Portuguese or Catalan, nor did it occur in the Mozarabic, Leonese or Aragonese dialects of the older language, which occupied the whole Peninsula south of the Duero, west of the Pisuerga, and east of the Montes de Oca. Even within the small remaining fragment, as we shall see, the *h* was an immigrant in Burgos. It belonged originally to Cantabria, the strip of hilly land hard up against the Basque border. Hence this development, so characteristic of modern literary Spanish, did not occur in the whole area occupied by the Iberian tribes who learned Latin, and should rather be described as Basque. It is only to be deemed Iberian, if the

Cantabrians retained their Iberian language until a late date, and their Latin patois was not corrected by education. We cannot be certain, however, that they did not simply borrow this pronunciation from their neighbours, the Basques, since our evidence peters out in the tenth century. Two suggestions are advanced to explain the phenomenon. One relies on the aspiration of initials in Basque (particularly French Basque) which gives forms like *ethorri ekkarri ikhusi*. As applied to *f*, which is already an aspirate, this aspiration would cause the labiodental element to disappear: *Felipe Hfelippo Helizes*. Alternatively, it is asserted that *f* is not a Basque sound, and that the nearest equivalent was *h*. Adult speakers, imitating Latin and Romance *f*, would pronounce *h*. The premiss is not absolutely secure, and the substitution made for *f* in later times was not *h* but *p*. However, the coincidence of Gascon dialects (Gasc. *hilh* 'son', Sp. *hijo* *FILIU*) with Castilian in this matter, and the great rarity of *f* in Basque, makes the thesis highly probable. Iberian inscriptions show no *f*.

In other respects, we note that the effect of a substratum is not to change the acquired language in any way, but to exercise some influence in the choice of alternatives. Basque, for instance, does not tolerate either 'impure' *s* or initial *r*. In the former case it chanced to concur with a change taking place in all Romance, as far as Italy, and Sp. *espíritu espada* Ptg. *espirito espada* Cat. *esperit espasa* agree with Fr. *esprit épée* It. (*i*)*spirito* (*i*)*spada*, as well as with Basque usage; but the Basque prejudice against *r*, finding no support in Romance, does not influence Spanish, apart from one or two loan-words: Sp. *rey* B. *errege*. Basque palatalizes *ñ l ï ð*. This may have helped to confirm the Sp. Cat. palatalization of *LL NN*, but it does not spread further. Here again, however, there may be some trace of Basque phonetics in Castilian alone, for Cast. *fecho hecho* *FACTU*, as against Ptg. *feito* Cat. *fet*, probably reposes on a stage *\*feito*, with a palatalized *t*.

Apart from these doubtful details, those who study both Spanish and Basque become aware of a subtle correspondence between the two, all the more persuasive when it can hardly

be set down in formulæ. There is, as it were, a common mental outlook in the two languages. They eschew the negative and are forthright and concrete. What imagination they have is exercised on things rather than ideas; they refine on circumstances of action, such as time and person in the verb, and prefer only one voice; they are rich in auxiliaries, which are rather felt than logically distinguished. Basque is turned into Spanish much more readily than into any other language. In pronunciation there is a common basis of enunciation. It is not that Basque has imposed conditions upon those who learned Latin in Spain; but rather that Latin, which presented alternative possibilities of treatment and development sufficient to give all the diversities of Romania, was subjected to the same mental control that had given Basque its special qualities.

### CELTIC AND PENINSULAR ROMANCE

The Celtic invaders of the Spanish Peninsula brought this region within the orbit of vast European movements, and drew closer its links with Gaul. Raids may have occurred as early as the ninth century B.C., in Catalonia, but the principal thrust seems to have occurred two hundred years later, in the seventh century. Then the Turmogidi, Berones, Peldenones, Arevaci, Lusones, Belli and Dittani pushed rapidly through the Landes and the mountainous regions of Guipúzcoa and Álava, and effected a lodgment on the heights at the headwaters of the Duero and Tagus, overlooking the Ebro valley from the west. In this region the invaders retained their tribal organization and names, but they mingled with the natives to form the nation of the Celtiberians, who were masters of the central meseta. It is not clear that they were numerous, or formed more than a military aristocracy soon diluted with indigenous blood. They maintained themselves in fortresses (*-briga* *-dunum*), sometimes connected with a memory of victory (*sego-* in place-names). Their chiefs' names were of a Celtic type (*Istodatios*, *Karaunios*, *Moenicaptus*

'slave of the Main river-god', *Boudica*), but these have not survived in Romance. They implanted their own customs as to duelling, religion, etc., but employed the local language for their coins, inscriptions and practical purposes. It would appear that the Celtic language was in disuse when the Romans arrived.

The lines of the Duero and Tagus mark the further advance of these peoples, whom Herodotus reports in the fifth century as established about the Pillars of Hercules and Cape St Vincent. Lines of posts in *-briga* follow the rivers, and in Portugal there are many settlements in strong positions between the streams, notably *Coimbra CONIMBRIGA*. In the north-west some Celts reached the sea, and established themselves near *Betanzos BRIGANTIIUM*. They were the *CELTICI* of the Nerium Promontory. The Galicians, however (GALLAECI Gk. *Kallaikoi*), were probably not Celts, despite the temptation to connect their name with that of the *Galati* or Gauls; and it is doubtful whether the *Artabri* or *Arotrebæ* of the same region had any connection with the Celtic tribe of the *Atrebates*. In the far south-west, the Guadiana led them away from the Tagus valley to become the *CELTICI* of the Lusitanian region (S. Portugal). The term 'Iberian' is not found with these names, but we have no reason for supposing that this connotes greater racial purity. The original tribal organization does not seem to have survived the westerly migration. The Guadalquivir basin was in the hands of the comparatively civilized *Turduli* and *Turdetani*, who halted the invaders on the line of the Sierra Morena; but they seem to have possessed mines at Cazlona, and to have owned Cartima, near Málaga. The whole Levantine coast and Catalonia was clear of Celts, but *SEGOBRIGA Segorbe*, at the end of the Idubedan chain, overlooked Saguntum and brought the invaders within a few miles of the Mediterranean. Cut off from Gaul, and from reinforcements, by the Basques and Catalan Iberians, they do not seem to have received fresh drafts; and their system of alliances, while it extended their sphere of influence, was probably too fluctuating to con-

stitute, as D'Arbois de Jubainville has it, the 'Celtic Empire of Spain'.

The record of their achievements is written in the names of their forts. The older nomenclature of rivers and mountains is not Celtic, with the exception of the *Deva* (our *Dee*) in Guipúzcoa. The *DURIUS* *Duero* might be Celtic, but is more likely to be connected with the *Adur* and other rivers of Basco-Iberian name. The element most frequently encountered is *briga* 'eminence', which answers to the Basco-Iberian *iri ili*. It occurs as a first element in **BRIGANTIUM** (*Betanzos*), **BRIGAE-CIUM** in León and **BRIGANTIA** (*Bragança*). As a second element, it is found associated with *Amalo-* *Ara-* *Arco-* *Cala-* *Ceto-* *Cottæo-* *Deo-* *Meidu-* *Meri-* *Miro-* *Nerto-* *Nemeto-* *Sego-* *Tala-* *Tongo-* *Turo-*. The list is increased in classical geographers by attributions to the Celtic tribes of towns evidently non-Celtic in name, as *Acinippo* *Arunda* (Ronda) *Asta* *Salpensa*, which all lay between Ronda and Sevilla. Many of the names are manifestly hybrid, such as *Mundobriga* *Amalobriga*. The termination *-briga*, like our *-chesters* and *-villes*, was capable of migrating beyond the range of the people to whose language it belonged; and the general impression produced by the Spanish place-names is that of survivors from a lost tongue. The alternative term *-dunum* is rare on Spanish soil, though frequent in France. *Besalú* from **BESALDUNUM** is a case in point, and parallel to the French *Bezaudun*. *Sego-* 'victory' appears in **SEGISAMO** (*Sasamón*) *Segovia* *Segorbe* **SEGONTIA** (*Sigüenza*). *Deobriga* and *Deobrigula* recall the name of the 'divine' *Deva*, and *Vindeleia* and *Contrebia*, in the heart of Celtiberian territory, are evidently Celtic.

The language brought into Spain by the invaders was presumably that of Gaul, which is fairly well known from inscriptions. Of dialect variations we find recorded **ARA-PENNIS** OSp. *arapende* for **AREPENNIS** Fr. *arpent* (a measure of land); **VIRIAE** for **VIRIOLAE** 'bracelet', and *-brigula* alongside *-briga*. The first of these might arise out of contamination with B. *ara* 'plain', but St Isidore suggests a cross with **ARARE** 'plough' ('ab arando scilicet'). Only one word of

proved Celtic origin is peculiar to the Peninsula: Gal. Ptg. *tona* 'rind' Welsh *ton* Ir. *tonn*. Doubtful are Sp. *manteica* Ptg. *manteiga* 'lard, butter', Sp. *berro* 'watercress' Welsh *berwr* Fr. *berle* (from Lat. BERULA Gaul. \**berura*), Sp. Ptg. *parra* 'vine-leaves', which has been claimed for Germanic. With the exception of *tona* and *arapende*, therefore, we have no evidence of direct contact between the Celtic of Spain and the later Peninsular languages. The Celtic element is thus but part of the Latin taught to Spain, largely under the influence of Gallic innovations. These innovations have various dates, according as they affected Old Latin, Classical Latin, Vulgar Latin, Western Romance, and even the Gallo-Iberian bloc. An ancient loan-word is CARRU Sp. Ptg. *carro* 'vehicle' Rum. *car* It. *carro* Fr. *char*. Imperial and Vulgar Latin knew such words as BRACAE Sp. Ptg. *bragas* Cat. *bragues* 'breeches' Rum. *imbráca* 'to dress' It. *brache* Fr. *brayes*. Western Romance (excluding Rumanian) has such terms as Sp. Ptg. *brio* 'mettle', Sp. *camino* Ptg. *caminho* Cat. *camí* 'road', Sp. Ptg. Cat. *legua* 'league'. It is rare for the Peninsula to possess a Celticism in common with France but not with northern Italy, though there are such: *berro* 'watercress', Sp. *alosa* Fr. *alose* 'shad'.

Under these circumstances it is superfluous to discuss the Celts as an element of the substratum which (according to the well-known hypothesis) remodelled the Latin of Spain. The Celts exercised their influence in Gaul, and only the consequences of that action reached Spain. Spain and Portugal, in any case, offer only one of the alleged Celtic characteristics in phonology, namely the change from -ct- to -it- Cast. -ch-. The development may have taken its origin equally well in Italic dialects, and we find it not completely effected in southern Spain as late as the twelfth century A.D., when all contact with Celts had been lost for about a millennium.

The quality of the borrowings, however, gives an interesting sidelight on the changes wrought by the Celts in European life and habits. The greater number of Gaulish words re-

corded by ancient authors are names of plants which were alien to the Mediterranean: as BETULLA Sp. *abedul* 'birch'. Next to these are the names of animals, tame or wild. CABALLU Sp. *caballo* Ptg. *cavalo* Cat. *cavall* 'horse', CATTU Sp. Ptg. *gato* Cat. *gat* 'cat' (which may be of African origin), PARAVEREDU Sp. *palafrén* 'palfrey' (a French loan-word), ALAUDA Fr. *alouette* Prov. *alauza* Cat. *alosa calandria* OSp. *aloa calandria* (by contamination, MSp. *alondra*) 'lark'. Sp. Ptg. *bico* Cat. *bec* 'beak' is one of the words referring to parts of the body; but OSp. *camba* Cat. *cama* 'leg', though claimed for a Celtic GAMBA or GAMBA, may be derived from Gk. *kampé* 'bending, joint'. Lat. PĒRNA 'ham' gave, humorously, the Ibero-Romance term for 'leg' Sp. *pierna* Ptg. *perna*, and kept its original meaning only in *pernil*; Sp. *jamón* 'ham' is a later borrowing from French *jambon*. The Celtic house impressed the Latins by its crudity: CAPANNA Sp. *cabaña* Ptg. Cat. *cabana* 'hut'. Of the foodstuffs, beer and its manufacture attracted attention: CEREVISA Sp. *cerveza* Ptg. *cerveja* Cat. *cervesa* 'beer'. There were also names of clothing among the loan-words: *bragas* 'breeches', SAGU Sp. *sayo* Ptg. *saio* 'smock'. Two important measures were the 'rood' OSp. *arapende* and the 'league' Sp. *legua* Cat. *llegua* Ptg. *légoa* LEUCA. TARATRU Sp. *taladro* Ptg. *trado* Cat. *taladre* 'auger', and LANCEA Sp. *lanza* Ptg. Cat. *llança* 'lance', are Celtic tools in peace and war.

Taken in general these words resemble those Spanish and Portuguese later borrowed from the American Indians. They describe a new region of flora and fauna by way of augmenting the nature-knowledge of the Mediterranean conquerors. Otherwise they betray a culture below that of the invaders, and so requiring indigenous names, but with some devices of peculiar effectiveness, in clothing, vehicles and tools.

Consult G. Dottin, *La Langue Gauloise* (Paris, 1920), and the articles of H. d'Arbois de Jubainville and J. Leite de Vasconcellos in *Revue Celtique*, xiv, xv, xxxiii, as well as the relevant parts of Hübner's *Monumenta linguae ibericae* and the *Grundriss der romanischen Philologie*.

## PHœNICIANS AND CARTHAGINIANS.

Sidonians traded at Tarshish or Tartessos in the ivory apes and peacocks of Morocco, the tin of the Cassiterides, and the gold, silver and lead of Spain. So rich was the country in comparison with the needs of antiquity, that the myth of Pyrene associated the Pyrenees primarily with gold, and Stesichorus speaks of the 'silver-rooted' Guadalquivir. The site of Tarshish remains a subject of controversy. About 1100 B.C. it became necessary to move the Sidonian factory to the more defensible position of Cádiz. This venerable city has been refashioned for successive generations of inhabitants so that it is singularly devoid of antiquities. Similarly the name has received an imprint from each of a long succession of masters. The Punic *Gadir* or *Aggadir* 'wall, enclosure, fortified place' appears in the Moroccan *Agadir*. To the Greeks the place was known as *Gádeira*, with which we compare the Biblical *Gadara*. The Romans altered the termination: *Gades*. The Arabs transliterated this word with *q*, doubtless in its ancient value, still extant in Egypt, of [g]: *Qaddis*. The pronunciation [k] supervened, and the Arabic vowels persisted, giving the Spanish *Cádiz*.

Tyre succeeded to Sidon as the commercial centre of the old world, but when Tyre fell before the Persian armies, Carthage took over the mandate for the Punic colonies in the western Mediterranean (*Mainaca Abdara Carteia*, etc.). She introduced a new spirit of empire. A 'New Carthage' arose as the capital of Hamilcar Barca's dominions, from which Hannibal marched against Rome: *Cartagena*. Scipio's invasion of Spain in 207 B.C. was the first move in the ruin of Carthage, whose Spanish empire vanished leaving scarcely a trace. The names of Punic towns remained, notably *Cádiz* and *CARTEIA* (*gereth* 'city'), which later became *Algeciras* 'the (green) island'. *Cartagena*, *Mahón* (PORTUS MAGONIS, after Hamilcar's third son), are specifically Carthaginian; but *BARCINO* *Barcelona* should probably be deemed Iberian (like *RUSCINO* *Roussillon*), and not associated with the *Barcidæ*.

Two common nouns have come down to Peninsular Romance, not directly, but because of their adoption by Latin: MAPPA Sp. Ptg. Cat. *mapa* 'map', and MAGALIA OSp. *nagüela* 'hutment' (cf. Hebrew *mágór* 'temporary dwelling, inn'), which also gives Sp. *mallada* majada Ptg. *malha* *malhada* Cat. *mallada* 'sheepfold'. The name HISPANIA has been connected with a root SPAN, and the Hebr. *sáphan* 'hide, conceal', in the sense of the 'hidden, remote land'. The alphabets used in Iberian inscriptions are indebted to Punic models more often than to Greek.

### THE GREEKS

The Greek element in the Peninsular languages is, apart from a couple of place-names, merely part of their Latin inheritance. Greek traders and colonists appeared early on the Levantine coast of Spain, working coastwise from Marseilles, or making the direct crossing from Cumæ by the Balearic island-bridge to Hemeroscopion. The periplus of the Peninsula was achieved under Pytheas, but the Phoenicians, in alliance with the Etruscans, inflicted a crushing defeat on the Massiliots at Alalia (Aleria) in Corsica, in 537 B.C. The Greeks were excluded from the commerce of the Straits and the Atlantic, and their Spanish establishments were at RHODE (*Rosas*) and EMPORION 'the mart' (*Ampurias*). *Hemeroskopion* has become *Denia*. It was the Greek traders and geographers who determined the form given to Peninsular place-names in the classical period, and who generalized the terms *Iberia* and *Iberi*, from the more restricted meaning of 'dwellers beside the Ebro'. The Greek alphabet was used in some native inscriptions, such as that of Alcoy.

Greek has served Latin, as Chinese has served Japanese, for a reservoir of cultured terms in all its epochs; and in consequence, the Greek element in the Peninsular languages shows an elaborate stratification. We may distinguish five principal layers. The oldest loan-words in Latin are of pre-classical date, and use only native Latin vowels and consonants. Thus Gk. *υ* (*γ*) *φ* *χ* *θ* are represented by Latin

*u p c t*, and *c g* frequently interchange: *porphyra* PURPURA OSp. *porpola* Aljamiado *polbra* Cat. *porpra* 'purple'; *kybernán* GUBERNARE Sp. Ptg. Cat. *gobernar* *governar* 'govern'; *thýmon* TUMU Sp. *tomillo* 'thyme'; *kólaphos* \*COLPU OSp. *colpe* Cat. *cop* MSp. Ptg. *golpe* 'blow', a word which has lost its *-u* through French mediation; *kréte* CRETA Sp. Ptg. Cat. *greda* 'chalk'. Very much larger was the second stratum of Greek loan-words in Classical Latin. They were more abstract and cultural, and they were transliterated by the aid of fresh alphabetical signs (*x y z ph ch th*) designed to represent the Greek sounds. These give Peninsular *x i z f c t*, though the Latin orthography persisted in Portugal until 1911, and is still to be met with in Brazil and in private use. Hence CYMA Sp. Ptg. *cima* Cat. *cim* 'peak' (preclassical CUMAE), GYPSU Sp. *yeso* Ptg. *gesso* Cat. *guix* 'gypsum', ÓRPHANU Sp. *huérfano* Ptg. *órfão* Cat. *orfe* 'orphan', SCHÖLA Sp. *escuela* Ptg. Cat. *escola* 'school'.

The third stratum of Hellenisms corresponds to the late Latin and Romance periods, and contains chiefly ecclesiastical terms characterized by 'iotacism', i.e. by the single value [i] for the vowels and diphthongs *ɛ i y ei oi yi*. The history of *ekklēsia*, a younger term for church than the Roman BASILICA Ptg. *Baselgas* (place-name), is complex in the Peninsula. The iotaism appears in Fr. *église*. Spanish has *iglesia* and formerly *elguesia* (twelfth century) and *elglesia* (1212), Ptg. *igreja*, Cat. (e)sgleya església. *Apothēkē* 'store' gives the Classical Latin APOTHECA, whence OSp. *abdega* Ptg. *adega* and Sp. *bodega* 'wine-cellar'; but the Byzantine form is represented by Sp. Ptg. *botica* Cat. *botiga* 'shop', words which are also semi-learned. Characteristic words of this series are Sp. *obispo* Ptg. *bispo* Cat. *bisbe* 'bishop', *ángel* 'angel', *blasfemar* 'curse, blaspheme', *bautizar* 'baptize', etc., together with the suffix *-izar*, equivalent to Gk. *-izein*. *Katà*, in *katà pénte* 'each five, groups of five', has the value of 'each', and so *cada uno* 'each one' OSp. *cadaguno* Ptg. *cada hum* Cat. *cadascú*, and formations like *quiskataqui uamne* 'each man' (*Glosas Emilianenses*) and *cadalguno*. OSp. *maguer* 'despite the fact that'

probably renders the Gk. *makárie* 'but, my dear sir!' (in a tone of mild protest).

More specialized to the Peninsula are those Greek words which have been borrowed through the Arabic. They are generally Byzantine, and replace or run concurrently with other previous borrowings. Samples are *Almágest*, Ptolemy's *Megíste Syntáxis* with the Ar. *al-* 'the', *atramuz* 'lupin' (*thérmos*), *adarme* 'dirhem' (*drachmē*). The fifth and last Greek current is that of pseudo-Greek scientific and technical terms which have an international vogue: *monarquía drama mecánica crisis telégrafo*, etc. Modernist poets have been given to coining Greek neologisms to diversify their style and to give a dactylic rhythm to the verse: e.g. Rubén Darío's *liróforo* 'lyrebearer'.

The Classical Greek accent was musical; that of Modern Greek, Latin and Romance an accent of stress. In the process of conversion from one system to another, the pitch accent has sometimes been made into a stress accent, sometimes ignored in favour of Latin accentual rules. Thus we have *golpe Estéban* according to the Greek accent, but *huérfano escuela cuerda cada* for *orphanós scholé chordé katá*. *Káthedra* 'seat' gives the latinized Sp. *cadera* 'hip', and the learned *cátedra* 'professorial chair'. Greek *-eia* corresponds with Lat. *-ía -ia*, but also resembles *-íA -ia*; and from this confusion arises, particularly in vulgar pronunciation. For instance, Sp. Ptg. *academia* 'academy' is accented in Spanish on the *e*, but in Portuguese on the *i*. Spanish writes *periodo océano* but pronounces [perjóðo oþeáno]. The Baroque tendency to adopt trisyllabic endings also causes confusion in accents, and that not merely in Greek words. Thus for Calderón's *hipogrifo violento*, modern taste tends to prefer *hipógrifo*; for Alfonso el Sabio's *cantigas*, *cántigas*; and there are many vulgarisms of the type *intérvalo méndigo Iturbide*.

## CHAPTER III

### THE LATIN OF SPAIN

When lovely Venus, moved to protect the Portuguese people for their pristine Roman virtues (as Camões tells us), thought of the language, she took it, with slight corruption, for Latin—

com pouca corrupção crê que é a latina.

In Spain also, Nebrija composed the first of modern European grammars, his *Gramática de la Lengua Castellana* (1492), on the lines of, and as it were a gloss on, his Latin grammar. These testimonies bear witness to the essential Latinity of the three Peninsular Romances. Latin is their sole basis. It is only by adoption into Spanish-Latin that the influence of the Iberian and Celtic tongues comes into play, and that only to the slight extent already described. It is true that the problem of substrata occupies much of the space devoted to linguistic research; but that is a measure not of their basic importance, but of the remoteness and difficulty of the allegations, leading to intricate, and proportionately insecure, arguments. In contrast therewith, the Latinity of Spanish, Portuguese and Catalan is self-evident, and for that reason receives normally the less attention.

Latin, we repeat, is the basis of the three Peninsular Romance tongues; specifically the Latin talked in Spain, either as a uniform speech or with local variations. Something may be known of its divergences from standard Classical Latin by studying the monuments engraved during the first centuries of our era, or by collecting stray notices from Pliny, St Isidore and other ancient encyclopædist; though the interpretation of this evidence is not without obscurity. In particular it is remarkable that many of the most striking characteristics

of the surviving languages—characteristics which go back through all medieval documents—are not recorded on monuments and in the Classical authors. It is possible that these authorities may have been already widely separated from current Spanish Latin, for even masons cut their inscriptions as grammatically as they knew how; or it may have been that a linguistic landslide took place in the dark period between the exhaustion of Classical scholarship in the sixth century and the emergence of the first vernacular documents in the tenth. The new languages emerge, each in its own character, each handling in a distinctive fashion the Latinity at the disposal of them all, having assimilated not only the Iberian, Celtic and early Greek elements, but those of Byzantium and of the Germanic dialects, and marked by tides of phonetic change which are least noticeable in the West, and more numerous and violent in the East as we approach the great centre of innovation in Gaul. The Frankish character of many German loan-words, and the Gallo-Roman form adopted for others of Latin or Greek origin (e.g. *tapete* and *tapiz*), are additional witnesses to the importance of this Trans-Pyrenean focus of linguistic change. Even some of the earliest Arabic loan-words come within the Romance period before the final determination of the separate vernaculars, and so help to characterize the Latin of Spain.

Latin, however, is not merely the basis of Spanish, Portuguese and Catalan, but has continued to live with these languages in a sort of symbiosis. The language of the law, of the church, and of the schools, it has continued to be available, in forms more and more precise and classical, for comparison with the vernaculars, to halt a process of change, to reverse the process by adopting an older form, to supply a fresh word by a table of recognized equivalences, or to reintroduce an old word which had been discarded or forgotten by fashion. Hence the wealth of 'learned' and 'half-learned' words which occupies the greater part of the dictionaries. The former are, apart from some simple altera-

tions, recognizably the Latin word: Sp. *espíritu* (Ptg. *espírito*) SPIRITU 'spirit', Sp. Ptg. *tribu* TRIBU 'tribe' have merely discarded the Latin case endings, while *espíritu* has modified the initial SP-. SAECULU 'century', however, gives the 'learned' Ptg. *século*, but in Sp. the 'half-learned' *siglo* (OSp. *sieglo*, for which the popular form would have been \**sejo* in Castilian, cf. OCULU *ojو*). The sense of FIDE 'faith' is not kept in mind in the Sp. *a la fe*, an exclamation, which has an unimpeded phonetic evolution; but the Latin word has maintained the *f*- in Sp. *fe*, which has enjoyed otherwise an entirely popular development. Similarly, FIDELIS Sp. *fiel* 'faithful', but FEL Sp. *hiel* 'gall'; FESTA *fiesta* 'festival', but INFESTU *inhesto* 'hostile'. Examples of retrogression, due to the symbiosis of Latin with the vernacular, are PRINCIPE OSp. *príncepe*, MSp. *príncipe* 'prince', DIGNU *dino* (in the seventeenth century), MSp. *digno*. *Acto* and *auto* are both 'learned' words, derived from ACTU at different times, and now used in different senses. The terms 'learned' and 'half-learned', with their Spanish equivalents *cultismos* and *semi-cultismos*, need not be given too rarified a sense. To coin a 'learned' word is within the power of any moderately alert speaker of the language, and the conventions that rule are at all times widely known, though not in each century the same. Suffixes play an important part in such formations; as *-ado* -ATTU, *-able* -ABILE, *-idad* -ITATE, *-izar* (for verbs), etc.

While reserving for a later paragraph the discussion in detail of phases of Spanish Latinity, we may here note the recurrence at intervals of the Classical ideal, and the impulse it gives *per contra* to the development of the vernacular. The monumental work of St Isidore, in the sixth century, is an effort of this kind; and in the ninth, St Eulogius and Alvarus of Córdoba display as much anxiety to tighten up the rules of composition in Latin as to purify the faith. In León, however, Latin was led along a path of compromise by those who drew up legal documents as late as the tenth century. They felt the need of being understood, and minimized the difference between Latin and Leonese by voicing *-p-* *-t-* *-k-* *-f-* in

*cingidur* (*CINGITUR*) *accebi* (*ACCEPI*), etc., omitting *-g-* in *reliosiss* (*RELIGIOSIS*), vocalizing *-l-* cons. in *autairo* (*ALTARIU*), changing the timbre of unaccented vowels in *ribolo* (*RIVULU*), etc. A great wave of Classical influence from Cluny in the eleventh century put an end to this compromise, and the so-called Monk of Silos (*c.* 1109), with his propensity for Vergilian hexametrical rhythms, is a relatively 'correct' author. He and those like him, notably Archbishop Rodrigo Ximénez de Rada of Toledo in the thirteenth century, initiated in Spain the period of scholastic Latin, and set up a standard too exacting for popular entertainment or general instruction. To diffuse more widely general notions of history and science Castilian prose came into existence under the pen of Alfonso the Wise, and the beginnings of Portuguese prose followed a generation later. To the insistence on a scholastic standard in Latin corresponds, therefore, a great advance in the use of the vernacular. The vernacular borrowed from its rival such vocabulary as it required, and it borrowed also for the sake of eloquence. In the fifteenth century the latter type of borrowing—both vocabulary and syntax—became intense in the works of the Marquis of Santillana, Enrique de Villena and the court of Juan II, and reached a state of congestion in the aureate manner of the poet Juan de Mena, who practised all the tricks and inversions of Classical grammarians. A new standard of Latin composition entered in the sixteenth century with the Humanists. Cicero was the model, and Erasmus and Vives represented the height of feasible attainment. Purity of style could be maintained, Francisco de las Brozas averred, only by the disuse of Latin for vulgar purposes; and in consequence many departments of literature (notably theology and philosophy) were thrown open to the vernacular. This is the Age of Gold for the Spanish and Portuguese literatures. They expand to their full limits of thought and action; while Latin is reserved for the school-dramas and bucolics of the Jesuits or the technical erudition of theologians. It is an age of neologisms borrowed from Classical Latin, generally with

Italian precedents, at first under the need for words to fit the new concepts, but later as an adornment; and again there is in the latinizing of the vernacular a moment of crisis, which is termed *gongorismo* or *culteranismo*. The Latin of Spanish schools has not surpassed the level reached by the Jesuit teachers of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, but in other parts of Europe a still more exacting standard has been set up which rejects even the compromises of Vives and Erasmus; and this Latinity has accentuated again the distance between the vernacular and the 'dead' languages, and has given rise to a more strictly classical standard in loan-words. The period is marked by the rise and authority of the Academies, and by academical 'reforms' of spelling, such as the reinsertion of *-g-* in *digno*, the value [ks] for *x* and its restoration for the older *-s-* as in *examen* 'examination', the retention of *c* in *luctuoso* 'grievous' (but *luto* 'grief, mourning'), and the host of cosmopolitan neologisms formed on conventional patterns from Greek elements.

Two tendencies are at work throughout this history of the relation between the vernaculars and Latin. On the one hand, there is the desire to use Latin as the national and international medium for the commerce of ideas, with a necessary measure of compromise with current vernacular vocabulary and linguistic habits; on the other hand, the indignation of scholars against such vulgarisms has caused them to erect afresh the classical standard. To do so is to sacrifice the many to the few. With each classicizing reform Latin has become less generally serviceable, and the vernacular has flowed in to fill the void; but the latter has at the same time suffered such discipline as has greatly increased its resemblance to its rival.

## THE TESTIMONY OF INSCRIPTIONS AND CLASSICAL AUTHORS

The inscriptions of Spain from the first to the eighth century have been examined with a view to throwing light on the phonetic changes which presumably took place within that period. They offer the guarantees of precise dating and location, together with the certainty of being still in their original form, unmutilated by the scribal tradition which diminishes the authority of written documents. But they have proved surprisingly uninstructive. The masons of Bætica, in particular, show few local peculiarities, and may have been foreigners in some instances. It is only in Lusitania that vulgarisms are numerous. These vulgarisms are typically those of all Romania rather than Spain in particular, and not infrequently run contrary to later Peninsular speech-habits. Thus AUNCOLO (AVUNCULO) 'uncle' is related to Fr. Cat. *oncle*, but not to Spanish *tío*, which does not appear on the inscriptions (Isidore reports *thus* as a Græcism); SERORI (SORORI) is related to OFr. *seror* but not to Sp. *hermana*; 'impure' *s* has for prefix *i* rather than *e*, being the Italian rather than the Spanish usage, as in ISCOLASTICUS; the closing of ē before r (TIRRA, PUIR, for TERRA, PUPER) is at variance with the open vowel in Portuguese and Catalan and the diphthong in Spanish; INTERANNIENSIS (-nn- for -mn-) corresponds to the Spanish treatment (*sueño*, *suenno*, SOMNU 'sleep'), but INTERAMICO (-m- for -mn-) answers to the French (*sommeil*); NEPOTA appears for NEPTIS, but it is not a Spanish or Portuguese word, though it continues in Catalan as *neboda* 'niece', Prov. *neboda*, Venetian *neboda*, Rum. *nepoată*. No light is thrown on the characteristic Spanish development *r* > *h*, nor on the evolution of the group -ct-. The inscriptions bear witness to several common Romance changes, not as verified but as possible, in their variations of orthography, such as the simplification of unaccented vowels, the Romance values of old diphthongs, etc. They are notable for their 'betacism' (confusion of *b* and *v*), but this phenomenon is different from

the equivalence of *b* and *v* in Spanish, Catalan and North Portuguese, and possibly starts from words like BIBIT VIVIT VOBIS BOVIS which provoke assimilation and dissimilation. Epenthetic vowels take their timbre, as in Basque, from neighbouring vowels rather than from neighbouring consonants as in French and Italian; and intervocal -P- -T- -K- are frequently voiced (IMUDAVIT for IMMUTAVIT, SAGERDOTES for SACERDOTES), though it is doubtful whether we should connect these forms with the voicing of intervocal voiceless occlusives in Portuguese and Spanish (other than Aragonese). Among interesting forms recorded are ALIS (for ALIUS) cf. OSp. *al* 'something else', PARAMUS Sp. *páramo*, TAM MAGNUS Sp. *tamaño* 'so big, size', CABALLUS 'horse', MANCIPIUS Sp. *mancebo* Cat. *macip* 'youth' (for MANCIPIUM), SOCRA Sp. *suegra* Ptg. Cat. *sogra* 'mother-in-law' (for SOCRUS), LAUSIA Sp. *losa* 'flagstone', COLLACTEUS Sp. *collazo* 'farm-hand', NATUS in the sense of 'child', NATALES in the sense of 'ancestry', MULIER replacing UXOR 'wife' as in all Romance languages, SUPERUM Sp. *sobre* as an adverb tending towards a preposition (QUIBUS SUPERUM PONITUR CAMERA), ALTARIUM a new singular from ALTARIA and source of Sp. *otero* 'hillock'.

Pliny, Columella, Pomponius Mela and St Isidore have preserved words popularly used in Spain, but naturally have no cause to indicate changes of pronunciation or syntax. These words are frequently technical terms: the names of plants or animals or of processes in mining. Most of them have left no trace in Romance. The testimony of St Isidore of Sevilla, in the sixth century, is the fullest and the most instructive. He quotes THIUS, from which derive Sp. Ptg. *tio* It. *zio*, as a Græcism, ANTENATUS Sp. *alnado* 'step-child', CAPANNA Sp. *cabaña* 'hut', CATENATUM Sp. *candado* 'bolt', CATTUS Sp. *gato* 'cat', BURGUS cf. Burgos, CAMISIA Sp. *camisa* 'shirt', ARGENTEUS in the sense of 'white', SYMPHONIA as a musical instrument (Sp. *zampona*), MALLEOLUS Sp. *majuelo* Cat. *mallol* 'new vine, white hawthorn', MANTUM Sp. *manto* 'cloak', MERENDARE Sp. *merendar* 'to lunch', PLAGIA Sp. *playa* 'beach', SAIO Sp. *sayón* 'executioner', SARNA

Sp. *sarna* 'itch', SERRALIA or SARRALIA Sp. *cerraja* 'common sow-thistle', etc. His vocabulary contains a few Iberian terms, more Celtiberian or Celtic, a considerable number of German terms (ARMILAUSA, BLAVUS 'blue', BURGUS, FLASCA, HOSA, MEDUS, SAIO, etc.), and others of doubtful provenance.

Cf. A. Carnoy, *Le Latin d'Espagne d'après les inscriptions* (2nd ed. Brussels, 1906), J. Sofer, *Lateinisches und Romanisches aus den 'Eymologiae' des Isidorus von Sevilla* (Göttingen, 1930).

### RELATION TO THE REST OF ROMANIA

Owing to the inconclusiveness and insufficiency of the monumental and literary record, it is from the Peninsular vernaculars themselves that we must enquire what was the special character of their Latinity, and how they developed their inheritance. In the first place our attention is called to a number of developments which the Peninsular languages share with those of Gaul, but which are quite absent in Rumanian. With regard to these criteria the northern dialects of Italy, occupying the site of the classical Gallia Cisalpina, are found to be in agreement with French and Provençal; whereas those of southern Italy, occupying Magna Græcia and the adjacent territories, show frequent affinities with Rumanian and with the Latin element in Albanian. Standard Italian, based on the Tuscan dialect, has vacillated between Eastern and Western Romance, and may be termed Central.

Spanish, Portuguese and Catalan agree with French and Provençal in the strong preference shown for a penultimate stress accent, though antepenultimates are more frequent the farther we go west in the Peninsula. Thus Western Romance comes to possess a notably trochaic rhythm (subject to further modification in the case of French), whereas Italian and Rumanian are rich in dactyls. Thus HÓMINES gives Ptg. *homens* Sp. *hombres* (OSp. *omnes*) Cat. *homes* Fr. *hommes* (with an *e* formerly pronounced); but It. *uòmini* Rum. *oameni*. As applied to declension, Western Romance has eliminated the type PECTUS PECTORA (with antepenultimate accent in the

plural); Eastern Romance has notably extended its use. The plural of *TEMPUS* 'time' is thus Ptg. *tempos* Sp. *tiempos* Cat. *tempis* Rum. *timpuri*: of *LATUS* 'side' Ptg. Sp. *lados* OCat. *latis* Rum. *läturi*. In Western Romance -P- -T- -K- between vowels, or between a vowel and -R-, became voiced (*b d g*), and were then subjected to various changes amounting sometimes to elimination; in Eastern Romance these voiceless occlusives remain; Italian vacillates. Thus

Ptg.	Sp.	Cat.	Prov.	Fr.	It.	Rum.
RIPA	riba	riba	riba	rive	ripa, riva	ripä
VITA	vida	vida	vida	vie	vita	vită
PATRE	padre, pai	padre	pare	père	padre	—
PETRA	pedra	piedra	pedra	pierre	pietra	piatră
PACAT	paga	paga	paga	paie	paga	pacă
FOCU	fogo	fuego	foc <sup>1</sup>	feu	fuoco	foc

In the West the -s of Latin accusative and nominative plurals has been retained, while in Italian and the East it has been lost. Spanish and Portuguese have used only the accusative forms of the plural, whereas Provençal and Old French preserved both the nominative and the accusative in the singular and plural. So we have

Ptg.	Sp.	Cat.	OFr.	MFr.	It.	Rum.
MURI	—	—	<i>mur</i>	—	<i>muri, mura</i>	<i>muri</i>
MUROS	<i>muros</i>	<i>murs</i>	<i>murs</i>	<i>murs</i>	—	—
CAPRAE	—	—	—	—	<i>capre</i>	<i>capre</i>
CAPRAS	<i>cabras</i>	<i>cabres</i>	<i>chievres</i>	—	—	—

In the verbal flexion, apart from the retention of *FIERI* by Rumanian and its use to form the passive (as against *ESSE* in the West and Italy), the Eastern languages form the new Romance future as one of 'volition' (*VELLE*), as *voiū cantā* 'I shall sing' ('I wish to sing'), while the West and Italian use the future of 'necessity' (*HABEO*), as Ptg. *cantarei* Sp. *cantaré* Cat. *cantaré* Prov. *cantarai* Fr. *chanterai* It. *cantarò*. The idea of necessity or compulsion still remains in the formula Ptg. *hei-de cantar* Sp. *he de cantar* 'I have to sing', 'I must sing'. The differences in vocabulary between the Eastern and Western varieties of Romance are very numerous, owing

<sup>1</sup> -c from -g when the latter became final by loss of -o.

to the long seclusion of the Rumanians, cut off from the Adriatic by a ring of southern Slavonic tribes. The most conspicuous sign of this separate development is the presence of Germanic words in the West and Slavonic in the East; but the total want of Germanic in the East or Slavonic in the West. In this matter Italian is part and parcel of Western Romance, showing Eastern characteristics only in the greater number of its Hellenisms. Thus we have *\*WERRA* 'war' Sp. Cat. Prov. *guerra* Fr. *guerre* It. *guerra*; but Rum. *razboiu*, cf. Russ. *razboi*.

This essential cohesion of the Western half of Romania appears also in certain characteristics of Peninsular Romance which are not shared by the Castilian dialects. In comparatively recent times—after the eleventh century—Castilian has imposed itself as the literary and official speech of the central region; Castilian has, in fact, become 'Spanish'. It is an innovating dialect amid others that are more conservative, and the evidence of the other dialects of Spanish, taken with that of Portuguese and Catalan, shows Peninsular Romance as standing closer to Western Romance and to the general tendencies of Romania than does Castilian-Spanish. It is highly characteristic of Castilian-Spanish, as of Gascon, to have made initial *f*- an aspirate *h* and then to have silenced this letter; but in Catalan, Portuguese, Leonese, Aragonese and Mozarabic the *f*- remains:

FACTU 'done' gives Cast. *hecho*, but Ptg. Leon. *feito* Arag. *feto* fet  
Cat. *fet* Fr. *fait* It. *fatto*.

FABULARE 'talk' gives Cast. *hablar*, but Ptg. *falar* Fr. *fabler* OIt. *favolare*.

In Castilian-Spanish initial *j*- and *g*- (i.e. before *e* or *i*) disappear, but it is elsewhere retained:

JANUARIU (JEN-) 'January' gives Cast. *enero*, but Ptg. *janeiro* Moz. *yenair*  
Cat. *gener* Fr. *janvier* It. *gennaio*.

In Romance *-CL- -LI-*, medial, have given a palatal [λ], rendered *ll gl* or *lh*; in Castilian-Spanish this palatal has

suffered a further development to [ž] and later [χ], written *j*. Thus

FILIA 'daughter' gives Cast. *hija*, but Ptg. *filha* Leon. Arag. *filla* Cat. *filla* Fr. *fille* It. *figlia*.

MULIERE 'woman' gives Cast. *mujer*, but Ptg. *molher* Leon. Arag. *muller* Cat. *muller* OFr. *moillier* It. *moglie*.

OCULU 'eye' gives Cast. *ojو*, but Ptg. *olho* Moz. *welyo* Cat. *ull* OFr. *eil*, but It. *occhio*.

The group -CT- has suffered various transformations: in Rumanian to *pt*, in Italian to *tt*. In the other Western languages it has evolved as far as the stage *it*, but has been carried further by Castilian to [č] *ch*: as LACTE 'milk' Cast. *leche*, but Ptg. Moz. Leon. Arag. *leite* Cat. *lleit* Fr. *lait*. In the evolution of the diphthongs from accented ē and ö, though the various Western languages have not equally participated and Portuguese not at all, the changes were carried through, when they took place, with a measure of common consent; and in the case where these vowels occurred before a palatal, Castilian-Spanish again conceals the general tendencies of the Spanish dialects. OCULU, cited above, illustrates this fact. Castilian does not diphthongize in this case; but a diphthong is found in Mozarabic, Leonese and Aragonese, in French, in Provençal *uelh* and Cat. *ull*, which conserves in its *u* for ö the trace of a former diphthong. The development of ē ö + palatal into a diphthong is the widest spread of such diphthongs, and was general in the Spanish dialects and in Catalan, but did not reach to Portugal, Galicia or Cantabria, the ancient home of Castilian. The emergence of these diphthongs in other cases (not shared by Catalan and Provençal, nor by Portuguese) unites all the Spanish dialects.

There are some instances of agreement between the Peninsula and Eastern Romance which have been argued to imply an original contact between the two. The lost Latin of Africa, the latinity of Sicily and Calabria, and the now lost Romance of Dalmatia doubtless bridged the distance be-

tween Spain and the Balkans. Hence we note the agreement in the metaphor used for discovery:

AFFLARE 'to sniff out' (of a hound?)	Ptg. <i>achar</i> Rum. <i>a afă</i>
*FAFLARE (imitative)	Sp. <i>fallar, hallar,</i>

but \*TROPARE 'to invent phrases' (school word) Cat. *trobar* Fr. *trouver*, whence It. *trovare*. Similarly, the metaphor used for arrival or departure was in Spain and Rumania PLICARE 'fold, tie up', but in France \*AD-RIPA-RE 'come to the bank'. Rum. *plecă* 'go away' (originally 'fold up a tent'), Sp. *llegar* Ptg. *chegar* 'arrive' (originally 'tie up the ship to the bank'); Fr. *arriver* (whence It. *arrivare*) 'arrive' (originally 'come to the bank'). Similarly Spain and Rumania have preferred RIVU 'river' to FLUMEN or FLUVIU: Sp. Ptg. *rio* Rum. *rîu*; but Fr. *fleuve* It. *fiume*. They use PASSERE 'sparrow' in the general sense of 'bird': Ptg. *páxaro*, Sp. *pájaro* Rum. *pasere*; but Cat. *ocell* Fr. *oiseau* It. *uccello* from AVICELLU. For PULCHRU 'beautiful' they prefer FORMOSU to BELLU: Ptg. *formoso* Sp. *hermoso* Rum. *frumos*; but Fr. *beau, bel* It. *bello*. REU 'defendant' has been extended in Spanish and Portuguese to mean 'criminal' (*reo*), and further in Rumanian to mean 'bad' (*rău*). QUEM has persisted in Ptg. *quem* Sp. *quien* Rum. *cine*, but not to the north of the Pyrenees; and Spanish and Rumanian make use of demonstratives compounded with \*ACCU- in preference to ECCE: Ptg. Sp. *aquí* Cat. Rum. *aci* 'here'. Coincidences of this kind do not suffice to divide Romania into northern and southern Romance languages, as has been alleged. They bear additional evidence to what is otherwise quite plain, namely, that the most active centre of innovations in Romania was Gaul, where French is found in the eleventh-century *Chanson de Roland* further removed from its parent Latin than Spanish is at the present day. Northern and Central Italian lay more open to French influence (e.g. *trovare, arrivare*) than the Peninsula, and some innovations did not establish themselves in Spanish and Portuguese; these testify to an older stage of spoken Latin, shared by Rumanian also. The obliteration of African Latin by the

Vandals and Moslems prevents the formulation of any sure statement as to the dialectal peculiarities of that region.

Within Western Latin, that of Spain and Portugal forms a close group with certain characteristic differences from French, Provençal and even Catalan. The final vowels in Ibero-Romance are *a e o*; in the Asturias there is also a trace of *u* in the declension of masculine nouns S. *u* Pl. *os* or in *dixo* ('he said') but *xudiu* (*judío* 'Jew'). The Romance of Gaul preserves only final *a* (in French as *e* 'mute'), and when *e* appears it is only as a vowel of support for a difficult consonant group. So Cast. *hija hijo infante* contrasts with Cat. *filla fill infant* Fr. *fille fils enfant*. Spanish and Portuguese agree in conserving a declension in the accusative case only: *muro*, *muros*. Gallo-Romance distinguished a nominative and an oblique case in both numbers and declined in OFr. Nom. S. *murs* Obl. S. *mur* Nom. Pl. *mur* Obl. Pl. *murs*. A few sporadic nominatives and genitives are found in Spanish and Portuguese. **DEUS** 'God' gives Ptg. *Deus* Sp. *Dios*, through the influence of the liturgy; but Jewish-Spanish *El Dio* from **DEUM**. *Carlos*, *Oliveros*, *Montesinos*, *Marcos* are due to clerical influence, supported in some instances by memory of the French nominative in *-s*. The genitive is found in **VENERIS** (**DIES**) Sp. *viernes* 'Friday' **JOVIS** (**DIES**) Sp. *jueves* 'Thursday' **MARTIS** (**DIES**) Sp. *martes* 'Tuesday', while *lunes* (**LUNAE**) *miércoles* (**MERCURII**) are analogical formations. The patronymics in *-ez* (e.g. *Díaz*) are best explained as due to words in the genitive ending in *-ICI* (**RODERICUS DIDACI**, *Didaz*, *Díaz*) which have given rise to the termination by false analogy (*Fernández* as if from *\*Fernandici*, *FERNANDI*). In the relative pronoun the nominative *qui* persisted as well as the accusative *quem*, and in the personal pronoun the nominative accusative dative all survived, Sp. *yo me mi*, Ptg. *eu me mim*. But these are merely relics of declensional cases; there were no systematic distinctions as in Gallo-Romance. Gallo-Romance developed mixed vowels (*ü, æ*) which are not found in Ibero-Romance, nor in Catalan. In the Peninsula the seven Vulgar Latin tonic vowels persisted in Ptg. Cat. *a e e i o ñ u*, and in

Spanish *ɛ ɔ* developed further into the diphthongs *ie ue*. The system of pronunciation is basically the same in all the Peninsular languages, despite superinduced differences. In the treatment of the verb Ibero-Romance reduced the number of 'strong' perfects and past participles much more drastically than Gallo-Romance, Catalan occupying a middle position in this respect; and Ibero-Romance made no use in conjugation of inceptive forms (-*ESCERE*), used in Gallo-Romance and Catalan to regularize the accent in the *-ir* conjugation: Sp. *floréce florecémos*, Prov. *floris florém*, Cat. *floréix florím*. A notable archaism of Ibero-Romance has been the retention of the pluperfect in *-RA*, which has in Portuguese regularly, and in Spanish occasionally, the pluperfect sense. Rumanian also has preserved the pluperfect idea, but has used for it the Latin pluperfect subjunctive. In Gallo-Romance this tense was preserved only by Provençal, and only for the conditional, as also in Catalan. Ibero-Romance is marked, naturally, by the presence of Iberian and Basque words, though these are few in number, and often difficult of demonstration.

The correspondence between Portuguese and the older dialects of Spanish, such as Mozarabic, is so close that the language appears in general archaic beside Castilian. Innovations are few. Portuguese has endeavoured to eliminate *-l* between vowels (CAELU Ptg. *céu* Sp. *cielo* 'heaven, sky'), and *-n-*, OLISIPONE *Lisboa*, BONA Ptg. *boa* Sp. *buena*. The process of denasalization is not everywhere complete, and is frequently encountered in the intermediate stage at which the nasal consonant has disappeared but the preceding vowel has suffered nasalization, as *LANA lã* 'wool'. In other instances the vowel had combined with the lost *m* to give a nasal diphthong: TAM BENE *tambem* [tẽubẽj] Sp. *también* 'also'. The sources of these nasal vowels and the grade of their nasality differ from those of the French nasals. Portuguese has developed the faculty of conjugating its infinitive to indicate person (the 'personal' infinitive) in cases where Spanish uses the nominative of a personal pronoun with the

infinitive; and it has made more use of TENERE Ptg. *ter* as the auxiliary of perfect tenses. It was from the side of Portugal (from Galicia or León) that there came the initial impetus to modify PL- CL- FL-; and the Portuguese *ch* (*chama* from CLAMAT 'he calls' or FLAMMA 'flame', *chaga* from PLAGA 'wound') has carried the process some stages further than Sp. *llama llaga*. While there is no need to suppose that the Portuguese-Galician and Spanish languages were ever identical, each being descended in an equally direct line from spoken Latin, it is evident that they were originally distinguished only by minimal points of difference.

Catalan is very different from Portuguese and literary Spanish, and its precise situation in Romania has been, and continues, to be a matter of dispute. Some philologists hold that it belongs essentially to Ibero-Romance, chiefly on the ground of the very easy transition from Spanish to Catalan through the Aragonese dialects of the two Nogueras. In that region, to the north of Tamarite and Binéfar, the characteristics of Spanish in the Aragonese patois transform themselves gradually into the characteristics of Catalan. On the contrary, the cleft between the Catalan of Roussillon and the Provençal of Languedoc is abrupt, and has always held to the same frontier, so far as evidence survives. This frontier is determined by the northern branch of the Pyrenees—the Corbières—which protected the medieval frontier, and probably coincided with ancient ethnic divisions. The present line of division follows the southern range, the Alberes. If, however, standard Catalan, standard Spanish and Provençal be arranged in parallel columns, then the occasional agreement of Catalan with Spanish is overbalanced by the proportion of its coincidences with Provençal. Such a method, however, may prove fallacious. We have seen, for instance, that Castilian-Spanish does not represent the consensus of Spanish dialects, and that for comparison with Catalan the Aragonese dialect would be a more adequate criterion: on the other hand, Provençal is so wanting in unity that to describe forms as 'Provençal' is arbitrary. It is, however

clear that the evidence of common-sense must be accepted and the palpable similarity of a Catalan to a Provençal text, for instance in the Catalan and Languedocian versions of the Viscount of Roda's voyage to the Purgatory of St Patrick, must be duly recognized; while at the same time we must admit that the transition from Spanish to Catalan is effected without interruption in the Pyrenean region. The latter does not prove Catalan to be a branch of the Ibero-Romance family any more than the similar band-frontier between French and Italian cancels the difference between those two great languages. The term 'language', indeed, in this acceptance is not exclusively a philological expression. It involves cultural elements. A 'language' has a cultural centre, often a literature, at least some middle point whence influences radiate. A dialect also has its dialectal centre, and the difference between language and dialect is one of degree. There is greater independence in a 'language'; it looks towards some veritable capital. Such a capital Catalan has had since the tenth century in Barcelona, and even in earlier times the Marca Hispanica possessed a certain self-determination. The clear-cut frontier by the Corbières proves that Catalan is a trans-Pyrenean language, and not a dialect of Provençal, however close the two speeches may otherwise stand; the possession of a separate culture and a linguistic centre in the Peninsula, supported by the existence of a band-frontier in Aragon and by the sum total of its differences, cuts off Catalan from Ibero-Romance strictly so called, and shows it to be an independent language of a type approximating to Provençal.

The differences of the three languages may be appreciated from the following *Paternosters*:

*Catalan*: Pare nostre, qui estau en lo cel: sia santificat lo vostre sant nom; vinga a nosaltres lo vostre sant regne; façá's, Senyor, la vostra voluntat, així en la terra com se fa en lo cel.

Lo nostre pa de cada dia donau-nos, Senyor, en lo dia d'avui; i perdonau-nos les nostres culpes, així com nosaltres perdonam a nostres deutors; i no permetau que nosaltres caigam en la temptació, ans deslliurau-nos de qualsevol mal. Amén.

*Spanish:* Padre nuestro que estás en los cielos, santificado sea tu nombre. Venga tu reino. Sea hecha tu voluntad, como en el cielo, así también en la tierra.

Danos hoy nuestro pan cotidiano, y perdónanos nuestras deudas, como también nosotros perdonamos a nuestros deudores. Y no nos metas en tentación, mas lábranos del mal: porque tuyo es el reino, y el poder, y la gloria, por todos los siglos. Amén.

*Portuguese:* Padre-nosso, que estais nos céus, santificado seja o vosso nome; venha a nós o vosso reino, seja feita a vossa vontade, assim na terra como no céu.

O pão nosso de cada dia dai-nos hoje. Perdoai-nos, Senhor, as nossas dívidas, assim como nós perdoamos aos nossos devedores. Não nos deixeis, Senhor, cair em tentação, mas livrai-nos de todo o mal. Amen.

### CHARACTERISTICS OF IBERO-ROMANCE

The Romance of the centre and west of the Peninsula is marked by certain characteristics, in which Catalan shares to a much slighter degree. It is remarkably conservative and traditional. These notes are most evident in Portuguese, which has, in many of its particulars, an air of being an archaic condition of Spanish. Innovations have occurred, but at all epochs there has been resistance to neologisms, which have tended to be restricted to the names of things, and so to pass out of the language with the disuse of the thing they imply; or else neologisms have been adjectives confined to specific strata of the language, like poetry or science. The chief centre of novelty in Romania was in Gaul, and frequently the Peninsula owes its innovations to French precedent. The Frankish form taken by many Germanic loan-words is evidence of this. At the same time Peninsular Romance shows a profound instinct for simplification and rationalization. In this respect Castilian is the most characteristic form: diphthongs have become monophthongs, consonant-groups have been simplified, the noun has shed its declensions and the verb its 'strong' conjugations more completely than in other parts of Romania. Transitional forms, it is true, have arisen which were more complicated than their Latin originals. Elimination of unaccented vowels

has left new clumps of consonants, but these have been for the most part ironed smooth again by the genius of the language for simplification. On the other hand, there is a sense of realism and liveliness in the handling of the linguistic material. The verbal paradigm has remained for the sake of expressing in subtle detail all the concomitant circumstances of an activity or state—mood, time, person. Numerous auxiliaries augment the possible moods and tenses. The choice between alternative words and the rich store of diminutives allow the speaker's emotion to play over his whole discourse. Thus the manner of handling common Latin material is what chiefly gives their special character to Spanish, Portuguese and Catalan.

There are interesting archaisms in the latinity of Spain. Traces of pre-classical Latin occur, which may be due to the early subjection of Valencia and Andalusia by Scipio's legions. The adjective *CUIUS -A -UM* Sp. *cuyo* Ptg. *cujo* 'whose' does not occur in Catalan or French (cf. Vergil, *Ecl.* iii, 1: 'Dic mihi, Damoeta, cuium pecus? an Meliboei?'); *cōVA* (CLat. *CAVA*) Sp. *cueva* Ptg. *cova* 'cave' and *VOCARE* (CLat. *VACARE*) Sp. *bogar* Ptg. *vogar* 'row' do not show participation in a change which occurred in Latin itself. Possibly *FACE* (CLat. *FAC*) Sp. *haz* Ptg. *faz* 'do' may be an archaism. In the *Poema de mio Cid* (c. 1140) the classical *CRAS* 'to-morrow' still survived, alongside *mañana*, which is now only used. All three languages retain *SEMPER* Sp. *siempre* Ptg. *sempre* Cat. *sempre* 'always', though Catalan has also *tots temps*, a new formation like the French *toujours* OCat. *tots jorns*. The classical *RES REM* are found: Cat. *no...res* 'nothing at all', Sem Tob's *sabelo toda res* 'all things know that', OSp. OPtg. Cat. *ren* 'thing'. But *CAUSA* is the normal word employed: Sp. Cat. *cosa* Ptg. *cousa* 'thing', cf. Fr. *chose*.

Besides specimens of archaic and Classical Latin retained after they had fallen elsewhere, it has been claimed that the Peninsula shows traces of Italic dialects other than Latin. The name of the city chosen by Sertorius as the capital of an independent Spain, *osca Huesca*, suggests the name of

the Oscans of southern Italy. It happens, also, that this district is the focus of certain peculiarities of pronunciation which run parallel with those of southern Italy as known in classical and modern times. Thus when we compare

	Ptg.	Leon.	Cast.	Arag.	Cat.	Fr.
PALUMBA, COLUMBA 'dove'	<i>pomba</i>	<i>palomba</i>	<i>paloma</i>	<i>paloma</i>	<i>coloma</i>	<i>palombe</i>
LOMBU 'loin'	<i>lombo</i>	<i>lombo</i>	<i>lomo</i>	<i>lomo</i>	<i>llom</i>	<i>lombes</i>

we find Aragonese the centre of a special treatment of **-MB-**, which recalls the misspelling **COMMURERE** for **COMBURERE** on an inscription at Ostia, and the development of **COLUMBULA** in Neapolitan *kolomm̄re*. So **AMBO** gave in OCast. *amos* 'both', of which the modern *ambos* is a latinization. Similarly the treatment of **-ND-** in **UNDA** Cat. Arag. *ona* 'wave', which does not extend to Castilian, resembles the **QUANDO** *quannu* 'when' of southern Italy and the equation between **OPER-ANDAM** and Oscan **UPSANNAM**. More restricted still is the reduction of **-LD-** to *l*. These circumstances have suggested the possibility of an Oscan colonization of this region, modifying the latinity of Spain. But there is as yet no direct evidence of such a colony, and a spontaneous development is by no means impossible. We have, indeed, our vulgar *plummer* for 'plumber', *Lunnon* for 'London' and *chillun* (Negroid) for 'children', without Oscan intervention; and the same may have been true of Aragón and Catalonia.

Nouns of relationship show remarkable changes in the Peninsula, and especially in its centre and west. There has been a general shifting of meaning, and some substitution. 'Father' and 'mother' remain, but in Portuguese affectionate nursery forms are also current, especially for 'mother': *pai māe*. **UXOR** disappears, and **MULIERE** serves for 'wife' as well as 'woman'. **FRATRE** and **SORORE** were ousted by **GERMANU** -*a* 'brother', 'sister', in all three languages: Sp. *hermano* -*a* Ptg. *irmão* -*ã* Cat. *germā* -*ana*. Similarly in all three **NEPOS**, **NEPTIS** (**NEPOTA** on an inscription) shifted from the sense 'nephew' 'niece' to that of 'grandchild': Sp. *nieto* -*a* Ptg. *neto* -*a* Cat. *nét* -*a*. This left an empty category. Spanish and

Portuguese used for the purpose *sobrino* -a 'nephew' 'niece', but Catalan *nebot* *neboda*. Thus SOBRINU and CONSOBRINU were unsuited to express the idea 'cousin' in Spanish and Portuguese (Cat. *costí* -ina Fr. *cousin* -e), and PRIMU (HERMANU) or CONGERMANU were employed: Sp. *primo* (*hermano*) OSp. *cor-mano*. This was the simpler, since PRIMUS did not serve as an ordinal number, where it had yielded to PRIMARIU. 'Uncle' 'aunt' were named by what St Isidore reports as a græcism, THIU -A, perhaps with affectionate good-humour: Sp. Ptg. *tío* *tía* (cf. It. *zio* *zia*), but Cat. *oncle* *tia* Fr. *oncle* *tante*.

Certain domestic objects are liable to change nomenclature, often for humorous and deprecatory reasons. This refers to parts of the body, the serviceable animals, and the house and house-work. For 'heart', COR OSp. *cuer* Cat. *cor* has given way to \*CORATIONE Sp. *corazón* Ptg. *coração*. For 'head', CAPU(T) survives in Cat. *cap*, but in Sp. Ptg. *cab* 'cape, end, corporal' Sp. *cabe* 'near' it survives in transferred and metaphorical senses only. The deprecatory \*CAPITIA has been preferred (OSp. Ptg. *cabeça* MSp. *cabeza*), but these languages have not indulged in humorous metaphor like French and Italian, which use TESTA 'potsherd' It. *testa* Fr. *tête*, from which the OSp. *testa* is a loan-word used in literature. ROSTRU 'beak' has been, as it were, ennobled to mean 'face': Sp. *rostro* Ptg. *rosto*; BARBA 'beard' has extended its domain to include not only 'chin' (*barbilla* Fr. *menton*) but also the 'heavy father' of plays, though it has not gone so far as to supplant the general terms for 'man' 'husband', like Rum. *bărbat*. The 'eye' remains OCULU Sp. *ojo* Ptg. *olho* Cat. *ull*; but the 'ear' is the 'little ear', AURICULA Sp. *oreja* Ptg. *orelha* Cat. *orella* Fr. *oreille*. As for the limbs, the 'right' arm and hand are indicated by DEXTERA and DIRECTA; the 'left' is ill-omened and more liable to change. LAEVU does not survive; SINISTRU persisted as Sp. *siniestro* Ptg. *sestro* Cat. *sinistre*, but it has been avoided in general use by the employment of a Basque loan-word B. *ezker* Sp. *izquierdo* Ptg. *esquierdo* Cat. *esquerre*. For 'leg' the humorous equivalent 'ham' has been employed: PERNA Sp. *pierna* Ptg. *perna*. Catalan, like French,

has preferred Gk. *kampé* CAMBA GAMBA (if this be not Celtic, Cat. *cama* Fr. *jambe*).

The domestic animals affected are the horse, dog, cat, bee, and cattle. For 'mare' EQUA persisted in Peninsular Romance (Sp. *yegua* Ptg. *egua* Cat. *euga*) since the word had not suffered serious phonetic loss like OFr. *ive*, for which MFr. substitutes JUMENTU *jument*. The 'horse', however, encouraged distinctions. In general use EQUU gave place to the popular CABALLU Sp. *caballo* Ptg. *cavalo* Cat. *cavall*. Where horses are bred, as in Spanish America, the use of *caballo* is rare, but some more specific reference to the animal, for instance its colour, is customary. For 'mule' as well as MULA there came into use MASCULU Sp. *macho*. A general word for cattle was adopted after the Moslem irruption: Ar. *rās* 'head' Sp. Ptg. *res* 'head of cattle'; but the Germanic *ganar* 'win', applied particularly to cattle-lifting and cattle-breeding, gave Sp. *ganado* Ptg. *gado* 'herd'. OVE 'sheep' gave way to OVICULA Sp. *oveja* Ptg. *ovelha* Cat. *ovella*, with a new Spanish masculine *carnero* 'ram'. Similarly APE 'bee' was replaced by APICULA Sp. *abeja* Ptg. *abelha* Cat. *abella*. The motive may have been a desire to avoid a monosyllable, though AVE 'bird' has survived alongside PASSERE Sp. *pájaro* Ptg. *pássaro* and AVICELLU Cat. *ocell*, at least for poetical purposes. FELI 'cat' was replaced by CATTU, of uncertain origin: Sp. Ptg. *gato* Cat. *gat*. For 'dog' CANE remained in Sp. *can* Ptg. *cão* Cat. *cà*, but has yielded for general purposes in Spanish to *perro*.

In the house we notice the disappearance of DOMU, which survives only in the compounds Sp. *mayordomo* Ptg. *mordomo* Cat. *majordom* 'steward, superintendent'. Otherwise it has given way to CASA Sp. Ptg. Cat. *casa*, and the latter has further tended to become an enclitic (*cas ca*) in vulgar Spanish, in the sense of 'at the house of': *ca cura* 'at the priest's house'. The tendency has not been carried through, as in Fr. *chez*, so as to require the creation of yet another term for house. Fr. *maison*, when borrowed, took the sense of 'inn' Sp. *mesón*. The 'estate' round the house consisted of tasks that had to be performed, FACIENDA Sp. *hacienda*

Ptg. *fazenda*; and from that beginning we have *hacienda* meaning 'estate' 'house on the estate' 'farm', and also 'national estate, exchequer'. These 'things to be done' implied, for men, agriculture; hence the specialization of LABORARE to farm-work in *labrar labranza labrador*. For women, however, *labor* is 'needle-work'. As to the things of the house, Sp. Ptg. *cama* 'bed' is more usual than LECTU Sp. *lecho* Ptg. *leito*, which Catalan and French prefer: Cat. *llit* Fr. *lit*. The 'door' appears as *OSTIU ugo* (in the *Poema de mio Cid*), but otherwise is PORTA Sp. *puerta* Ptg. Cat. *porta*. The idea of 'window' is more variable. Spanish prefers *ventana* 'wind-hole', since in hot countries air is more welcome than light, and Portuguese has *janela* 'little door'; but FENESTRA gave OSp. *hiniestra* Ptg. *fresta* Cat. *finestra*. The words for 'road' are numerous: Ptg. *rua* Cast. *calle* Cat. *carrer*, as well as *camino calzada carretera*, etc.

The Peninsula preferred to retain DIES 'day' in the form DIA Sp. Ptg. Cat. *dia*. Catalan also has DIURNU *jorn*, for literary purposes (cf. Fr. *jour* It. *giorno*). For POMA 'apple' Cat. *poma* Fr. *pomme*, the name of a specific brand was preferred: POMA MATTIANA Sp. *manzana* Ptg. *maçã*. To express the idea 'small' the word PARVU was deemed inadequate, though it survives in Ptg. *parvo* 'simpleton', and as a learned word in Spanish. A root \*PIK or \*PIT may have seemed sound-symbolic of the idea, and led to the \*PICCUINNU of Sp. *pequeño* Ptg. *pequeno*, as well as the \*PETTITTUS of Fr. Prov. Cat. *petit*.

The labour of selection occurred also among well-known verbs, and helped still further to characterize the Peninsular lexicon, and particularly that of Ibero-Romance. For 'wish' VELLE disappeared, \*VOLERE gave Fr. *vouloir* Cat. *voler*, but is found in Spanish only in fixed phrases of the old language such as OSp. *si vuel que*. In Ibero-Romance its place was taken by QUAERERE 'seek' Sp. Ptg. *querer*, which also acquired the sense of 'love' and that of immediate futurity: *Tan malo está don Tristán que a Dios quiere dar el alma* 'Sir Tristram is so ill that he is on the point of giving his soul to God.' 'To

take' is Sp. Ptg. *tomar*, Fr. Cat. *p(r)endre* from PREHENDERE. 'To look at' is 'to take with the eyes' CAPTARE OCULIS OSp. *catar*, and then 'to wonder at' MIRARI MSp. *mirar*. Though EDERE 'to eat' is lost, COMEDERE survives on Spanish soil as Sp. Ptg. *comer*; Cat. *menjar* Fr. *manger* is from MANDUCARE 'to masticate', which has given Sp. *manjares* 'victuals'. OCCIDERE 'kill' remains in OCat. *occir*; Sp. Ptg. *matar* is a generalization of MACTARE 'to slay a victim', perhaps under the suggestion of Ar. *máta* 'he has died', Sp. Ptg. *mate*. In addition to DICERE Sp. *decir* Ptg. *dizer* Cat. *dir* 'to say', Ibero-Romance has preferred FABULARE to the Gallo-Romance PARABOLARE in the sense 'to speak': Sp. *hablar* Ptg. *falar*, Fr. *parler* Cat. *parlar*. A depreciative meaning is associated with the borrowed term: Sp. *parlar* 'to chatter' Fr. *hâbler* 'to brag'. IRE 'to go' was eked out in its paradigm by VADERE and AMBITARE, and in the past tenses by the stem FU-. 'To find' is in Ibero-Romance 'to breathe on, snuff out (a rabbit?)' AFFLARE Sp. *hallar* Ptg. *achar*; but in Gallo-Romance 'to invent tropes' \*TROPARE Fr. *trouver* Cat. *trobar*. The latter was used in Spain and Portugal of poetical invention: *trobar* 'to make verses', *trobas* 'songs, verses'. *Trobador* 'poet' displaced at court the older *juglar*, and was itself ousted in the early fifteenth century by the Italianate *poeta*, as implying a higher conception of art.

ILLE has given the article to all the Peninsular languages, but in the notarial documents of the early Middle Ages we find IPSE used undemonstratively, like an article. In the Catalan area its use was considerable, and rivalled that of ILLE, and in the Balearic Islands it has gained the upper hand. A demonstrative was obtained from ILLE by employing the demonstrative prefix \*ACCU- (preferred in the Peninsular to the ECCU- of French and Italian): *aquel* 'that'. Peninsular Romance maintains with precision the three spatial indications of Latin HIC ISTE ILLE ('this by me' 'that by you' 'that by someone else'). HIC, however, disappeared, save in *aqui* \*ACCU-HIC 'here by me', and set phrases like *agora HAC HORA* 'now' *hogaño HOC ANNO* 'this year' *pero PER HOC* 'but'. The

place of *HIC* was taken by *ISTE*; that of *ISTE* by *IPSE*; and the series came to run *este ese aquel*, with the variants *aqueste aquese* in old and classical Spanish (Cat. *aquest aqueix aquell*). The same personal relations were imported into adverbs of place 'in which' (*aquí ahí allí*), and less perfectly into place 'towards which' (*acá...allá*). Among other particles we may instance *TAM MAGNU* Sp. *tamaño* Ptg. *tamanho* 'size'; *PER PRO* merged into a single preposition Sp. Ptg. *por* (Cat. *per* OPtg. *per* and *por*), and from this the creation of *para para*. The system of conjunctions and prepositions in Peninsular Romance is simple. They are rarely combined in pairs, and never in longer groups, like It. *acciochè* 'to the end that'. As the sign of the comparative all three languages use *MAGIS* Sp. *más* Ptg. *mais* Cat. *més* 'more' (PLUS Fr. *plus* It. *più*). Old Portuguese had *chus*, and medieval Catalan preferred *pus*.

In dealing with the forms of words inherited from Latin (declensions and conjugations) the Peninsular languages display simplifying and rationalizing tendencies. Indication of number is reduced to a common formula *S. - Pl. (e)s*. This was easier since the neuter declensions had been distributed among the other two genders, the singular to the masculine (which became the common gender in consequence), and the plurals in *-A* to the collective feminine: *LIGNU LIGNA* Sp. *leño* 'faggot' *leña* 'wood'. Declensions of the type *TEMPUS*, *TEMPORA* disappeared: Sp. *tiempo(s)*. In a few cases this neuter singular was construed as a plural: OSp. *huebos* OSp. *pechos* PECTUS Cat. *temps* TEMPUS. At the same time the case-system was reduced to the accusative alone: *-o -os -a -as*. Traces of the nominative occur in *DEUS* Sp. *Dios* Ptg. *Deus* (but Jewish *el Dio DEUM*) 'God', Ptg. *demo*, *Marcos Carlos Oliveros*, etc. A vocative occurs in OSp. *Santiague SANCTE JACOBE*, and genitives in the days of the week *JOVIS* Sp. *jueves MARTIS* Sp. *martes VENERIS* Sp. *viernes* (and so *lunes miércoles* from *LUNAE MERCURII + -es*). Relics of the ablative are *hogaño* 'this year', *agora* 'now'.

The verbal paradigm was much simplified. Almost all 'strong' past participles have disappeared, save for *visto dicho*

*hecho* 'seen' 'said' 'done'. A few survive as adjectives: *bienquisto* 'well-liked', but *querido* (past participle of *querer*). Of the regular past participles, those in -UTU played a part in medieval Spanish, but have been restricted since to adjectival use. The future participle in -URU, the present in -NTE and the gerundives have also been eliminated, to the sole profit of the gerund -NDO. They remain only among adjectives: *furto amante tremebundo* 'future' 'loving' 'frightful'. 'Strong' preterites have also been vastly reduced, in contrast with their survival in French and Italian, and the forms even of 'irregular' verbs are surprisingly regular. The conjugation in -ERE disappeared in Spanish and Portuguese, to the profit of -ERE, and the latter tended to pass into -IRE. The paradigms in -er -ir show only half a dozen divergent forms. The passive was lost, as in all Romance; but Spanish and Portuguese have shown particular reluctance to readmit the passive, preferring to give the reflexive forms in *se* an extended use covering both middle and passive purposes. The future and conditional tenses are compounds of the infinitive + HABEO. Spanish and Portuguese, however, have retained the Latin pluperfect indicative, in both indicative and conditional senses.

On the other hand, a great development of auxiliaries has vastly increased the subtlety of the verb. 'To have' and 'to be' have each two forms: HABERE TENERE, ESSE (SEDERE) STARE, to which the Portuguese add *ficar*. For each of these auxiliaries there are synonyms: Sp. *quedar llevar resultar venir* etc., and even *amanecer anochecer* 'to break (of day)' 'to fall (of night)', which give such odd results as *amaneció muerto* 'he dawned dead', 'he was dead at dawn'. Verbs of motion are used freely as auxiliaries, as *voy a decir* 'I am about to say'; but OSp. *fué a dar* Cat. *va donar* are preterites. *Acabar de* is 'to have just done'; *volver a* OSp. *tornar a* 'to do again'.

CAUSES OF THE DIFFERENTIATION OF  
THE PENINSULAR LANGUAGES

Ingenious theories have arisen to account for the changes which occur everywhere in human speech, and no one of them can be deemed wholly to cover the facts. The sources of disintegration are doubtless many, and their mode of operation complex. The phenomena to be explained are so numerous, but the changes which we can personally witness are so few, that we can scarcely avoid generalizing on a basis of insufficient experience. The emergence of differences within the Peninsula has been variously explained, and usually on the basis of a formula too simple for the facts. We shall consider all these partial causes as contributory, though in unsettled proportions, to the total effect.

The most abstract and general cause to be alleged is the effect of time and space. In course of time human speech acquires new characteristics, no matter what effort is made to keep it constant; and over wide areas a language begins to vary. But the effect of time and space is not mathematically constant. Education may counteract dispersion by maintaining a standard and restoring 'correct' forms. Thus the Spanish of America, after showing signs of diverging from European Spanish and setting up a new speech-family in the New World, now appears to be converging on the standard tongue, thanks to the educative influence of grammars, education, literature and travel. What causes diversity in the Peninsula in respect of space is the fact that it is seamed with mountain ranges which break up its surface into regions and *patrias chicas*; these are self-centred and, huddling each round its nucleus, they offer facilities for local divergences whenever other circumstances permit. Similarly, the languages have remained almost constant over considerable periods of time, so that, for instance, to read a thirteenth-century work in Spanish does not require a special grammatical training; but there are other epochs in which change works rapidly, as in the sixteenth century.

That change is due to imperfect imitation of an older generation by a younger has been averred. The alleged reason is too abstract. Generations are not marked off in this rigid fashion, but exist coetaneously. Many an uncle has a nephew of his own age. It is not certain that imitation is imperfect, nor that change is an imperfection. On the contrary, we make deliberate changes with some idea of betterment. In time of war there is a rapid coining of new words or borrowing of loan-words thanks to rapid and violent successions of new experiences. Such were the Hindustani terms that gained some vogue in English during the late War, and the Italian military terms that invaded Spanish during the Golden Age. Indeed, one notices that it is the languages which have the most active intellectual background (English, French, Chinese) that show the most rapid changes—evidence that phonetic alteration is not solely due to imperfection.

The substratum-theory of change is similarly insufficient to account for the facts and is excessively abstract. In this case it is supposed that when a nation or tribe acquires a new language—and specifically when the Iberians acquired Latin—they learn it with the imperfect articulation of adults, and perpetuate old prejudices of pronunciation, vocabulary and syntax, in the new medium. From what has gone before, it will be apparent to the reader that we are unable to say with certainty what were the linguistic prejudices of an Iberian, nor can we be definite as to the proportion of Iberians among the total population of the Peninsula. The same is true of the Celts, for even those of Gaul are not adequately known. The substratum-theory has flourished abundantly where the substratum is virtually unknown. In the Spanish of America we have plenty of evidence as to the kind of Spanish implanted and the preferences of many different substrata; but we shall see that their influence is restricted, diminishing, and less effective than that of an external language like French. The notion is too abstract: a tribe does not go to school *en bloc* but as individuals, of different ages and at different times. The errors of adult speakers are not

those of younger learners, nor are they maintained longer than the duration of the speaker's unawareness of error. Both old and young are subjected to the pressure of education, seeking to impose the normal standards. Only under special circumstances will tribal prejudices be permitted to survive. Communication with the centres of the acquired culture may be severed or difficult, the influence of education neutralized through poverty or barbarism, or some peculiarity may, through military or feudal prestige, become a shibboleth. Any or all of these conditions may have combined with Basque origin to supplant in Cantabria the Latin *f*; Castilian prestige carried the Cantabrian *h* over all the Spanish-speaking world.

The tribal boundaries may have a secondary importance for language when they have perpetuated themselves in later organization. Though imperfectly recognized by the Romans, there is not infrequently an agreement between the tribal frontier, the *diacesis* and *provincia*, and the medieval bishoprics, which maintains old units. Each such division has its capital or nucleus, and the latter operates the more powerfully in conservation and innovation the longer it stands undisturbed. Hence the importance of bishoprics in determining varieties of Romance: that of Elne which maintained the frontier of Catalan in Roussillon against Narbonne, or that of Astorga which is the bulwark of western Leonese, and thanks to inclusion in it the Portuguese town of Mirando do Douro is Spanish-speaking. The frontiers of kingdoms are often due to more arbitrary causes, and fail to coincide with linguistic boundaries.

That the circumstances of romanization must have exerted a powerful formative influence on the later languages is certain, but hard to make precise in detail. We have so little knowledge of those circumstances, nor do we see the changes actually taking place. The roads of the Empire played their part. They carried speakers of Latin from town to town, imposed some measure of Latinity on the travelling community, and so laid down a band of Latin speech. Thus the

great road from Tarragona to the Ebro, via Lérida and Huesca, is a main cause of the romanization of Aragón, and drove Basque into the hills. The dates of the arrival and of the departure of the legions were both, doubtless, significant. Thanks to their very early arrival in Spain (207 B.C.) they probably implanted in Spanish Latin those Plautine words (*CURUS COVA VOCARE*, etc.) which were not carried to Gaul by Cæsar. Remoteness from Rome, and a certain cultural semi-independence in Bætica prevented their being obliterated when the fashion changed at the capital. But the early arrival of the legions explains only a tiny fraction of Spanish Latinity. The language as a whole was the *koiné* of the Empire, and of date much later than Scipio Africanus. As for the departure of the legions, this broke up the formal unity of the Empire in the fifth century, and made communication more difficult. Isolation set in for the ancestors of the Rumanians and the Sardinians. But in Spain the break-up of the Empire was less felt. The Visigothic kings aped the style of regents for the Empire. They had extensive interests in France, and family connections with northern Italy. A Visigothic king defended civilization against Attila at Châlons. The Spanish church kept up the Roman connection with especial fervour, as a protest against the Arianism of their rulers; and traders continued to move internationally. Isolation set in for Spain only with the Arab-Berber conquest of A.D. 711, which enclosed the Christians of the south (Mozarabs) within a Moslem state at war with Christendom, and so led to the stagnation of Southern Romance. It reduced the north to beggary and fragmentary resistance, loosened cultural control, and confided the survival of Christianity to a number of petty nuclei.

It has been supposed that the incoming Romans brought not always the standard Latin of literary circles. Some were doubtless Oscans or Umbrians. The name of *Huesca* (*osca*) and its prominence as a quondam capital of Spain tempts the theory that in Huesca there was a focus of Oscan colonization. The linguistic evidence (solution of *MB* as *m*, *ND* as *n*, etc.)

has already been mentioned; but the premisses of this argument are insecure. Again, it has been ingeniously suggested that Catalonia was a peaceful province, like Narbonese Gaul, especially suited for the settlement of discharged legionaries. These *coloni* would bring with them the debased Latin of the camps, and consequently the Latin of Catalonia would contain within it more seeds of change than that of Spain. Spanish and Portuguese Latin, on the other hand, may have been acquired primarily under the influence of the great rhetorical schools of Baetica. This Latin was PINGUIS 'ornate' in the opinion of some Italians, but with the Senecas and Lucan it set a new fashion in the capital. It was the medium of an urban aristocracy who may have lived as a small minority among non-Latin rustics and plebeians for an unspecified period of the duration of the Empire. The Cantabrians, at least, were only pacified under Augustus, but not actually subdued by either Rome or the later Visigoths; and they may have preserved their linguistic independence also. When at last the Spanish masses were romanized, therefore, the Latin they learned would still have the grammatical structure and conservative vocabulary of the schoolmasters. In a similar fashion, the Spanish of America is most conservative where it is the speech of an aristocratic minority living among non-Spanish masses, as in Mexico and Peru; it is most altered where it is a general tongue, as in Chile and the Argentine.

The conditions of the Reconquest further advanced the disintegration of the Peninsular tongues. Catalan does not owe its existence to the Carolingian *Marca Hispanica*, in the sense of being a Gallo-Romance dialect that has been implanted in the Peninsula. South of the Corbières, it was still Peninsular, and its peculiarities may go back to the sixth century in essentials. But the fact that independence in the north-east was due to French influence, undoubtedly accentuated all that Catalan had in common with Provençal and Languedocian, just as the final severance of the connection in 1213 led on to an accentuation of Peninsular elements.

Similarly the oscillation of the northern centre of gravity, from Santiago and Oviedo to Castile, gave prestige now to one, now to another, form of Northern Spanish. The innovations affecting PL- CL- FL- spread as far as Castile under the early hegemony of León, but those affecting -L- -N- between vowels affected only Portuguese as well as Galician. When the later change was commenced, Castile was already beginning to impose Castilian dialectalisms on eastern León. The Moorish rush failed to dislodge the inhabitants of the north, with the result that a continuous linguistic band runs from Galicia to Catalonia under the shadow of the mountains. There we find only band-frontiers, where one speech slowly takes on the characteristics of another. But territory that had to be reconquered from the Moors and settled, after devastation, from the north (*poblar*) has much more precise linguistic features, and is definitely either Galician-Portuguese or Leonese-Castilian-Aragonese or Catalan. From the Duero and from Tamarite southwards, therefore, the various criteria of division gather together in the form of line-frontiers, with no intermediate dialects.

The history of the separate states has induced further modifications in their languages, and deepened their differences. The great changes wrought in Spanish in the sixteenth century were forwarded by the importance of the Castilian capitals for Spain, but in Portugal the older common Peninsular phonetics continued. Portuguese and Spanish in the New World acquire further differences in their lexicon by borrowing from different aboriginal tribes. The style of Camões in Portugal and those of Cervantes and Calderón have established for the two kindred languages slightly different standards of elegance. In respect of the most recent technical borrowings, the Brazilian or the Argentine has not always obtained the article and its name from the same source as the Portuguese or the Spaniard. Liability to vary persists, but it is under the control of tradition, corrected by education, and rejected in favour of the *koiné* by commerce, and communication. Where these corrections were lacking,

as in the days of Moslem domination, the tendency to innovate worked with little to check it, and linguistic landslides broke up the unity of Ibero-Romance.

See especially H. Meier, *Beiträge zur sprachlichen Gliederung der Pyrenäenhalbinsel* (Hamburg, 1930).

### THE GERMANIC ELEMENT IN PENINSULAR ROMANCE

Of the Germanic tribes one of the earliest to be set in movement, and the most glorious in its achievements, was that of the Goths, the western branch of which—the Visigoths—began to interfere in Spain from the year A.D. 412, under Ataulf, Alaric's successor. Their power was centred in Provence, while the Peninsula was under the disorderly control of the Swabians, Alans and Vandals who had poured over the frontier in the year A.D. 407. They were western Germans, whereas the Goths were easterners; their leader was a certain Radagaisus. The Vandals pressed on into the rich lands of the Bætis valley, and then took ship for Africa. There they devastated the Roman provinces of Mauritania, Tingitana and Africa, and, under Gaiseric, took Rome itself; but their power was weakened by Justinian's generals and obliterated by the Berbers and Arabs in the seventh century. The Alans played little part in the building up of modern Spain. The Swabians concentrated in the north-west, and were there subjected to the increasing pressure of the Visigothic power, to be subdued by the long and bitter war from A.D. 456–470. Apart from these invaders, German influence had long been exerted through the important camps maintained on the Rhine and Danube frontiers, and through the Germans enrolled in the legions.

Traces of the invaders are not numerous. The Vandals are probably remembered by the name of the province of Andalucía, the *Al-Andalus* of the Moslem historians. The loss of initial *w-* is perplexing, as the sound and letter exist in Arabic. Dozy suggested that the Vandals embarked for

Africa at Tarifa, which may have been known for a time as **PORTUS WANDALORUM** on their account, until it was renamed in honour of the invader Tarifa (A.D. 710): from Tarifa the name spread over the adjacent lands until it came to replace the ancient **BÆTICA**. *Andalies*, near Huesca, may also commemorate the Vandals. The name of the Alans remains in *Puerto del Alano* (Huesca), *Villalán* (Valladolid), and perhaps *Catalonia* (Goth-Alan-ia). The name of the Swabians is met often in the north-west, where also we find the name of the Goths and even of the Romans in place-names. This circumstance suggests that we have not to do with the Swabian kingdom of the fifth century so much as with the period of intensive colonization in the eighth, caused by the displacement of the Germans from the south and centre. So *Suevos* occurs four times in *Coruña*, *Suegos* in *Lugo*, *Puerto de Sueve* in *Oviedo*; and the element *Sab-*, *Sav-* or *Jab-* is found in *Agro de Savili*, *Sabín*, *Sabegode*, *Villasabariego*, *Jabariz*, *Jabalde*, *Saboy*, etc. Such names run parallel in Galicia, north Portugal and the north-west generally, with **GOTHI GOTHA GOTHONES**, etc., in village names like *Goda*, *La Goda* (near Barcelona), *Gudín*, *Gude*, *Godos*, *Gotones*. Sometimes the name of the chief who established the community is preserved, and we hear of *Baldus*, *Bertrand*, *Aiza*, *Andulf*, *Adalsind*, *Nandus* and others: *Villabalde* (Lugo), *Vilabertran* (Gerona), *Villeza* (León), *Castro Adalsindo* (Lérida), *Casaldoufe* (Viana do Castelo), *Casanande* (Coruña). Purely Germanic names are not common, e.g. those in *-ing* so frequent in England and southwest France: *Soenga(s)* in north Portugal depends on *Suninga*, with the termination already romanized; *Villa Albarenga* also occurs. Generally the names show Latin common nouns, as *villa*, *casa*, Latin case endings as *Casale Andulfi Casaldoufe*, **VILLA IN CAMPOS GOTORUM Villatoro**; or Romance cases as **VILLA DE \*AGIZA Villeza**, *Casal da dos Godeis*, or Romance derivatives as *Godinho*, *Godinhaços*. They therefore do not indicate a lively interest in the German dialects, but rather that the memory of caste outlived the language. Gothic customs remained the mark of the military caste as late as the *Poema*

*del Cid* (1140) and even later, while the name persisted in such phrases as *sangre de los godos*, *alcurnia goda* as the equivalents for our 'Norman blood', and in the ironical *los godos* applied by the American revolutionaries to the royalist troops in 1810-26.

Common nouns bearing dialectal marks are rare. Gal. *lobio* 'low vine', Gal. *laverca* 'lark', and OPtg. *trigar* 'hasten' are given as survivals of Swabian *\*laubja*, *\*láwerka*, *\*thrihan*. Gothic possessed but three vowels (*a i u*), but this system of vocalization is not characteristic of Germanic words in the Peninsular languages, apart from personal names: *Ramiro RANIMIRUS*, *Fernando FRÍTHUNANDUS*, *Elvira GAILIVIRÔ*, *Fruela Gondomil* (-MIR 'more'), *Gondómar* (-MARTH 'horse'), *Alfonso ILDIFUNSUS*, etc. (in which the *e* and *o* vowels are Romanic). With these names there came into Spanish the Gothic suffix *-ila*, and the declension in *-n*: *Cintila*, *Cintillán*. Spanish names of men are, in fact, either Gothic or names of saints; those of women normally in modern times invocations of the Virgin. The Gothic legal code contains a few Gothic terms: a *gardingus* (a high domestic officer in the palace), an *astualdus* (given as a gloss for the same), a *comes scanciarum* 'escanciador', and a *thiufadus* or 'millenarius, commander of a thousand' (showing a confusion between *thusundi-* and *thiu-* 'slave'). The terminology of the Laws, however, is markedly Latin.

Generally speaking the Germanic element in the Peninsular languages consists either of German words older than the dialectal divisions in Germany, which had been borrowed by the camps and traders of the Empire, or else technical terms of war and chivalry borrowed from the French, and with Frankish features. War takes a prominent place in this vocabulary: *guerra* 'war' and its derivatives; *Burgos Burgo de Osma* 'small city', with the masculine gender of Gk. *πύργος* 'tower'; *tregua* 'truce'; *yelmo* 'helm'; *espuela* 'spur', *espolon(ada)* 'spur', 'spurring, raid'; *banda* 'band'; *robar* 'sack, rob'; *rapar* 'shave, plunder'. OSp. Ptg. *elmo* represents the Gothic *hilms*, while MSp. *yelmo* corresponds to Fr. *hiaume* Frankish *hēlm* (*ē* from *ī*, but *ē*, *ie* from *ɛ*); in Spanish the Frankish

form has driven out the Visigothic, which remains in Portuguese. A legal term is the Sp. Ptg. *lastar* 'pay'. Ptg. *estala* 'stable, stall', Sp. Ptg. Cat. *estaca* 'stake', and possibly Sp. Ptg. Cat. *parra* 'vine' (if it be not Basque nor Celtic), describe the humble Germanic house in contrast with Roman architecture; and Sp. *rueca*, Ptg. Cat. *roca* 'distaff, rock' and Sp. *huesa* OPtg. *osa* 'hose' allude to its handicrafts. Sp. *rueca* implies an open *q*, but *\*rukka* would give a closed *q* (Sp. *\*roca*). On the other hand Vulgar Latin *\*rökka* 'rock' gives Sp. *roca* where we should expect *\*rueca*. It is probable, then, that *\*rukka* and *\*rökka* interfered with each other's development.

Affective words indicating shades of appreciation are also prominent in the Germanic element of Spanish and its sister-languages. Sp. Ptg. *bramar* 'bawl'; Sp. *orgullo*, Ptg. *orgulho*, Cat. *orgull* 'pride' derive from the Frankish *\*orgōli*; OSp. *fonta* (*Cid*) 'shame, dishonour' represents by *f-* the French initial aspirate of *honte* Frankish *haunitha*; in addition to the Lat. TRADITIONE Sp. *traición* 'treason (as such)' need was felt for a word connoting its reproach, *\*at-leweins*, Ptg. *aleive*, *\*at-lēweis*, Sp. *aleve* 'treacherous' (whence *alevoso*, *alevoscia*). Similarly the word Sp. Ptg. *rico*, Cat. *ric* 'wealthy' belongs to the order of chivalrous ideas, and has been borrowed through Prov. *ric*. In the line of the *Cid*

creciendo ua en riqueza myo Çid el de Biuar  
'my Cid was growing richer',

the context refers not merely to his booty, but also to his followers; and in Don Juan Manuel's *Conde Lucanor* wealth is considered as the means of rewarding and holding together a body of adherents, and so of resisting aggression or taking up the offensive against one's rivals. Words of colour are subject to change as the speaker seeks to express the shades more precisely. Sp. *blanco* Ptg. *branco* 'white', *bruno* (from It. *bruno*, and this from Fr. *brun*), *blondo*, Cat. *blau* 'blue', are of this order.

Gothic has supplied the suffix *-ila* and the declension *-a -ane*,

as OSp. *Wamba Wambán*. Other suffixes are *-engo*, as *abadengo* 'abbatial', *realengo* 'royal patrimony'; *-aldo* in *heraldo* 'herald' (*faraute* being obtained from French); *-ardo* in *gallardo* 'high-spirited', *bastardo* 'bastard'. The common noun *guisa* 'way, wise', employed with feminine adjectives, e.g. *fiera guisa*, rivalled the use of *mente* (*fiera mientre*) in medieval Spanish as a means for expressing adverbs of manner. The alternative has been rejected in classical and modern Spanish and Portuguese, and the word survives in *guisar* 'cook'. There has been no syntactical influence of German on Spanish, Portuguese or Catalan. Cases of coincidence between Latin and Germanic forms are Sp. Ptg. Cat. *gastar* from Lat. *VASTARE* with the initial of *wost-*; Sp. *compañón*, Cat. *companyó*, OPtg. *companhão*, and kindred words, springs from *CUM - PANE* modelled on *ga-hlaibs* 'companion, sharer of bread'. Another such social term is Sp. (*a*)*gasajar*, Ptg. *agasarhar* 'welcome, entertain', Goth. *gasalha*. Sp. *avispa* 'wasp' from Lat. *VESPA* does not show the influence of Ger. *wespa* as in Fr. *guêpe*.

See especially G. Sachs, *Die germanischen Ortsnamen in Spanien und Portugal* (Jena, 1932) and E. Gamillscheg, 'Historia lingüística de los visigodos', *Rev. Fil. Esp.* xix, as well as more generally his *Romania Germanica* (Berlin, 1934).

## CHAPTER IV

### CATALAN

On developing into Romance, the Latin spoken in the Spanish Peninsula shows two principal fissures, which mark off from Spanish the Catalan and Portuguese languages. The deeper of these clefts is that which separates Catalan from Spanish by characteristics which are mostly held in common between the latter and Portuguese; and thus the question arises whether this language can be considered a part of Iberian Romance. It shows a marked resemblance to the dialects of Provence and Languedoc, so that speakers are still mutually intelligible; and during the first two centuries of Catalan literature *lemosí*, an adaptation of Provençal, served as the dialect of poetry. Three views have been held by scholars: that Catalan is a form of Gallo-Romance—a prolongation of Provençal; that Catalan is a form of Ibero-Romance; and that Catalan is an independent language.

For the term 'language' it is scarcely possible to offer a purely philological definition. A language is the expression of a community which enjoys a culture with some pretension to permanence. Even a dialect is wont to show a geographical centre of radiation and to be associated with some social organism; but a dialect is, at the same time, in evident dependence on some greater linguistic centre. The characteristic mark of a language is its equipoise with reference to a cultural centre; and when this test is applied, Catalan is evidently a language. Its capital is Barcelona. At Barcelona, during the Middle Ages, kings of Aragón who were counts of Barcelona established their chanceries and ruled over a Mediterranean empire; they regulated the national speech, which became also the mouthpiece of an interesting literature, both in prose and verse. This literature, and the society which it expressed, stood apart from both Provence and

Castile, and has qualities not to be found in either of its neighbours. Even when eclipsed in the sixteenth century, the language continued as the mother-tongue of Catalans and as the vehicle of religious instruction. Barcelona was always a provincial, and sometimes a rebel, capital. The literature of Catalonia revived in the nineteenth century, at first to express regional, then later national and autonomous, aspirations. On social and historical grounds there can be no doubt that Catalan is an independent language, a sister to Spanish, Provençal or Italian.

### CATALAN AND ITS NEIGHBOURS

To compare this speech with its neighbours two methods have been employed: a comparison of the languages as wholes, and a study of conditions at the linguistic frontier. Both methods are instructive. The former gives total resemblance and difference as judged at the linguistic centre; the latter tells us what is the nature of their separation.

When Catalan is compared with Spanish and Provençal, however, it is necessary to proceed with caution. Neither medieval nor modern Provençal has been so unified as to permit comparison with literary Catalan, and it is necessary to make sure that a term cited as Provençal is widely used in Provence and also belongs to a date corresponding to the Catalan to which it is compared. Besides, Provençal does not stand alone to represent Gallo-Romance, and the evidence of French must be invoked, before we can so classify Catalan. For instance, Catalan and Provençal differ from Spanish in that tonic ē ò remain monophthongs, as PEDE Cat. *peu* Prov. *pe* 'foot', MOLA Cat. Prov. *mola* 'molar', for which Spanish has *pie muela*. But here French has *pied meule* and Portuguese *pé mó*. It follows that the treatment of these short vowels is not one of the *differentiae* between Gallo- and Ibero-Romance. Within the Peninsula, on the other hand, we shall have reason to note that Castilian, which has become the literary language, differs in many important respects

from the ancient Spanish *koiné*, and is to that extent not capable of representing Ibero-Romance. Nothing so characterizes modern Spanish as the development of *F* to *h*, so that we may oppose Sp. *hormiga* Cat. Prov. *formiga* 'ant'. But the Spanish *koiné* employed *f*, which is still to be found in western Leonese and in Aragonese, as well as in Portuguese and Galician; so that for comparison with Catalan we should use not *hormiga* but OSp. *formiga*. This *koiné* is represented to some extent by non-Castilian forms which continue to be used in medieval documents, but more often it must be discovered by comparing Leonese, Aragonese and the relics of the Mozarabic dialect of Al-Andalus; and when it is used for comparison with Catalan, the differences become fewer between the two languages. It is essential to remember also that the *koiné* was never systematized by a literary tradition, and consequently to pay due attention to Aragonese variants on the common pattern. When this is done, we find that Spanish glides through Aragonese almost imperceptibly into western Catalan. On the side of Provence, the Gascon dialect also demands notice, since it is a neighbour of Catalan and is actually spoken on Spanish soil, in the Vall d'Aran in the vicinity of Viella. In this region, to recur to the treatment of *F*, we find *urmiga* 'ant', not Prov. *formiga*.

If we compare Spanish with Catalan we are at once aware of a difference in the form and accentuation of words. Catalan is more abrupt. Both languages share the strong tendency of Western Romance to eliminate unaccented vowels which fall between one accented syllable and another, but Catalan has carried through the change more thoroughly than Castilian, and in this respect coincides with the tendencies of French and Provençal. It still retains, however, a considerable number of proparoxytones like *llàgrima rònega mànega* 'tear' 'rough' 'sleeve'; and in certain cases, where a final *-o* has been lost, we find trochees like *espàrrec orfe cà nem* 'asparagus' 'orphan' 'hemp' which correspond with the Sp. *espárrago huérfano cáñamo*. In this insistence on trochaic rhythm Catalan forms a bridge from Gaul, the focus of this

tendency, to the west; Spanish admits more trisyllabic endings, and Portuguese still more. Catalan goes further, however, and converts many trochees into iambs by the loss of final unaccented vowels other than *a*. In this respect it agrees entirely with Provençal, and more remotely with French, which conserves the memory of *-a* in the form of 'mute' *-e*; Catalan, Provençal and French eliminate final *-e* *-o*, apart from using a 'mute' *-e* as a vowel of support to difficult final groups of consonants. Spanish preserves all three vowels; *-A* Sp. *piedra* Cat. *pedra* Prov. *peira* Fr. *pierre* 'stone'; *-E* Sp. *siete* Cat. Prov. *set* Fr. *sept* 'seven'; *-o* Sp. *ocho* Cat. *vuit* Prov. *uech* Fr. *huit* 'eight'; *-E* Sp. *padre*, retained as vowel of support to group *-dr->-ir- -r-* in Cat. *pare* Prov. *paire* Fr. *père* 'father'. Thanks to the final *-a* and the vowel of support *-e*, Catalan combines trochaic and iambic rhythm, whereas French is characteristically iambic and Spanish characteristically trochaic. Catalan stands closer to the French languages in its forms, but represents a transition, which continues through the Spanish dialects. In Aragonese the final *-e* is as often lost as retained, e.g. the adverb is always formed in *-ment*; and in Castilian *-l -n -r -d -s -z* stand regularly as finals, with the loss of the original *-e*: *sal ten dar dad cortés paz*. In old Castilian this vowel was more frequently lost, notably after fricatives; as *nuef noch Lop* for *nueve noche Lope*. The vowel was restored as a result of the reaction which set in in the thirteenth century, supported by the plural forms of nouns (*-es*) and the vowels preserved by the verbal paradigm (e.g. 3 Pl. *tienen*, which helped to restore *tiene* from *tien*). The loss or conservation of *-e* is thus less notable than the retention by Spanish of *-o*. This is much more regular; but occasionally *-o* is lost in Aragonese (*fei* as well as *feito feto* Sp. *hecho* FACTU), and the ancient Mozarabic dialect showed a distinct tendency to drop this final vowel (*Montiel Pascual = Vascuel Sanchol Royol Reberter*). Once again Portuguese is more conservative than Spanish, as witness *parede* Sp. *pared* 'wall', *dai* (from *dade*) Sp. *dad* 'give', and the fugitive *e* that can be heard after the *-r* of Portuguese

infinitives. We may speak therefore once again of a tendency towards a certain change, with France as its centre of radiation, which loses force gradually in passing across the Spanish peninsula, in the sequence Catalan-Aragonese-(Castilian) Spanish-Leonese-Portuguese. Unlike either Spanish or Provençal, Catalan forms the plural of nouns in *-a* by *-es*, and similarly the verb *-a -en*: *casa cases ama amen*. This formation occurs in the Asturias of Oviedo and at points in western León.

The accented vowels have suffered some characteristic changes. The most notable fact is that Catalan does not agree with Provençal and French in developing *u* to [y]: *LUNA* Fr. *lune* Prov. *luna* [y], Cat. *lluna* [u], Sp. *luna* Ptg. *lua*. This distinction is sharply effected on the linguistic frontier in Roussillon, where it coincides equally abruptly with a number of other criteria which distinguish Catalan from Provençal. In respect of this phenomenon the Peninsular frontier unquestionably lies near the Corbières, north of Perpignan, where the political boundary ran during the Middle Ages. No such sharp division results, as we have seen, from the treatment of accented ē ð. In this case Catalan and Provençal agree in resisting the diphthong save before a palatal: *ōCTO* Cat. *vuit* Prov. *uech* 'eight', *NōCTE* Cat. *nit* Prov. *nuech* 'night', *PĒCTUS* Cat. *pits* Prov. *pieitz* 'breast'. It will be seen that the Cat. *i* in these cases is reduced from a triphthong *-iei-*. All other cases show the monophthongs *e o*: Cat. *pedra pont mola ben*, etc. The kinship of Catalan and Provençal is clear at this point, but inferences as to Romance grouping are more difficult to make. French is a language which diphthongizes: *pierre bien meule huit nuit poitrine*, but *pont sept*; and Portuguese has none of these diphthongs: *pedra bem mó oito noite peito ponte sete*. In Spanish the diphthong occurred in all cases, apart from a centre of resistance in Granada and Lusitania, where the simple vowels were preferred. In Castilian the vowels did not form diphthongs before palatals: *noche tenga poyo* Leon. Arag. *nueite tienga pueyo*. Thus it is not possible to use the treatment of these vowels to characterize either Gallo-Romance or Ibero-Romance,

nor to treat the Castilian development as equivalent to that of all Spanish. The only affirmation that arises, apart from the association of Catalan and Provençal, is that these regions lie at the heart of a vast area which diphthongizes ē ð before a palatal, including France and most of Spain, together with northern Italy. On the periphery of this movement lie Cantabria (the home of Castilian, against the Basque border), Galicia, Portugal, Lusitania and Granada. As for the treatment of AU in CAUSA Prov. *cauza* (Fr. *chose*) Cat. *cosa* Sp. *cosa* Ptg. *cousa* 'thing', and of AI (e.g. in AREA *aira*) in Prov. *eira* Cat. Sp. *era* Ptg. *eira*, we notice a decided tendency of Catalan and eastern Spanish (including Castilian) to simplify these diphthongs, but a slower development both in Provence and in western Spain (León, Mozarabic territories, Galicia, Portugal).

In the same way the Catalan consonant system shows leanings towards Provençal solutions without involving a break away from the tradition of Peninsular Romance. A number of divergences have been provoked by the special development of Castilian among the Spanish dialects, so that Cat. *formiga gener vuit faixa ull fill filla* merely adopt solutions for *f- j- -ct- -sci- -c'l- -li-* which are found in most of Romania and in the consensus of Spanish dialects, though different from Cast. *hormiga enero ocho Hacinas ojo hijo hija*. An instance of resemblance to the other Peninsular languages and dissidence from Provençal is the pronunciation of *b d g* in 'weak' positions, i.e. not at the beginning of a breath-group nor protected by a preceding *n* (or *l* for *d*). In such cases Provençal pronounces occlusive consonants [b d g], but Catalan and all other Peninsular speeches use a series of fricatives [b̪ d̪ g̪] that closely resemble the occlusives and pass into them in emphatic enunciation. There is, however, a much greater use of the occlusives in Catalan, and the fricatives may be modern. In the treatment of *-nn-* and *-ll-* Catalan resembles the Spanish dialects of the Ibero-Romance group, in palatalizing the nasal [n] and lateral [l]: DAMNU *dannu* Cat. *dany* 'injury' ANNU *any* 'year' CABALLU *cavall* 'horse'

as Sp. *daño año caballo*. Prov. *dan an* and Ptg. *dano ano* are not palatalized; while *-LL-* gives Prov. *i ll* Ptg. *l*: Prov. *estela sella* Ptg. *estréla sela*. In some cases the correspondence is restricted to some considerable portion of the Spanish area. Those which affect Aragonese and eastern Spanish are naturally the most interesting. *-ND- -MB-* assimilate to *n m* in Cat. *ona coloma UNDA COLUMBA* 'dove' 'wave'. Aragonese possesses both these features, and has spread *-MB- m* as far as Castilian and standard Spanish (*paloma lomo*), so that *mb* only commences with Leonese (*palomba*), whence it continues through Galicia and Portugal (*pomba*), Prov. *onda palomba*. In this instance Catalan shares in an innovation of eastern Spain, like the prompt reduction of *AI* to *e* which also characterizes Catalan with Aragonese; in treating of initial *PL- CL- FL-*, which remain *pl- cl- fl-* in these regions, Catalan has shared with Mozarabic and Aragonese resistance to a change which radiated out from the north-west (Galicia and León), and which affects Castilian: *llama llamar llaga* from *FLAMMA CLAMARE PLAGA*.

Initial *ll-* occurs in Catalan by palatalization of *l-*, as *LUNA lluna* 'moon'. This word and others like it have led to a false inference that Catalan once possessed the Gallo-Romance *ii*, and that the development of *lluna* ran through a stage *lüna*, identical with Provençal. This inference cannot be maintained in view of the fact that *ll-* occurs with all vowels, and not only with *u*, as *llarg* 'wide' from *LARGU*. Prov. *liina* Sp. *luna* Ptg. *lua* all show *l-* as against the Catalan *ll-*; but for all that the phenomenon is not uniquely Catalan. It occurs regularly in the Asturian dialects, and there is evidence of the change having occurred also in Al-Andalus, where *yengua* from *LINGUA* implies an intermediate stage *\*llengua*. The palatalizing of initial *l-* is thus seen to be a feature recurring sporadically in all Peninsular Romance. *ALTERU* gives *altre* 'other' in Catalan, with a velar [h]; in Provençal it is *autre*, with [y]; in Portuguese *outro*, originally and in north Portuguese [ou], but now pronounced [o] in south Portuguese [ótr̥]; in Spanish it is *otro*. Thus Catalan

occupies here the most ancient stage of a development which ends in Sp. *otro* in Ibero-Romance and Fr. *autre* [otr] in Gallo-Romance. The retardation of this change occurs in many Spanish words that have remained with *-lt-* like *salto alto*, etc. Similarly in **MULTU** Cat. *molt* [mɔlt] Prov. *mout* 'much', Catalan is conservative compared with Provençal; but Ibero-Romance has palatalized this *l* instead of velarizing it, Ptg. Leon. *muito* Sp. *mucho* (from \**muitō*). Medial **-TR-** in **PATRE** 'father' gives Cat *r* Sp. *dr* Prov. *ir, pare padre paire*. In this instance Catalan differs from both Spanish and Provençal, but perhaps more from Provençal. In vulgar Spanish *pare mare* are found by the elimination of the weak fricative [d̪] in *padre*, as also in OSp. *Pero = Pedro*, so that it is probable the Catalan form has arisen in the same way, without passing through *ir* as Prov. *paire* Fr. *père*. Final *r* is silent in eastern Catalan and Provençal, but also in Aragonese and Andaluz, though retained in Spanish (Castilian and Leonese) and in Portuguese. Cat. *muller* *mallers* [mułé mułés], Arag. *mallé* *mallés*, but Sp. *mujer* *mujeres*.

There are a few features which are more particularly Catalan, such as the treatment of intervocalic **-Ć- -D-, and of final -Ć -D -B and -N.** **VICINU AUDIRE** give Cat. *vei oír* as against Prov. *vezi auzir* 'neighbour' 'hear'. The Spanish equivalents are *z-* in *vecino* (OSp. *vezino*) *oír*; so that only the silencing of **-Ć-** pertains exclusively to Catalonia, while both criteria mark off Catalan from Provençal. **BREVE CRUCE PEDE** all lead to **-u** in Cat. *breu creu peu* 'short' 'cross' 'foot'. Sp. *breve* is due to the retention of the final vowel, lost in Catalan, but in Aragonese we encounter *breu*, as also in Provençal. The criterion thus does not distinguish Catalan from all the Spanish dialects. *Creu peu*, however, are clearly marked off from Sp. *cruz pie* Prov. *crutz pe*. In the twelfth century **PLACET FECIT CRUCE** were represented by Cat. *platz fet crod* 'pleases' 'did' 'cross', which show that the evolution to **-u** was not then complete, and the criterion of **-Ć > -u** is relatively modern. The development from **-D** to **-u** is an ancient characteristic of Catalan. As for final **-N**, Provençal

and Catalan agree in eliminating the nasal (BENE *bé* 'well' BONU *bo* 'good' PANE *pa* 'bread'), which is retained by all Spanish dialects; but they disagree in the plural, where Catalan restores the nasal (*bens bons pans*).

If we consider the forms of words, we find the same similarity between Provençal and Catalan as appears from the sounds as well as the same impossibility of establishing a clear frontier against Spanish dialects. The loss of final vowels leads to a considerable resemblance in the paradigms between Provençal and Catalan; but in 2 Pl. -TIS -t's gives Prov. -tz Cat. -u (*tenetz teniu*). This -u is relatively modern in Catalan, and in the older language ran concurrently with -ts; but the latter also extended into the Spanish area in Aragon, where we still have *tenez*. It is characteristic of Catalan to have retained the Latin third conjugation in -ERE, which remains in Gallo-Romance, but has been submerged in the second by the Ibero-Romance tongues (Cat. *coneixer* Sp. *conocer* Ptg. *conhecer* COGNOSCERE 'know'); it also resembles French and Provençal in making use of the inceptive suffix -ESC- to conjugate verbs in -ir so that the accent always falls on the termination (*serveixo -eixes -eix -im -iu -eixen* 'serve'). In Ibero-Romance this termination loses its inceptive sense, but serves to form new verbs in -ecer (*amanecer rejuvenecer florecer*, etc.). Catalan uses past participles in -UTU (*crescut tingut*) as freely as French and Provençal; in medieval Spanish these also existed, but disappeared during the medieval period in favour of -ITU (*crecido tenido*). Catalan builds its past participles on the preterite stem of the verb, but Spanish on the present (Cat. *tenir tingui tingut*, *haver hagui hagut*, Sp. *tener tenido*, *haber habido*). The practice extends over the frontier into Aragonese, where we find *tuvido supido*, etc. from *tener saber* via *tuve supe*.

Among the pronouns the use of *jo tu* 'I' 'thou' as disjunctives after a preposition is also customary in Aragonese, where the 3 Pl. possessive is, as in Catalan, from ILLORUM Arag. *lur-es* Cat. *llur-s* 'their' (Sp. *a mí, a ti; su-s*). The use of *qui*

'who' as a nominative was widespread in Old Spanish, and continues in Aragonese, where we also find the feminine of *cuál* as *cuala*, cf. Cat. *quina*. Catalan has developed a rich series of reinforced negatives (*no...pas punt mica gota gens gaire res cosa cap*, etc.); the same impetus was felt in medieval Spanish, but has been repressed. The comparative was formed by OCat. *pus*, which has now yielded to *més* (*lo pus bell catalanesc del mon* 'the finest Catalan in the world'). Though French and Provençal have derived their particle from PLUS and Spanish and Portuguese from MAGIS, the former was not unknown to Ibero-Romance, as witnessed by OPtg. *chus*. A conspicuous Ibero-Romance feature of Catalan is the absence of declension, in opposition to the two-case system of Old French and Provençal.

In respect of vocabulary there is a more decided approximation of Catalan to the other Peninsular languages; naturally so, as the vocabulary has arisen out of common experiences in organization and history. The similarity between Catalan and Provençal forms is so great that it is not possible to distinguish at all times whether a word is native or foreign; and there is in any case a very heavy dose of French and Provençal in Catalan. The Provençal contribution is at its highest in the medieval rhyming dictionaries composed to aid Catalan poets: *causen cresén ausir auçir tesaur lays*, etc. Castilianisms are frequent in the modern speech, and enter the language at a very early stage; they are quite numerous in the chronicle of James the Conqueror which stands at the head of the great Catalan histories. The resemblance to the Peninsular languages, however, is not due merely to this kind of borrowing, but to intrinsic similarity arising out of identical experience: the presence of Iberian words, and of the same kinds of Celtic and Germanic elements, the abundant Arabisms, and a general parallelism between Spanish and Catalan loan-words taken from Latin at recent dates.

The study of the characteristics of these neighbouring tongues has also been made on the frontiers between them, viz. that between Catalan and Provençal in Roussillon, and

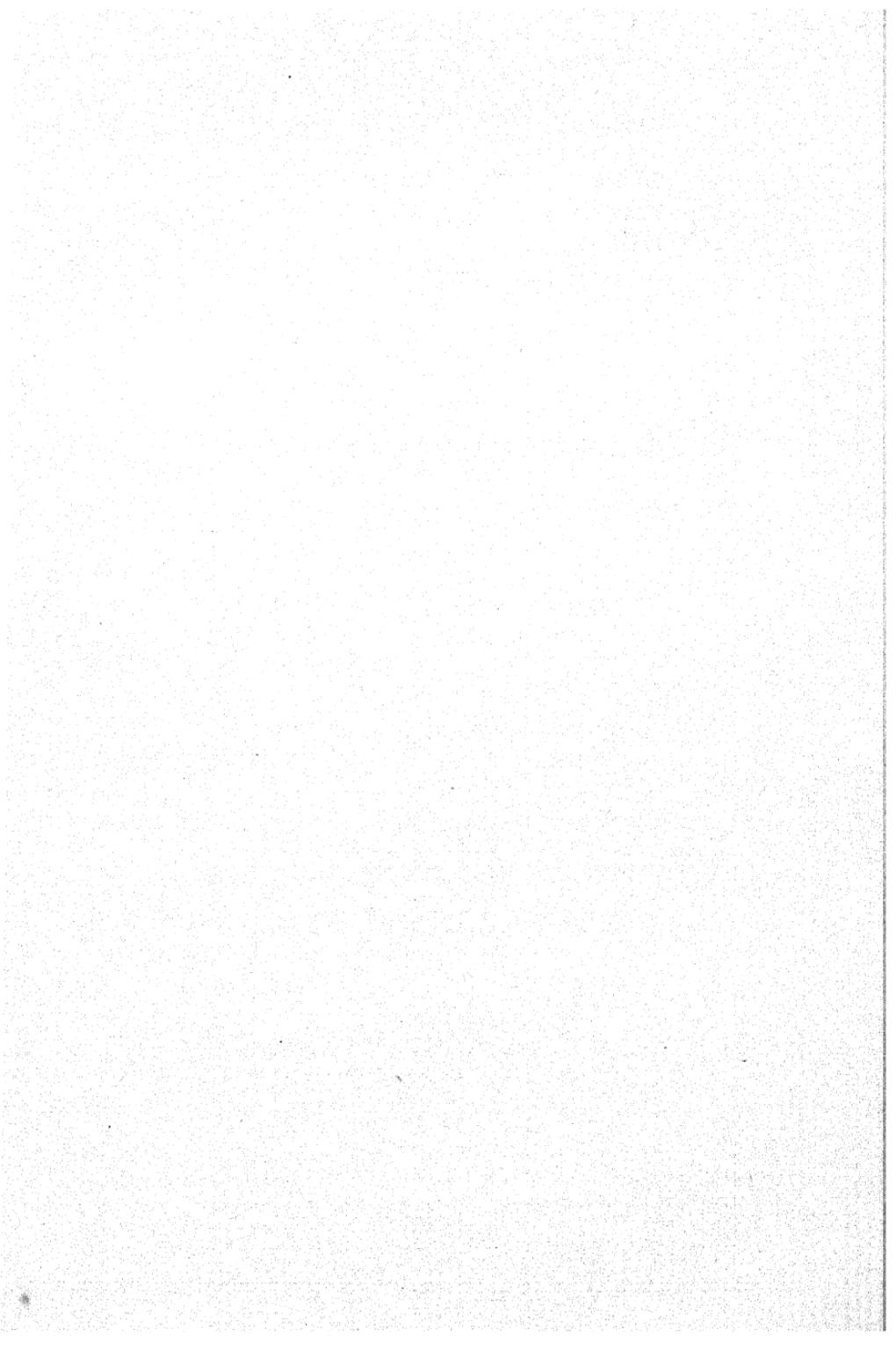
that between Catalan and Aragonese Spanish in Ribagorza. The principal mark of distinction between Catalan and Provençal is certainly the treatment of Lat. *ū*, MURU Prov. *mür* Cat. *mur* 'wall', and this phenomenon is found to coincide precisely in area with a number of other differences, so as to form a deeply drawn frontier:

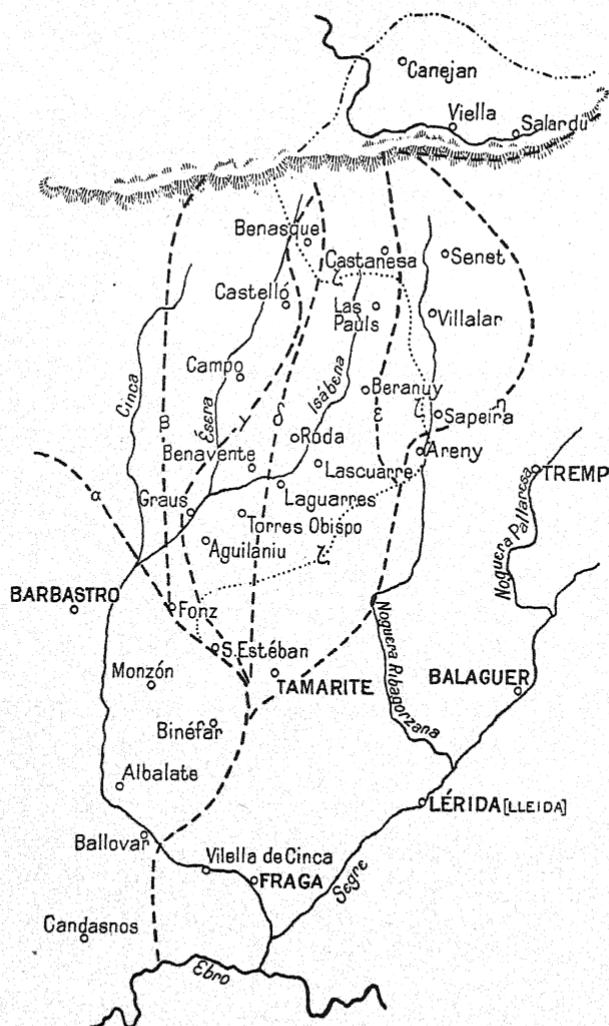
Prov. *mür frūti pititz febrer uech fuela paire peira auzir genre onda vezí tenetz car causa auca pretz detz patz crutz pe*

Cat. *mur fruit pits febrer vuit fulla pare pedra oir gendre ona vel teniu carn cosa oca preu deu pau creu peu*

The line of demarcation for all these features alike starts from the Andorran border just north of L'Hospitalet, and proceeds eastwards so as to pass between Querigut and Fourmiguères to just south of Latour de France, significantly so called; it then trends north-eastward to the massif of Perillou, and then south-eastward to bisect the Étang de Leucate, or de Salses. The same frontier marks the northern extension of a number of very common Catalan words, such as *ben cabells trencar ganivet mantega aviat carnicer ballar dona dia casa sabater esmorzar cara metge germana hortolà nou sempre*, etc.

On the Spanish side the situation is quite different. A line-frontier does not begin to appear until we reach the plain of La Litera, clear of the hills, between Tamarite and Binéfar. From this point of union many of the principal criteria distinguishing Spanish from Catalan unite and cross the Ebro, and then descend through the medieval kingdom of Valencia so that the hills are held by Spanish and the coastal plain by Catalan, until they reach the sea along the River Vinalapó, which flows through Elche in Murcia. La Litera was the scene of hot contests in the great days of the Reconquest, and has been depopulated by the expulsion of the Moriscos. It is evident that the frontier from Tamarite southward is the product of reconquest and resettlement, during the twelfth century and early thirteenth for the most part. To the north of Tamarite we find no such frontier. Aragonese features gradually diminish and Catalan gradually increase over a range of 40 or 50 miles. In the intervening





## THE CATALAN FRONTIER

CRITERIA:  $\alpha$  h, f  $\beta$  l- $\lambda$  y ie, e  $\delta$  ue, o  $\epsilon$  -[s]-[z]-l-as, es  $\eta$  [č], [č̄]  
 (Rev. Fil. Eep. iii)

territory it is impossible to say whether a given township speaks Aragonese or Catalan, especially since Aragonese itself represents, when compared with other Spanish dialects, an approximation to Catalan. The political units involved here are primitive Aragón, the county of Ribagorza (with an ecclesiastical centre at Roda), and the county of Pallars; the first and last speak unmixed languages, but Ribagorza is debated ground. Until the tenth century the counts of Ribagorza cultivated the alliance of the Catalan counts of Pallars; but after that date Ribagorza was merged with the kingdom of Aragón. On the Aragonese side the River Cinca, which falls into the Segre near the Ebro, and the town of Barbastro, are the main Aragonese defences; on the Catalan side, the Noguera Pallaresa and Segre, with Tremp, Balaguer and Lérida, supports Catalan tendencies. The middle ground is occupied by the upper valley of the Noguera Ribagorzana and the valleys of the Isábena and Ésera. In this region each linguistic phenomenon has its own frontier, but a few of the more significant may be cited here.

The Castilian change of *f* to *h* has taken place in the Barbastro region, and forms a frontier-line running between Monzón and Fonz, Binéfar and Tamarite, Albalate and Fraga. As, however, this development is not characteristic of Aragonese, there is no frontier in this respect between Catalan and the dialects of Upper Aragón to the north of Barbastro. The first such frontier is met in the opposition of *luna* : *lluna*, on a line running between the Cinca and Ésera, and descending to Fonz. On the Ésera, Benasque, Castellón, Campo and Graus all show *ll*. The central line of division is traced by the diphthongation of *ó* and *ë*. Here the middle course of the Ésera (Campo and Castellón) and Fonz have both diphthongs (*ue ie*), and in addition Benasque, Benavente, Torres and Aguilaniu have the diphthong *ie*, giving a line which separates the valleys of the Ésera and Isábena. The easternmost lines are those marked by the unvoicing of sibilants in the sixteenth century. By this process OSp. -*s*-[*z*] became [s], and *j* [ž] became [š]. In the case of JUNIPERU,

*joven*, etc., Aragonese has developed [č] from the affricate pronunciation of OSp. *j* [j], which occurred as an alternative. The frontiers referred to are thus those between the values [s] and [z] for the *s* of *casa rosa camisa*, etc., and [č] and [ž] for *chinebro ginebre*, *choben jove*, etc. They separate after leaving the Vall d'Aran and the Pyrenees to run on either side of the upper Noguera Ribagorzana, which is crossed in a westerly trend by [č] : [ž] between Sopeira and Areny. Thereafter they join together and trend south-west to Tamarite, which belongs in these respects to Aragonese (*joven* > *choben ECCLESIA lazlesyo*). Other lines wander over these to make a complicated pattern: for instance, the antithesis of the plurals of -a nouns (*casas* : *cases*) commences at Benasque on the sources of the Ésera, trends eastward to the Noguera Ribagorzana and follows its west bank from opposite Villalar to Sopeira, crossing the stream for a while at Areny, and then trending as sharply westward in the direction of Fonz, short of which it turns south-eastward towards the junction of linguistic frontiers between Binéfar and Tamarite. These criteria make up together an appreciable frontier, since their total effect is considerably to change the nature of the language, from Spanish to Catalan; but they do not constitute a bundle nor make an abrupt cut like that which occurs in Roussillon.

On Catalan and its relation with other Romance languages consult W. Meyer-Lübke, *Das Katalanische* (Heidelberg, 1925), A. Alonso, 'La subagrupación románica del catalán', *Rev. Fil. Esp.* xiii, A. Griera, 'Castellà—català—castellà', *Zeitschrift für rom. Phil.* xlvi, P. Fouché, 'Études de philologie hispanique', *Rev. Hist.* lxxvii, K. Salow, *Sprachgeographische Untersuchungen über den östlichen Teil des katalanisch-languedokischen Grenzgebietes* (Hamburg, 1912), J. Hadwiger, 'Sprachgrenzen und Grenzmundarten des Valencianischen', *Zeitschrift für rom. Phil.* xxix.

For the sake of simplicity I have made the comparison of the three languages on the basis of phonology and morphology alone. Naturally, they can be compared in respect of vocabulary, word-formation or syntax also, and the resemblance of Catalan to Provençal would be striking.

## CATALAN ORIGINS AND EXPANSION

The foregoing evidence makes it clear that between Roussillon and Languedoc lies a linguistic frontier which has not been transgressed. Roussillon, therefore, takes its language from some centre lying to the south of that line, such as Ruscino the Roman colony, or Elne the seat of a medieval bishopric, or Perpignan the administrative capital. The line is marked by the northern range of the Pyrenees at its eastern extremity, which leaves the central line of mountains in Andorra, and trends east-north-east behind the line of the Corbières. The linguistic frontier runs, not along this crest, but rather along the southern slopes. It is supported at last by the massif of Perillou, and then descends to the sea through the middle of the obstacle offered by the lagoon of Salses. This frontier separated Gaul from Iberia in ancient times; the Cerretani occupied Cerdagne and the Sordones, with settlements at Illiberis on the Tech and Ruscino on the Tet, extended as far as Salses in Roussillon; both peoples were of Iberian stock, pure or mixed. There appears to have been some infiltration of Celtic tribes into this region, but under the Romans it was marked off from the territory of the colony Narbo Martius, and the division corresponds almost precisely with that between the bishoprics of Narbonne and Elne (Vingrau belongs to Narbonne, but belonged to Elne until 1359). The frontier held good for the kingdom of Aragón or the satellite kingdom of Majorca during the Middle Ages, and it was only in 1659 that the French border was advanced across Roussillon to the line of the Alberes, the southern terminus of the Pyrenees. For purposes of our investigation, therefore, we must suppose that Spain extends to the Corbières; Catalan, geographically, is one of the Peninsular languages.

This region formed part of the Spanish March under the Carolingian emperors, and received the fugitive *Hispani* driven northward by the Moorish invasion. Who they were is doubtful, and it is equally difficult to determine the *loca*

*erema* where they were established. The latter appear to have included districts as far south as Gerona and Barcelona. It is inadmissible to suppose that the north-east of Spain was abandoned by its inhabitants and resettled by Franks from the Empire; but the inclusion of the region within the Marches undoubtedly contributed to the association of Catalonia with Provence, as it laid the basis for Catalan intervention in the affairs of southern France until 1213 (Muret). The common interests of Provence and Catalonia were embodied in the Visigothic dominions of Ataulf and his successors, before the acquisition of the rest of Spain, and there were doubtless under the Roman Empire close commercial and colonial relations between Narbonensis and Tarragonensis, which may have received in common a considerable influx of discharged legionaries.

On the side of Spain, we have to admit the continuous presence of the Catalan dialects alongside the Aragonese, as made evident by the zone of gentle transition in Ribagorza. This gradual passage from one speech to another makes Catalan part of a linguistic band along the Pyrenees and Cantabrian mountains; in all this stretch there is no brusque frontier, but a series of transitions by which we pass through Aragonese, Castilian and Asturo-Leonese, until we reach Galician. This does not, however, prove the identity of Catalan with the Spanish group of dialects any more than a similar transition between French and Italian proves the identity of those two languages. On the contrary, the sum total of the changes wrought on the Ribagorzan band-frontier places Catalan rather nearer to Provençal than to Spanish. We have only evidence for the permanent existence of Catalan in the valleys running southward from the Pyrenees. How far south the dialect reached cannot be determined with absolute certainty. It is clear that at Valencia a Mozarabic dialect ruled in which ē ð became *ie ue* or *ua*, and in the Balears final *-o* was preserved until after the Christian Reconquest. But also *Tarragona* and *Barcelona* (*TARRACONE BARCINONE*) show Mozarabic inter-

vention by their final *-a*, so that for the eighth century we have to exclude some of the principal Catalan cities. In the west the primitive frontier doubtless descended to Tamarite, where the lines join together as Catalan and Aragonese advanced with the Reconquest at the expense of the older Mozarabic. Barbastro and Lérida were Mozarabic cities. The primitive seat of Catalan is thus restricted to the hill-country in the north of the province and the land between the two ranges of the Pyrenees.

The counts of Barcelona gradually ceased to acknowledge their dependence on the Frankish Empire, though still described by the Moors and Christians of Spain as Franks. An early frontier *contra Ispaniam* was established on the Llobregat, which flows past Barcelona, or more exactly in the Penedès district, where Castellví de la Marca and Sant Vicenç de Calders are given as frontier posts in the eleventh century. This line divided Old from New Catalonia, and slightly less advanced is the present linguistic frontier between eastern and western Catalan. Eastern Catalan has for capitals Perpignan (Perpinyà), Vic, Gerona (Girona) and Barcelona; the principal centres of western Catalan are Urgell, Lérida (Lleida) and Tarragona, of which Lérida was the educational, and Tarragona the ecclesiastical, capital of all Catalonia. Eastern Catalan tends to open its *e* sounds; atonic *a e* become either [ə] or [ɛ] according to circumstances, and atonic *o* becomes [u]. Western Catalan distinguishes clearly *a* and *e*. This form of the language is of considerable importance, since the earliest documents, the *Homilies d'Organyà*, come from the west. The dialectal difference was observed by Pujades, the author of the *Crònica universal del Principat de Catalunya* (1609). There are several subdialects of each group. The eastern dialects include the Catalan of Roussillon, and notably the provençalized speech of Capcir, Ampurdanese (where the article *es sa* appears at Salat), and Barcelonese. The region of Tarragona may be considered transitional. In it *b v* are distinguished, though confused in Tarragona city, and at Reus the western features are pronounced. The

western dialects include the Catalan of Andorra, Pallars, parts of Ribagorza, the Catalan lexical elements in the Gascon of the Vall d'Aran, and the speech of Tortosa, which forms the transition between Catalan and Valencian.

South of the Ebro an important military frontier occurred at Burriana, south of Castellón de la Plana. It was here that the Cid established his advanced base against Valencia (1094), so as to have his back to Catalonia, whence he might draw friendly support; and it was from Burriana that the final reduction of Valencia was effected by James the Conqueror in 1238. The Catalan advance pressed on to Alicante, and in 1263-66 James was master of all Murcia, which, however, he restored to Castile. Concerning Orihuela, Elche, Guadamar, Alicante, Cartagena and Murcia city Muntaner says that the inhabitants were true Catalans and spoke perfect Catalan. The language, however, has retired to the north-eastern frontier of the province, where it rests at Elche and along the Vinalapó River. To the north of Elche and Alicante Catalan occupies not the whole of the provinces of Valencia and Castellón, but only the coastal plain. The high ground was settled by Aragonese colonists, whose dialect has given way to the invading Castilian. The type of Catalan imported was the western, and suffers local modification in the three regions of Castellón, Valencia (the modern *apitxat* dialect) and Alicante.

Eastern Catalan extended oversea. It first occupied the Baleares in 1229, giving rise to *mallorquí*. In the Baleares there is confusion between tonic *a* and *e*, as in the Majorcan *Grail* manuscript (*aqast crau* etc. for *aquest creu*) and still more the atonics (*sanyor avangelis pravare* for *senyor evangelis prevere*). Here also we find the archaic article from *IPSE es sa*, which struggled for mastery against *ILLE lo la* in all Catalonia before 1200. This article is petrified in place- and personal-names like *Sacasa Descoll*, and is still found on the mainland at Salat, as well as in Provence and Sardinia. *Mallorquí* has played a considerable part in the reconstruction of literary Catalan during the nineteenth century.

Farther into the Mediterranean the kings of Aragón extended their dominion over Sardinia, Sicily, Naples, and indirectly for a period over the Morea. This led to no linguistic conquests save in Sardinia. The inhabitants of Cagliari were expelled from their city by Pere del Punyalet, and replaced by Catalan colonists; and the official use of the language persisted into the sixteenth century, when it had yielded to Castilian in the mainland. Spanish, in fact, did not displace Catalan in the island; but the rivalry of languages undermined both, so as to facilitate the ultimate triumph of Italian. At this day Catalan has contracted to the single township of Alghero, where it is spoken by some 12,280 people in an archaic form, attesting its arrested development. The colony took the name of *Barceloneta*; established in 1355, it was kept as a preserve of Catalans and Aragonese, while in 1478 the immigration of foreigners, even of Corsicans and Sardinians, was absolutely prohibited. *Alguerés* has suffered little from Spanish or Italian, but is much influenced in lexicon and syntax by the neighbouring Sardinian.

On Alghero and *alguerés* see H. Kuen, 'El dialecto de Algúer', *Anuari de l'Oficina Romànica*, v ff.

### MEDIEVAL LITERARY CATALAN

The development of Catalan through the medieval period includes a number of phonetic changes, the product of conflict within the dialects, and an effort towards its emancipation from Provençal and stabilization as a cultural speech. The *Homilies d'Organyà* give us the measure of the twelfth-century language before the emergence of the great literary documents, and can be called the standard of reference for pre-literary Catalan. In this early period the article *es sa* from *IPSE* appears frequently. It occurs sometimes in the documents of the thirteenth century, which are mostly of legal origin; more frequent are *el lo la les los*. In the fourteenth it has disappeared. Up to the thirteenth century also, the final *-n* continues to appear in documents: *cordoan* 'shoe-

maker' (MCat. *sabater*), *pan* 'bread', *raon* 'reason', *son* 'sound'. The fourteenth century carried through another pair of changes: initial *l*- was palatalized to *ll*- in such words as *lletra* 'letter' *lladre* 'thief' *dilluns* 'Monday' *llegir* 'read'; and certain finals in [s] were vocalized into [u]. Final -é gave *creu veu plau feu* for pre-literary *crod crou vots vou platz fet*, involving simultaneously a change in the *o* before -u. This is most important in the 2 Pl. of verbs, which, about the middle of the fourteenth century, changes from -ts to -u. Forms in *u* appear before 1400: *haveu rebeu guardeu* as well as *siats avisats*; and between then and 1450 they become dominant: *sou voleu sperau vullau teniu*, etc., but still we find sporadically *havets certificats hoiats*. The change may have been forwarded by a desire to distinguish the masculine plural past participle from the finite verb: *fets guardats* 'made' 'kept' from *feu guardeu* 'you make' 'you keep'. The endings -ats -ets are still found at Benasque on the frontier with Aragonese, and at Peralta, Fonz, Graus we have the east Aragonese -z in *cantaz portaz*. It was in the fifteenth century that final -r became silent in words accentuated on the last syllable and in all infinitives. The -r remains in the official orthography, but does not always serve to keep hiatus.

In the first instance the *langue d'oc* served Catalonia as a literary language. Catalans took up the art of the troubadour somewhat later than their neighbours in southern France, and with a more didactic manner. They experienced, however, some difficulty in keeping out of their verses the peculiarities of their own tongue, and to aid them there were composed those early Provençal grammars by Ramon Vidal and Jofre Foixa, which are introductions to the technique of society verses. Standardized supposedly on the dialect of Limoges, though really more like that of Toulouse, this conventional tongue became known as *lemosí*; and it was the principal endeavour of the national literature to throw off the encumbrance of *lemosí*. That this was effected, Catalans owe to the tireless energy of Ramon Lull and to the four great chroniclers of the fourteenth century. Lull began as

a troubadour, but with his conversion he turned his back on literary artifice and aimed at sincerity, alike of language and thought. His poems are still marked by the tradition in which he had first worked, for the association of Catalan and Provençal was too intimate to be dissolved at once; but his great prose works are models of *pla catalanesc*. When Lull laid down his life, in 1315, the four great chronicles commenced. The third and liveliest chronicler, Ramon Muntaner, was an enthusiastic partisan of the national language, though he still adopted a provençalized idiom for his verses. He rarely names the language without some adjective of superlative commendation such as *lo bell catalanesc del mon* 'the loveliest Catalan in the world'. The chronicle of Pere del Punyalet is the fourth specimen of this developing language; but the king did more for it through his chancery. In his time practically all documents were drawn up in the vernacular, and constant usage determined the literary idiom. His epistolary genius covered all aspects of Catalan life. At the same time he was a magnificent parliamentary orator, whose harangues remained as models of convincing eloquence. Other great orators—Cardinal Margarit, Martí l'Humà, St Vicent Ferrer—contributed to fix in the memory of all men the accepted pattern of cultured expression in Catalan. The crucial moment was expressed in the career of Bernat Metge, whose first work (the *Llibre de Fortuna e Prudència*, 1381) still employs a provençalized idiom; his second (a translation of Petrarcha's *Griselidis*, 1388) is Catalan, but medieval in complexion; while his third (*Lo Somni*, 1398) is touched with humanism and is the purest model of Catalan prose (cf. A. Par, *Sintaxi catalana*, Halle, 1923).

With the close of Metge's career the interest shifts to Valencia. The House of Barcelona came to an end and the accession of the Castilian prince Fernando de Antequera in 1412 gave lustre to the Aragonese portion of the kingdom, hitherto somewhat repressed. Fernando's successor, Alfonso the Magnanimous, transferred his seat of government to Naples, where the *Cancionero de Sisniga* (1458) shows Catalan as no

more than the equal of Aragonese in court favour. The great writers of the fifteenth century are all Valencians. The two poets, Jordi de Sant Jordi and Auzias March, writing in evident dependence on Arnaut Daniel and the more philosophical *troubadours*, are provençalizers in language, as is also the *Diccionari de rims*. In richness of language and thought Catalan reached its zenith with March. The best representative of the novel, Joan Martorell, wrote his *Tirant lo Blanc* (1490) in *vulgar valenciana*, and the same is true of Jaume Roig's *Llibre de les Dones*. Thus when the crowns of Castile and Aragón were united in 1474, and Catalan felt the brunt of the Castilian literary and cultural invasion, the language had already lost the strong political and cultural support given it by the House of Barcelona.

### THE REVIVAL OF CATALAN AND VALENCIAN

We have already noted that with the House of Trastamara there came a considerable diminution of cultural activity in Catalan at the capital; with the union of the crowns the native language became more and more local, and Spanish was the means of appeal to a wider audience, or of transacting national business. The sixteenth century saw Catalan still in use for topographical and antiquarian works, but in the seventeenth even this employment tended to cease. The language survived in the countryside as a *patois*, and its highest use was by the clergy, obeying the rule to preach always in the vernacular of their parishioners. In the great towns a bilingual population arose, with Catalan for its maternal and familiar tongue, but Spanish for literature and administration. Inevitably Spanish came to exert an influence on the local language, which it had already begun to infect as early as the fourteenth century. The 1 Sg. present indicative of verbs acquired an *-o*: *porto perdo dormo serveixo* for *port perd dorm serveç*. The pronoun of polite address Sp. *usted* gives Cat. *vosté*, which has colloquial sanction. The revived lan-

guage has naturally reacted against flagrant castilianisms, but those which arrive from the bilingual training of educated men contribute to the enrichment of the language. The americanisms of the sixteenth century are current in Catalan as in Spanish, and the latinisms acquired for the service of literature require only to be catalanized for general use. This is not so much a debt to Castilian as evidence of a common cultural heritage; but it emphasizes the lexical similarity of the languages, especially in the Catalan of the newspapers. Other changes came over the language that are not due to Castilian. The present subjunctive tends to prefer forms in *-i*: *porti perdi dormi serveixi* for *port perda dorma serveasca*. Imperfects in *-iva* do not appear in modern literary Catalan. Alternative forms in the preterite are simplified towards a single pattern for strong verbs: out of *paregué parech, plagué plach*, there remain only *paregué plagué*. The masculine article is *el els*, displacing *lo los*.

The rebuilding of Catalan has been the work of the nineteenth century, and has been accomplished in various stages which correspond to the clearness of vision among men of letters. The initial date is offered by Pau Ballot's grammar of the language, issued in 1814, which, although no more than a conversation-grammar, contained a fervent eulogy of the language. Torres Amat, cataloguing the medieval monuments, showed that Catalan had been more than a *patois* in the Middle Ages. The strong current of cosmopolitanism felt in the Age of Reason was now ebbing, and both antiquarian interest and the budding Romanticism stressed the importance of local inspiration. But as Catalan had only a local range, the generation of Cabanyes and Piferrer sought to give Catalan colour to works contributed to Spanish literature; drawing on vernacular songs and traditions, but transmuting them so far as possible into the language of culture. Their effort failed; it could not overcome the inner inconsistency of the two languages, and neither pleased Hermosilla and the Madrid critics nor adequately expressed the local truth. In 1833 Aribau launched his ode *A ma pàtria* which, as well as

evoking unforgettable landscapes from Catalonia, gave expression to a sense of filial piety towards the language:

*En llemosí sonà lo meu primer vagit,  
quan del mugró matern la dolça llet bevia,  
en llemosí al Senyor pregava cada dia,  
i càntics llemosins somiava cada nit.*

‘It was in *lemosí* that my first cry was made, drinking the sweet milk at my mother’s breast; in *lemosí* did I pray to God every day, and every night I dreamt of songs in *lemosí*.’

Aribau did not himself follow up this line, but devoted himself to literary scholarship in Spanish. The credit for all but the proclamation goes to Rubió and the generation of neo-troubadours, who set themselves to repeat the conditions of the Provençal lyric in Catalonia, and in 1859 established the Floral Games of Barcelona. The revival gained momentum, but was suffering from a basic misconception. Catalan in the Middle Ages was not *lemosí* but *pla catalanesc*, and it was necessary to repeat its emancipation from Provençal. This took the form of discovering what real Catalan was: Milà i Fontanals revealed the ancient literature with unmatched scholarship; Marian Aguiló covered the country in search of popular songs, recorded their words, and brought a foison of expressions from his native Majorca; and Jacinto Verdaguer, a country priest and true poet, divined the genius of the language. By 1880 the process of recatalanization was complete: what chiefly remained to determine was the extent to which this language might be employed. Maragall, Carner and others showed that it was capable of very varied styles in lyrical verse; Guimerà used it for dramas, orations and letters; Prat de la Riba built on it a political creed of Catalan nationalism; and the Institute of Catalan Studies used it for scientific prose. With the autonomous régime that accompanied the Republic, Catalan entered into dyarchy with Castilian in Catalonia.

The share taken by Majorcans in recreating the literary tongue has been most important. In collections of *rondalles* they preserve their local peculiarities, but for literary pur-

poses standard literary Catalan, as defined by Pompeu Fabra and the Institute, suffices. The case of Valencia is different. The language has separated from the pattern of Barcelona, and the region had always enjoyed a certain local independence. As derived from western Catalan the *lengua valenciana* distinguishes unaccented *a* from *e*, whereas Catalan treats them indifferently; these vowels retain their timbre, as also does unaccented *o* (which is dulled to *u* in Catalan). Outside the city *b* is bilabial and *v* labiodental; Valencian grammarians advise keeping this distinction, which is abandoned by their colleagues in Barcelona. The city employs further the *apitxat* enunciation, i.e. it shares to some extent the tendency of Spanish to transform voiced sibilants into the unvoiced series: the consonants affected are *-s-* *-tz* *j* *tj*, Cat. [z ž ž j]. They become [s š ê ê] and then correspond with *-ss-* *-ts* *x* (initial or after consonant) *tx*: *casa* [kása] *dotze* (dóše) *juny* [çuny] *pitjor* [piêór] *xop* [êop] *arxiu* [arçiu] *calaix* [kalaiš]. The confusion arising from this change affects the rhymes of Valencian poets, so as to make some of them inadmissible in Barcelona; but grammarians attempt to enforce the orthographical pronunciation, and the educated speech tends toward the Catalan standard, with vacillation. In the same way the literary revival of Valencian, which began with Teodor Llorente, has followed a separate evolution, and it has not generated nationalist aspirations in Valencia.

On Valencian consult T. Navarro Tomás y M. Sanchis Guarner, 'Análisis fonético del valenciano literario', *Rev. Fil. Esp.* xxi. Since the above was written A. Griera has commenced publication of an encyclopædic *Tresor de la llengua*, vols. i, ii (Barcelona, 1935).

## CHAPTER V

### THE RISE OF CASTILIAN

The Moslem invasion in 711 broke up the Visigothic unity of Spain, and placed the whole south and centre under the control of an alien culture. Two foci of resistance were recognized as menacing their rule: *Jalikiya* or Galicia and *Al-Afranj*, the Franks or Catalans. There were also the *Baškunes*, who had not submitted to Goth or Frank. *Jalikiya* covered the whole north of Spain, and in the course of the centuries the main strength of the Christian resistance shifted gradually southward and eastward, from Galicia and the Asturias de Oviedo to León, from León to Old Castile, and from Old Castile ultimately to Toledo and the Tagus (1085). This record is mirrored in the language, where it is associated with the rise of Castilian to hegemony, until Castilian and Spanish become synonymous terms, supported on chancery tradition and a flourishing vernacular literature (twelfth and thirteenth centuries). The period opens with a state of linguistic unity, pregnant with change, which we may term the Visigothic platform. Doubtless linguistic change was accomplished more slowly than the dynastic, and during the eighth century there must have been, apart from the Catalan area, considerable uniformity of language. The southern and central Spaniards did not, as was once supposed, surrender their Romance tongue. It was the language of the market-place, of all women and of unofficial intercourse; while Arabic was limited to administration, literature and high-class families claiming Arabian descent. In short, the relations between Romance and Arabic in Al-Andalus must have strongly resembled those existing between Guarani and Castilian in the Paraguayan republic. This Spanish of the south, or Mozarabic, inherited the Visigothic capitals and great cities, continuing the Visigothic development of spoken Latin;

but it remained in a backwater, deeply indebted to Arabic for its vocabulary and shut off from the flow of change, so as to present a profoundly archaic appearance.

The modern language formed itself in the north and followed the fortunes of the Reconquest. At first it is seen under the tutelage of León, where *magni reges* and *imperatores* endeavoured to restore the image of the Visigothic monarchy with the aid of Galicians and the Mozarabs lying between the Duero and Tagus. Their language maintains an uneasy compromise between the conservatism of their Galician subjects and the inventiveness of the Castilians, between the Latin inheritance and the Arabic debt incurred by the Mozarabs. The savage razzias of Al-Mansûr bi' llâh at the end of the tenth century broke the power of the Leonese emperors, leaving Castile relatively unhurt.

In Castile a radically innovating, native type of language was developing, which carried to their logical conclusions the changes already commenced in the era of unity. Based on the intense national sentiment of Old Castilians, this speech spread with the power of the sovereign counts, invading eastern León and pressing southward and south-westward into the borders of the Lusitanian province. The great epic poems of the eleventh and twelfth centuries accustomed all Spaniards to hear this accent, and to deem it suitable for narrative and other literary uses; until in the thirteenth century Toledo fell not to León but to Castile, and Castilian, with some compromises, became the language of the chanceries of Spain and of its great prose literature. Traces of the other dialects continue to appear in literary documents to bewray the authors' origins, but they are always compromise forms of Castilian. This is even true of Aragonese works. The kingdom of Aragón sheltered to some extent the local dialect, which was accepted by the chancery of Aragón and for literary works of considerable magnitude. But these also show castilianisms, some more some less, together with Catalan elements, presaging the extinction of literary Aragonese in the sixteenth century. On the other side, Castilian

cut off Leonese from Toledo and from southern Extremadura, whence it descended along the whole Spanish front into Andalusia, giving rise to the modern Andaluz.

Above the Mozarabic substratum, therefore, and between its Leonese and Aragonese rivals, Castilian has thrust a fan-shaped wedge of innovations, which has caused standard modern Spanish to differ considerably from the consensus of the Spanish dialects. Where Leonese, Aragonese and Mozarabic agree in any phenomenon, it is thus possible to refer the feature to the language at the moment before the disruption, and to infer what was common form in Spanish at the close of the Visigothic era. But as well as innovations, Castilian has carried forward certain elements which it shares with Leonese against Aragonese, or Aragonese against Leonese; and in these cases the tendency is further prolonged to the east or west so as to include Catalan or Galician-Portuguese respectively. Through this evidence we become aware of the tendencies favouring a division of Spanish Romance before the rise of the dialects as such; and particularly we learn to know two masses which intersect in the Cantabrian area whence Castilian has arisen, the north-west pivoting on Galicia and León, and the north-east pivoting on Catalonia and Aragón. These masses are outlying portions of the Roman provinces of Asturica and Tarragonensis; a third Roman province, Lusitania, is more dimly in evidence, owing to its conservatism.

The changes common to all Western Romance languages, and which it is the function of the student of Vulgar Latin to investigate, had taken place before the disruption of the Spanish dialects; but not quite equably over the whole area. Except, perhaps, in the Asturias and the old Riojan glosses, where there are traces of final *-u*, the Latin final vowels had been reduced to three: *a e o*. In Catalonia, however, this tendency had gone so far as to eliminate the two latter; and in the north-eastern dialects the final *-e* was threatened with extinction. In Old Castilian it was dropped in the singular, but was retained in the plural *-es*; whence it has been restored

to the singular since the twelfth century (*noch noches* becoming *noche noches*). After final *l m n r d j s x z* the *-e* is still lacking in the singular and present in the plural. Accented ĕ and õ tended to become diphthongs in a northern and central area, embracing the Asturias, León, Castile, Aragón, Toledo, generally Andalusia, Valencia and the Baleares. Galician-Portuguese had no share in this tendency; Catalan, like Provençal, only in the neighbourhood of a palatalized consonant (ōc'LU Cat. *ull*, nōCTE Cat. *nit*, LĒCTU Cat. *llit* Prov. *uelh nuech liech*). Castilian dissented from common Spanish practice precisely where ĕ õ were in contact with a palatal (*ojo noche lecho*). Lusitania did not at all favour the diphthong, and combined this conservative attitude with the retention of intertonic vowels in such names as *Mérida* EMĒRITA and *Mértola*. In Bætica, also, and especially in Granada, the diphthongs were resisted. Over the whole Peninsula the suffixes -ARIU -ERIU -ORIU -ASIU suffered metathesis into -airo -eiro -oiro -eiso, as the basis for further separate developments in Spanish, Portuguese and Catalan. In the north-east (Catalonia and Aragón) there was a tendency to reduce the diphthongs AI AU to simple vowels; and Cantabria probably had no F.

Among the consonantal changes, we note that the tendency to voice the voiceless occlusives -P- -T- -K- between vowels and in weak positions is characteristically north-western. It is marked in Galician-Portuguese and in Leonese, where -b- -d- -g- were introduced even into Latin documents (e.g. *cingidur* for *CINGITUR*); and it extends as far as Castilian, where there are instances of vacillation in the oldest language. In Old Aragonese and in Mozarabic intervocal -p- -t- -k- are still frequent, especially in the suffixes -ATU -ATA (e.g. Moz. *boyaṭa* 'herd', ninth century), and they intrude in place of Latin voiced stops (e.g. Moz. *Qóṛṭuba* CÖRDUBA). The whole Peninsula possessed also the cacuminal pronunciation of s [š], quite distinct from that of ȝ, formed by raising the point of the tongue to the alveoli. It sounded to the Arabs like *sh* [š], and they transcribe it with *shīn*, using *sīn* as the equi-

valent of *ſ* [s]. The loss of this pronunciation in Andalusia and southern (standard) Portuguese is a later development. The *ſ* (Lat. *c* before front vowels) developed in the Peninsular languages in common as far as to be produced in the front of the mouth, either as an affricate [ʃ] or as a fricative [s]; and similarly *j* (Lat. *J D G* before front vowels) shows a common development as far as the middle palate, where it is the affricate [j̪] or the fricative [j], transcribed by the Arabic *jim*. The further development of both these sounds is peculiar to Castilian, and marks the change over from the medieval to the modern form of that language. The group *-ct-* lingers in Mozarabic as *-ht-*, but elsewhere the Spanish dialects agree with Portuguese, Catalan and Western Romance to carry the evolution as far as *-it-*, from which point the Castilian *-ch-* is a further extension of the palatalizing process. All the Peninsular languages agree, again with the concurrence of Western Romance, to represent the groups *-cl-* and *-li-* by palatal *l* [λ]; and in the central and eastern languages (Spanish and Catalan, but not Galician-Portuguese) the doubled consonants *-ll-* and *-nn-* were pronounced with such increased tension of the tongue against the roof of the mouth, as to turn them into palatals. At the beginning of words *l-* showed sporadic tendencies to palatalize, *ll-*, even before the disruption of the linguistic unity; a circumstance that accounts for its presence in the Asturias and Catalonia, and to some extent in the Mozarabic territory, but not in Castilian nor in Galician-Portuguese. Definitely north-western was the tendency to palatalize the *l* in the initial groups *PL- CL- FL-*. These changes do not descend to the Mozarabic of the south, but they reach as far east as Aragón, where forms like *pll-* are found concurrently with *pl-*, etc., the latter supported not only by Latin but by Catalan. In Castilian the palatal *ll* has succeeded in eliminating the initial *p c f* (*PLAGA llaga, CLAMAT llama, FLAMMA llama*); while in Leonese and Galician-Portuguese a more complicated play of phonetic changes has given [ʃ] [č] and [š] (Ptg. *chaga chama*). At the end of a syllable Latin *l* had universally

a velar timbre, still attached to it in Portuguese and Catalan, though not in Spanish. This velar [l] approximated on *u*, and led to the formation of diphthongs in *au* from *al* + consonant.

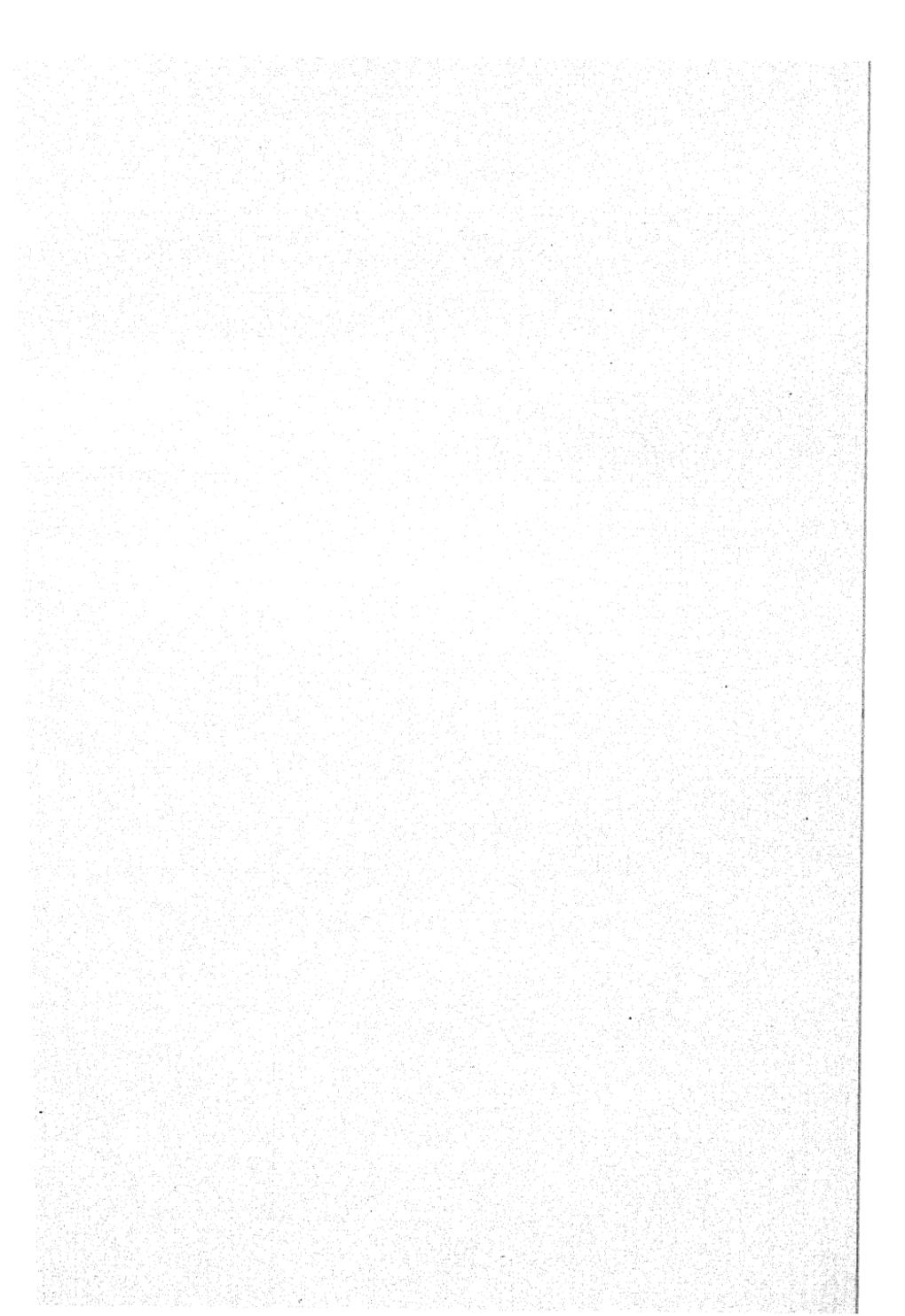
Among other forces which we must suppose to have been operating before the languages separated were those which simplified the declensions and conjugations. Catalan shares with Spanish and Portuguese the distinction of having reduced the Latin declension to the accusative singular and plural alone; and in this respect it differs pointedly from French and Provençal. It shows also a strong tendency to rationalize the verbal paradigm by eliminating 'irregular' past participles; but Catalan does this on the basis of the preterite stem (*venir vinguí vingut*), while Spanish and Portuguese start from the present stem (Sp. *venir vine venido*). Catalan does not share in the tendency to reduce the number of conjugations, which marks Spanish and Portuguese in all their dialects, and which must therefore be referred to the pre-dialectal state. The elimination of the third conjugation -ERE by identification with -ERE was then, doubtless, complete, and the further tendency to transfer verbs in -er to -ir had been initiated, especially for the Spanish dialects.

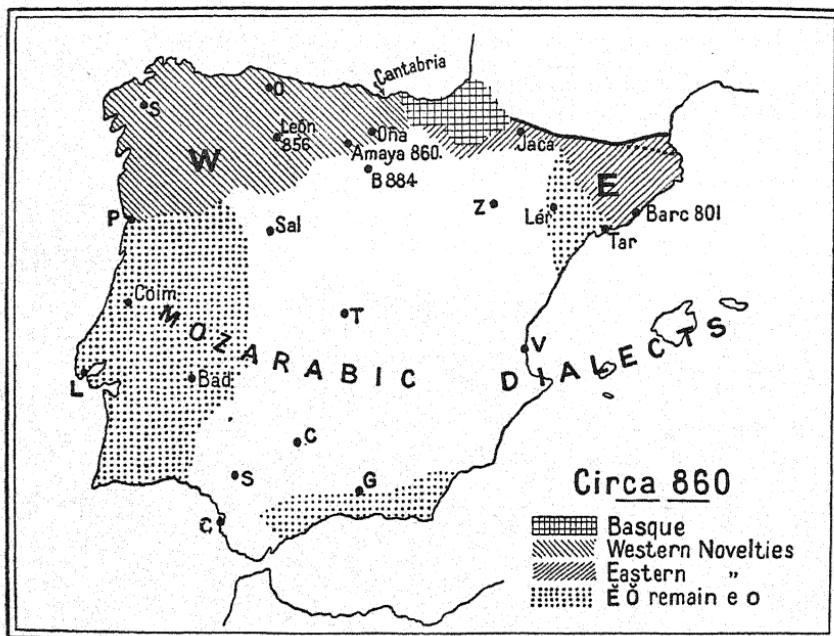
### MOZARABIC DIALECTS

The Moorish invasion of 711 flowed over the Peninsula too swiftly to allow of large displacements of population. A minute force of twelve thousand Berbers destroyed the hosts of King Roderick and captured the great cities of Sevilla, Córdoba, Orihuela and Toledo, before the Moorish generalissimo Mûṣâ ibn Nuṣair so much as set foot in the country. The first attempt at settlement occurred much later, when the contingents from Damascus and Kinnesrin were established in Granada; and even then the invaders left alone the towns, swayed by their innate passion for tent and country life. It is true that a certain number of Goths, either as being closely identified with the late régime or through love of liberty,

fled northward, and settled in village colonies in Galicia and the Asturias; but the majority even of the ruling caste remained on their estates in the south. Roderick's widow married Mūṣā's son, and it appears that enough Rodriguists remained in Córdoba to form a faction. The sons of Witiza, on the other hand, had sided with the invaders in order to retain their 3000 estates, and their chief, Ardabast, became Count of Córdoba and one of the most powerful men in the emirate. The daughters of that house married into the Arab nobility. In Murcia Theodomir surrendered to the invaders on condition of retaining the province, and in Zaragoza, Badajoz and Toledo subsequent history lies largely in the hands of Spanish renegades. As for the Hispano-Romans, they had no reason to be discontented with the change of rulers. The long Arian controversy had bred in them a sense of antagonism to the Goths, in addition to the natural contempt of Roman for German. They constituted the population of the great towns, and in the country there was plenty of room for both possessors and invaders. They had their own bishops (the *caet almatran*), and proselytism was against the interest of the state, as it exempted the convert from the capitation tax; they were ruled by their own laws and counts; and they enjoyed the use of their own language.

The establishment of the supremacy of Arabian culture did not go entirely unchallenged, and in the period of a hundred years between about 850 and 932 a sort of second Moorish conquest was effected. The emirate, founded in blood by 'Abd-al-Rahmān I and upheld by Hakam I, descended to sovereigns who loved art and ostentation more than power, and the tide of sedition steadily rose. The first protest that concerns our theme, however, was religious and cultural. It is the movement known as that of the Cordobese martyrs, limited to the capital city, and championed by St Eulogius and Alvarus of Córdoba. The story is well known. A certain Flora, deemed a Moslem because her father was one, but actually a Christian, was denounced to the *cadi* by a fanatical brother. The only legal penalty was death. The





Peninsular Romance after the Visigothic era

cadi did all in his power to have the charge withdrawn and turn a blind eye on her technical apostasy; but the inhuman brother persisted. Flora suffered martyrdom for her faith, and was supported in her steadfastness by St Eulogius. From this event, St Eulogius drew the conclusion that martyrdom was meritorious in itself, that it should be provoked as a proof of faith. There was an orgy of zealots who rushed out to blaspheme the Prophet, despite the efforts of the bishop of Córdoba to dissuade them and those of the cadi to ignore the provocation. But the sequence of suicides brought the reform to a standstill by slaying its most devoted adherents, until at length Eulogius himself provoked and suffered the martyrdom he had urged on others.

In the ruin of religious zeal was involved the ruin of an attempted Latin Renaissance, ultimately dependent on that effected in the Carolingian courts. The prestige of Latin had fallen very low in the south. Many Christians could pronounce on the niceties of Arabic style, but were incapable of writing a Latin letter. 'Heu, proh dolor! Lingua suam nesciunt christiani', exclaims Alvarus. It is not that the Christians had lost contact with their own proto-Spanish tongue, as older philologists supposed. It is rather that, with the foundering of official and cultural Latin, a gap had been established between the current *latinī* or '*ajamī* (as the Arabic authors call it) and the classical standard. Between the vernacular and '*latinum obscurum*' there had established itself for ecclesiastical purposes a '*latinum circa romanicum*' (first named in the thirteenth century by Virgil of Córdoba, but corresponding to an older state of affairs), necessarily an unstable dialect of compromise. Alvarus attacks this gibberish in his opponents as well as their heresies. He seeks to restore the purer and more ancient Latin tradition, and St Eulogius travelled as far as the Pyrenees to obtain suitable models. A Church should be zealous for its sacred language. The suicide of the zealots decided the Latin question by elimination. There remained only the Spanish vernacular and the cultural use of Arabic. The former was of no service for

literature, though doubtless the vehicle of lyrics and oral tales, and the very Canons of the Church were turned into Arabic in 1049 to guarantee their preservation.

The vernacular remained unimpaired, and it had a second chance with the revolt of the renegades in the later years of the ninth century. In the long and disastrous reign of the emir 'Abd-Allâh (888-912) the capital was surrounded by concentric rings of rebels, the most powerful of whom were renegades like Ibn Marwân of Badajoz. On the 15th April, 891, the daring *caudillo* Ibn Hafsûn advanced to the castle of Polei (Aguilar), almost within sight of the city, and forced the sultan to fight. The Cordobese approached with so little heart that the Spanish leader exclaimed 'Now we've got that herd', using the word *boyata*. But the event falsified his expectations. He was signally defeated, and hurled back on his stronghold of Bobastro, where he contrived to defend himself during the remainder of his life. He was further weakened by his return to the Christian faith, which act lost him the confidence of the renegades. Though he died in 917, the insurrection in the Serranía de Ronda was not extinguished entirely until his daughter Argentea (a Christian with a Spanish name) was captured and executed in 932.

What followed was a period of entire subjection to the central Moslem authority and to Arabian culture. The Arabs by race gained nothing from the re-establishment of order. On the contrary, the Arab aristocracy was systematically decimated; the state rested on the support of mercenaries, both northern Spaniards and Slavs. Its prestige became more and more identified with military success until, under Al-Mansûr, such triumphs were sought without any attempt at political consolidation, raids and victories being the sole end of political action. The Christian princes were tributaries at the courts of 'Abd-al-Rahmân III, Hakam II and Hishâm II, and were there made and unmade; their daughters entered the caliphal harems. But in the intervals of defeat the Christian north grew in strength and population, and made ready for the great advance of the eleventh century.

The brilliant Moslem capital began to give scope for literature. Ḥakam II collected an enormous library of 400,000 volumes, the contents of which he himself mastered during the long years of his heir-apparenzy. He inspired great historians like Ibn Ḥayyān, and traditionalists like Al-Khushānī (Aljoxanī). Schools of philosophy began to appear, though they were severely discouraged by Al-Mansūr, who wished to curry favour with the orthodox. Arabian literature still lacked the brilliance it attained in the petty courts of the early eleventh century, but it had already achieved a decided superiority over its Latin rival.

But the Spanish vernacular continued unimpaired. It was the language of all women. To enable a woman to plead her case in the courts of the capital an obliging cadi conducted the proceedings in *latinī*. For the harems of the wealthy, and of the caliph himself, Christian slave-women were preferred, and particularly those from Jalikīya (Galicia, León and Castile). The practice continued down to the fall of Granada in the person of the famous sultana Doña Isabel de Solís. The caliphs and the entire upper classes were bilingual, with Spanish for their mother-tongue. We hear that they were able to cap verses with Spanish rhymes, and the *Diwān* of Ibn Quzmān (d. 1160) employs Spanish tags, as well as a verse-form (the *zejel* or *muwaṣṣaḥa*) admittedly borrowed in the time of the first caliph by Muqaddam of Cabra from Romance models. Arabic was an official speech, but those who were not officials did not trouble to acquire it. Under 'Abd-al-Rahmān II the father of the powerful eunuch Naṣr could speak nothing but Romance. Arabic was the language of the Coran and of religion; but the Romance-speaking Yenair (JANUARIUS) of Córdoba was so famous for his virtue and orthodoxy that his testimony was accepted without question as equivalent to a legal document. It was officially decided that, in the case of an ascetic, ignorance of Arabic was not a bar to sanctity. Persons of purely Christian extraction were candidates for office, and Christian names are frequently recorded (*Vicente, Comes ben Antonián, Ibn Montiel*,

etc.), both among the populace of the capital and as pet-names in the royal family (*Sanchol*, *Royol*, Cast. *Sanchuelo*, *Rojuelo*). The Spanish Moslem populace vigorously opposed the introduction of the turban and of silk, and Ibn Khaldûn remarks on their identity in features, manners and dress with the Galicians of the north.

Our knowledge of the language they used depends on chance anecdotes, like those preserved in Al-Khushani's History of the Judges of Córdoba, where we encounter some instructive stories and the names of Romance persons; the names of places are preserved in the geographers, particularly Al-Idrîsî, while Ibn Jubair gives his dates according to both calendars, Moslem and Christian. The writers of popular Arabic lyrics, the *zejels* and *muwaṣṣahas*, adopted Romance principles of verse and quote words from the vernacular. These are frequent in Ibn Quzmân's *Diwân* (his name is the Spanish *Guzmán*), as the line in his 82nd poem

albâ albâ eš da luğ anûna dîyeh  
Alba, alba es de luz en un díá.

Further, the mediciners and botanists who went out into the country to gather their simples, found themselves in places where Arabic was unknown, and so required to know the Spanish name for the plant, and in some cases the local name where dialect variations occurred; hence the preservation of plant-names in botanical treatises like that of Ibn al-Baitar. Finally there are formal glossaries: a Leiden glossary from the eleventh century edited by Seybold, and a Valencian of the thirteenth. Our knowledge of the Arabic of Spain is chiefly drawn from the *Vocabulista in aravigo* of Fray Pedro de Alcalá (1505), which reflects both its peculiarities of pronunciation and its indebtedness to the circum-ambient Romance. The dialect he transcribes is that of Granada, and shows many features of late evolution.

The wars of the tenth and early eleventh centuries were waged between Spaniards, divided by culture and allegiance, but without extremes of religious bigotry. The Castilian victory and conquest of Toledo in 1085 forced on the south

a painful choice between race and religion. They might have settled down under the hegemony of the petty kings of Sevilla, as tributaries to Alfonso VI; but the latter's cruelty and rapacity, and the discourses of the fanatical elements in the south, caused the Moors to call over from Africa hordes of Berber allies. These allies, the Almorávides, checked the Christian advance and threw Castile on to the defensive; but they were still more effective in suppressing the liberties of southern Spaniards, whether Moslem or Christian. The Christian Mozarabs found their position especially unhappy, as they were suspected of intrigues. It was on their support that the Cid based his tenure of Valencia (1094-99), and they emigrated in a body from that city in 1101, leaving it stripped and empty to the Berber generals. The war took on a more intensely religious aspect. Even the Jews were suspected by the succeeding Almohad (*Al-Muwahhid*) dynasty. Their great school at Lucena was broken up in 1146, and they transferred their studies to Toledo, Barcelona and Languedoc, to the benefit of the Christian scientists. In 1126 a Mozarab revolt in Granada, supported by Alfonso the Battler of Aragón, misfired, and 10,000 of them followed the Aragonese army in its retreat. At length St Ferdinand led the combined Leonese and Castilian armies into the Guadaluquivir valley, capturing Córdoba (1236) and Sevilla (1248). Alfonso X reached the sea at Cádiz in 1264, and all hope of a Moorish revenge was ended by the great Christian victory of the Río Salado in 1340.

As a result of these triumphs the Moorish power was restricted to the vassal-state of Granada, where it took on a more religious and Arabian colour. But even in this quintessence of Arabian civilization it is recorded that out of 200,000 original inhabitants, only 500 were not the sons or grandsons of Christians. Bilingual persons existed, *moros latinados*, and traded on their knowledge so far as to give the word *ladino* the connotation of 'sly'. There are traces in Spanish ballads of specifically Moorish sentiments. Meanwhile the presence of large bodies of Mozarabs in the northern

kingdoms profoundly modified Spanish culture, and the dialect itself survived in notarial documents even after the rise of Castilian literature. Such documents are especially frequent at Toledo.

As the Reconquest advanced southwards the dialects of the conquerors—Portuguese, Castilian and Catalan—flowed over the ground occupied by the ancient Mozarabic in sharply defined spheres of influence (*conquistas*). Clear linguistic frontiers replace the blurred transitions characteristic of lands which have had an uninterrupted development. It is thus at the point where the band-frontiers abruptly harden into lines that we are able to plot the original limits of Mozarabic, assisted also by what we know of their population in the early Middle Ages. Southern Portugal, we note, did not speak Portuguese (*Mértola* has *-l-* between vowels contrary to Portuguese norms). Lisbon, contrary to Portuguese usage, has *-n-* between vowels in OSp. *Lisbona* Fr. *Lisbonne* Eng. *Lisbon*, as in Ar. *Al-Asbūna*; Coimbra is Froissart's *Conimbre*. Both cities were important for their Mozarabic population, and the latter was repeopled by a Mozarab, Count Sisnando. Both have been accommodated in later times to Portuguese (Sp. *Lisboa* is from the Portuguese; Ayala c. 1407 writes *Lisbona*, but *Coimbra*). On the other hand *Gaia* at the mouth of the Duero is the ancient *Cale*, whence *Portugal* (PORTUS CALE), and belongs to the Galician-Portuguese area. The Mozarabic frontier thus commenced in the west at the mouth of the Duero, which it followed inland so as to assign to Mozarabic the important cities of Salamanca, Zamora (re-walled by a Mozarab), and Toledo or *Tulaitula*. Alcalá de Henares, Guadalajara and Calatayud were Moorish bulwarks against Castile. Zaragoza or *Saraqusta* belonged also to the Mozarabic region, which reached the sea on the frontier between Valencia and Catalonia; and further embraced the Balearic islands. A point fixed by the change from band-frontier to line in the east is at Tamarite. Valencia was the home of the Banu Montiel (MONTĒLLU), who show the Spanish diphthong, and of the personage called Ibn Pascual

(*Ibn Baškuwâl*) who should rather be known as *Ibn Vascuel* ('little Basque', with the diphthong *-ue-* of the Spanish diminutive ending). The *Repartiment de Mallorca* is notable for names in *-o* (Spanish, therefore, not Catalan) at the moment of that island's pacification. Final vowels, however, except *-a*, are very frequently dropped in our authorities for Mozarabic. This may have been due to the influence of Arabic upon the orthography, since these words are recorded by authors accustomed to masculine nouns terminating in a consonant; and it probably influenced speech also. Thus we have vacillations: *mayo, bénáto = penado* 'grieved', *bádhū = vado* 'ford', *má rikéri = me requiere* 'he loves me', and *Montiel, Yenair, Bizent = Vicente, mars = marzo* 'March'. The geographer Ibn Jubair, writing in July 1187, is instructive, since he was a native of Valencia between the Cid's withdrawal and the campaigns of James the Conqueror. He uses Roman dates to correct the *Hejira* reckoning, and omits the final *-o* (e.g. *mars* 'March'), while using the diphthong in *-ai-* or *-ei-* which it is characteristic of Catalan to have early reduced to *-e-* *-o-*: thus *yenair* Cat. *gener* 'January', *febrair* Cat. *febrer* 'February'.

In this vast area there were local variations. Our authorities tell us of some differences of vocabulary in the north-eastern frontier. In Zaragoza the 'speedwell' was *bentrónica*, but in the Levante *bentónica*. In Valencia the caper was *táparaš*, not *alcaparras*; at Córdoba a kind of cloak was known as *borocán*. These and one or two more words owe their preservation mainly to the botanists in search of simples, but they do not throw light on the major differences of the Mozarabic dialects. They must be inferred from place-names, particularly those which use the diminutive suffixes *-ELLU* and *-ÖLA*. In the whole central and eastern region these terminations tend to diphthongize, though with exceptions, whereas on the south coast and in the Sierra Nevada they remain monophthongs (e.g. *Ferreirola*), and the same is generally true of Portugal in the Alemtejo, Algarve and lower Guadiana valley. We find, in this way, that there were specially conservative dialects in the west and south.

Accented Ě and Ď remain *e* and *o* in conservative parts of the country or under special influences of tradition (such as those affecting the name of an important city); but generally speaking they give diphthongs in all circumstances. These diphthongs are not fixed as to quality, but vacillate as *ia* whence also *a*) *ie* from Ě and *wa we* from Ď. Ě gives *massanélla* 'chamomile' in Córdoba, *Lopel* as diminutive from *Lope*, *ben BÉNE*, *rikéri=requiere* in Córdoba c. 1160, *Mérida EMÉRITA*; also *šahamialla* (doubtful) as well as *šahamiella* 'truffle'; *Cazalla* and *Castalla* *CASTÉLLA*; *Ibn Qardiel*, *ešpatiella* 'corn-flag', *ajetiella* Sp. *acedilla* 'wood-sorrel', etc. The forms in -ia- are not easily demonstrable, as Arabic does not effectively distinguish between *a* and *e*, though our authors frequently use á to indicate *e* in Spanish, as this was the Moghrebí pronunciation of á. Place-names in -ELLU give -iel in Valencia, Zaragoza, La Mancha, Murcia and the Guadalquivir valley, but -el in Portugal and Granada-Málaga (*Maurel Moradel*). In the case of accented Ď there is very considerable resistance to the diphthong, which, however, was normal in the same regions as those indicated for Ě: *Orihuela* in Murcia, *Teruel Cuenca Caracuey* on the upper Guadiana, *Huelva ŠNOBA*; but it is not found in the Algarve, nor in Granada (*Ferreirola*, *Albuñol*), and in Córdoba there was sporadic resistance. Ibn Quzmân of Córdoba (c. 1160) writes *bún bono* for *bueno*, and nicknames were *Sanchol* (*San-chuelo*) *Royol* (*Rojuelo* 'ruddy, Rufus'). On the other hand Valencia seems to have favoured the diphthong: *Vascuel*, *Mauchuel*. Whether *we* or *wa* is intended in any given case can hardly be determined from Arabic spellings, and vacillations between them and *o* are very frequent: *puerco porco* 'pig', *lahtairuela laitarola* Cat. *lleterola*, the name of a plant with milky sap. The diphthong was not prevented by the neighbourhood of a palatal, as in Castilian: *Caracuey* -oir, *welyo negro ŠCULU NIGRU* Cast. *ojo negro*, the name given to a kind of nettle.

In respect of the unaccented vowels, the most remarkable feature of Mozarabic is the facility wherewith final -e and -o

are lost, apparently under the influence of Arabic prejudices. Ibn Quzmân keeps the final vowel in *katibu* = *ca(p)tivo* 'prisoner', *waštāṭo* = *gastado* 'wasted', *roṭonṭo* = *redondo* 'round', *má rikēri* = *me requiere* 'loves me', *dunuxti* = *de noche* 'by night'; but he drops it in *bún* = *bueno* 'good', *baṣṭit* = *bastido* 'well set-up', *ešt* = *este* 'this', *masqūl* = *masculo*, etc. It is wanting in the names of months and in many place-names.

As for the diphthongs AI AU, they remained as diphthongs. The quality of the former cannot be decided from Arabic spellings, but Pedro de Alcalá shows that it was still occasionally *ai* after the fall of Granada. Doubtless *ei* also occurs, as in Ibn Quzmân's *atarey ataré* 'I shall bind', and in the place-name in Granada *Ferreirola*. For *ou* the Arabic script does offer means of discrimination, and it is clear that both forms persisted in the south as late as the fall of Granada. Thus Sp. *losa* 'flag-stone' is *lauša* in the thirteenth-century vocabulary, and *Laujar* as a place-name. At Valencia there were the *Banu Mauchuel*, but at Sevilla in the tenth century the *Banu Mourgāṭ MAURECATU*. It is in the stage *ei ou* that Mozarabic strikingly resembles Galician-Portuguese, to which it stands in a relationship of greater archaism. *ei* is still a diphthong in standard Portuguese, but *ou* is either a close vowel [ø] or has suffered dissimilation to *oi*: *cousa coisa*, *ouro oiro* Sp. *cosa oro*. Mozarabic examples are: AI *pandair* = *pandero* 'tambourine', *šemtair* = *sendero* 'path', *baika baiga bega* = *vega*, *lahtaira* 'yellow bed-straw', and the place names *Poqueira*, *Junqueiro*, etc.; AU, as above. The ending *-AGINE* gives *-ain* in Mozarabic, where Castilian has *-én*: *plantain* Cast. *llantén* 'plantain'.

In its treatment of consonants also the Mozarabic dialect was highly conservative. It had no share in the north-western change of initial PL- CL- FL- to palatals, which took place in Galician, Portuguese, Leonese, Castilian, and to a slight extent also in Aragonese. In this respect it agrees with Catalan: *PLANTAGINE* Moz. *plantain* Cat. *plantatge*. Like all the Peninsular languages and dialects other than Castilian, Mozarabic preserved initial J- ġ-: *JANUARIU* Moz. *yenair* Cast.

enero 'January' Cat. *gener* Ptg. *janeiro*. The phonetic value was [j], reflected in the place-names Yunquera and Tayunquera, but also occasionally [χ], affricate voiced palatal, as Junquera (MSp. pronunciation [χ], Ast. [š], Gal. [š], Cat. Ptg. [ž]). L- initial was sporadically palatalized in the south as in other parts of the Peninsula (west Leonese and the Bable dialects of Asturian, eastern Aragonese and Catalan). So the 'bugloss' is given by Ibn Kholkhol as *yengua buba* LINGUA BUBULA (y- from *ll-* from L-). f survived, as in all Romania save Castile and Gascony: *furn Buriel* 'Burriel's oven' at Córdoba, Cast. *horno*.

The most important among the medial sounds is the consonant-group -ct-, which shows remarkable archaisms in Mozarabic. The general resolution of this group is, as in all Western Romance but Castilian, -it-: *leitejinos* ModArag. *lechecinos* 'sow-thistle', *leitilgas* Cast. *lechugas* 'lettuces', *leiterola*, all from LACTE-. At the other end of this scale we have the Latin -ct- preserved in Ibn Jubair's *oktúbar* 'October', which Pedro de Alcalá writes *ogtubar*, possibly to represent that the c was not completely occlusive, as it is not in Modern Spanish. This voiceless velar fricative passed into a laryngeal aspirate as *h* in Al-Kazwînî's *truh̥ta* 'trout' TRUCTA, or *χ* in Ibn Quzmân's *dunuχti* Cast. *de noche* 'by night', and Ibn Kholkhol's *laxtaira=cuajaleche* 'yellow bed-straw', and in *laxtairuela*, equivalent to *leiterola*. Thus Mozarabic contained simultaneously all the stages through which this change has been operated in Romance, commencing with the failure to pronounce the c as completely occlusive, and ending in the palatal semi-vowel. Medial -cl- and -li- develop into -ll- [λ] in Mozarabic, as in Romance of the West, and thence into -y- or even [ž]. So ĀCULU gives *welyo* 'eye', *follar* Cast. *hojaldre* 'puff-paste', *konelyo* 'rabbit'. This is the pronunciation used by Toledan Mozarabs in the thirteenth century: *fillo mulleres* Cast. *hijo mujeres*. But *konjair* 'dog used in hunting rabbits' shows [j] derived from [i], and that from [λ], as in Modern Argentine; and *Dar-al-viejo* is due to popular etymology for *Dar-al-belyo* where the [λ] had passed to [ž].

and so resembled the pronunciation of Cast. *j*. In PACE AUGUSTI *Badajoz* we have the stage *\*baʃayóš*, with dissimilation of the two [ʃ]; in Ptg. *Badalhouce* and Moz. *Baʃalyds* the [λ] is a hyper-correction of *y*. The opposition between Castilian and Mozarabic usage in this matter was felt by the author of the *Poema del Cid*, a Mozarab of the Medinaceli region, when he wrote *Gujera* for *Cullera*, and *Castejón* for *Castellón*.

Mozarabic agrees with the eastern dialects of the Peninsula, against the north-western bloc, by preserving many voiceless occlusives between vowels. The participial ending -ATU is given regularly as *-aʃo*, and other instances as *Garnáṭa* or *Agarnáṭa* for Granada, *toto* for *todo* 'all', *boyaṭa* 'herd' = *manada de bueyes*, *roʃonṭo* for *redondo* 'round'. Sometimes this voiceless consonant was restored by ultra-correction, as *Qóṛṭuba* CÓRDUBA. The voiced forms were also known, as AQUA *agua*, AQUILA *águila* (with *ghain*). On the other hand, -F- showed a strong tendency to pass into a voiced fricative represented by *u*: *prouiciscor* PROFICISCOR, *reuocilo* REFOCILO, in the Latin of Mozarabic notaries, together with ultra-corrections like *referendus* for REVERENDUS.

The sibilants included [ʃ ʒ], spelled with *jim*, a cacuminal *s*, and *g z*. The *jim* of Arabic corresponds with the Hebrew *gimel*, and was at first used to represent *g*. Thus Galicia was *Jalikīya*, and the Tagus *Tájo* or *Téjo*. In the latter case the Latin *g* has been replaced by the Arabic *j*. The cacuminal [ʃ] and its corresponding voiced sound seemed to Arabian ears to be palatals of the nature of [š ʒ], and it is by *shín* that they are represented. Italian *s* was not of this nature in Sicily, and so Ibn Jubair writes *Siqiliya* and *Sarqusa* for Sicily and Syracuse with *s*, but *šetember* for September (cf. his *Šaflūdī* for Cefalu, indicating the palatal, but not the affrication). In such words as Sp. *jabón* OSp. *xabón* SAPONE 'soap', the palatal is due to Arabic interference with the Spanish *s*, and similarly the *ch* of *albérchigo* PERSICU 'peach'. The *g z* sounds were opposed to the cacuminal *s* as being sibilants pronounced with the tip of the tongue directed, not towards the gums or fore-palate, but behind the lower teeth. In this way they

resembled an *s* or *z*, and were written with *sín* or *zái* according as they were voiceless or voiced: *mars* = *marzo* 'March', *Bizent* in Al-Khushanî for *Vicente* (not *Jacinto* as Dozy supposed). If the forepart of the tongue happens to touch momentarily the teeth in the pronunciation of this *s*, an affricate results of the nature of *ts dz* [ṣ ḷ], representable by the Arabic *jím*. So, in Ibn Quzmân, *bīj* = *pez* PISCE, *lūj* = *luz* LUCE. In this way the Mozarabic dialect was able to transform Latin *st* into *ts* and *ſ*: CAESARAUGUSTA Ar. *Saraqūṣṭa* OSp. *Caragoça*, ASTIGI Sp. *Écija*. *P* existed in Mozarabic Spanish, but had no place in the Arabic alphabet, where it could only be represented by *b*, or medially by *bb* to mark the unvoicing; hence, doubtless through official influence, the *b* in *Beja*, *Badajoz* PACE- and *albérchigo* PERSICU. *Beja* also represents the Moghrebî pronunciation [e] of long *ā*, commonly employed to denote an accented *a* of Romance.

The Mozarabic dialect persisted in Toledo among the inhabitants of the six Mozarabic parishes throughout the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, where local forms still appear in conflict with the prevailing Castilian usages of the chancery, and ejaculatory formulæ of respect are added to the names of persons and places as they are mentioned in the documents. But the later history of the dialect is still somewhat obscure. There was indubitably a measure of substitution. The Andalusians speak now a dialect of Castilian, the Valencians of Catalan, the inhabitants of Algarve of Portuguese, the Moriscos of Aragonese until their expulsion. Was Mozarabic eliminated because it was generally like an archaic and out-of-date version of each victorious dialect? Was there a compromise, and if so how was it effected? What, in particular, does Andaluz owe to Mozarabic, if anything? The answer to such questions must be delayed until Andaluz is adequately surveyed. In the Toledo region, however, it is notable that literary Spanish is not identical with Old Castilian, but has effected some compromise with Leonese. Such a compromise would also be a compromise with Mozarabic, and the great influence of persons of this class in the

literary circles of Alfonso the Wise and Don Juan Manuel suggests that they may have been instrumental in shaping standard literary Spanish.

### SPANISH ARABIC

The Arabic language current in Al-Andalus resembled most intimately that of western Africa to-day, and particularly Morocco; but it contained features which forbid its identification with surviving dialects. As described by Pedro de Alcalá in 1505, the Granadine dialect is much more modern than that which gave to Spanish its numerous loan-words. This is especially noticeable in the *imála*, the process by which *ā* has passed to *i*. Pedro de Alcalá reports the final stage, but the evidence of the loan-words points to an intermediate *e*, and there are many cases of *a*. It is noteworthy that Ar. *th dh* continued to have the pronunciations [θ δ], though represented in the loan-words by *t d*. The smooth breathing was non-existent in Al-Andalus, and the rough breathing 'ain tended to pass into an *h* or *a* or to disappear. As the *s* of Arabic was dorsoalveolar [s] it was deemed equivalent to Sp. *g*, but never to Sp. *s* [s̪] which was rendered by Ar. *š*.

The conquest occurred in the first century of the Hejira, and the language brought by the victors contained some archaic features, which later disappeared. Especially is this noted of the letter *jim*. Listed as a guttural by Arabian phoneticians and corresponding to Heb. *gimel*, this letter had at first the value [g], and as such was used to transcribe place-names: *GALLAECIA* *Jalikīya*, *TAGU* Sp. *Tajo* Ptg. *Tejo*, PACE *Bajja* etc. Later the *jim* became an affricate or fricative palatal [j ū], and the equivalent of Sp. *g* was *ghain*. In some cases this new value has been forced on the Spanish word, as in *Tajo Beja*, but in others it has been ineffectual, as in *Galicia*. Another primitive pronunciation was the value [g] given to *qāf*. This also appears principally in place-names: *GADES* *Qādīs* *CAESARAUGUSTA* *Saraqūṣṭa*. The later value was a velar [k], and the different results in Sp. *Cádiz* *Zaragoza*

show that the change sometimes, but not always, affected the indigenous term. The language was equally archaic in respect of the emphatic letters *dád* and *tá*. For the former, the large application of the tongue to the fore-palate caused native phoneticians to describe the sound as escaping over the molars, and so of a lateral nature. It was a *d* with some of the characteristics of an *l*, and consequently was represented in Romance by *ld*: Ar. *al-qádī* Sp. *alcalde* 'judge, mayor'. For the latter, the emphatic pronunciation involved constriction of the larynx and consequently partial vibration of the vocal chord; it was a voiceless *t*, but partially resembled *d*. Thus it stood for the *d* of Romance words (*Córdoba* Ar. *Qórtuba*, *rotonjo* = *redondo*) without necessarily implying that these sounds were unvoiced; at the same time it was preferred to represent Romance *t*, as the emphatic utterance constituted a sort of acclimatization of the foreign word.

In the case of the aspirate gutturals, the change to be noted is one which occurs in Romance. In the early centuries there was only *k* available, indicating the guttural nature of these sounds, but not the aspiration. Hence some place-names and common nouns represent the Arabic aspirate gutturals by *c*. Later, from the eleventh century, and still more from the end of the twelfth, the spread of the Castilian aspirate *h*, and its correspondence with the *f* of the other dialects, caused the Arabic aspirates to be rendered by *f* in Portuguese and Catalan and by *fh* in Castilian.

On the Arabic of Spain consult A. Steiger, *Contribución a la fonética del hispano-árabe y de los arabismos en el ibero-románico y el siciliano* (Madrid, 1932), who revises the conclusions of Dozy et Engelmann, *Glossaire des mots espagnols et portugais, dérivés de l'arabe* (2nd ed. Leiden, 1869).

#### THE ARABIC ELEMENT IN SPANISH

It was the business of the Mozarabs, these Spanish-speaking Christians under Moslem rule, to make easy the passage into Spanish of a considerable Arabic vocabulary. They

required for their own use, and adapted to Romance norms, a large number of terms dealing with administration and the organization of society, commerce and industry, partly to indicate things new to, or best developed in, Al-Andalus, and partly because the administrative tongue was Arabic. What they borrowed were the names of things; there is only the slightest trace of Arabic in Spanish syntax, and no community of spirit. As an effective contribution to word-formation we note only the suffix *-i*; *jabalí* 'boar', *Alfonso*, etc. The phonetic bases of the tongues also were quite distinct, and it is in the substitution of sounds required for the Romance adaptations that the bilingual Mozarabs must have exerted their influence. Bilingual Moslems (*moros latinados*) may have helped, and still more the Jews. The latter have transmitted little of their own language to Spanish and its sisters; merely such liturgical terms as have become international, like *Tora*, *Talmud*, *Gehena*, *taled* (a ceremonial head-covering), and, in Greek translation, *filacteria* 'phylactery'. Apart from the liturgy and the poetry used therein, the Spanish Jews supported the culture and prestige of Arabic, and wrote important philosophical works which were only subsequently rendered into Hebrew. When expelled from the Moorish territories in the twelfth century, they carried with them, it is true, a Hebrew culture which gave Spain a notable series of achievements in that tongue during the Middle Ages and Renaissance, but they were employed primarily in translating for schoolmen the philosophy of the Arabians, or in practising such professions as medicine, on the basis of Græco-Arabian treatises. The Jews, therefore, must be included among the supporters and translators of Arabic, but they had neither the numbers nor the good repute to authorize the passage of Arabic words into Spanish, Portuguese and Catalan. This was the work of Mozarabs.

The task of adaptation included the treatment of Arabic finals, the rendering of difficult consonants, and the solution of consonant-groups repugnant to Romance. In respect of finals, only nouns come into consideration, as the verbs bor-

rowed have purely Romance terminations. Nunation was not in practice in the colloquial, and so leaves no trace in Spanish borrowings. The feminine normally ended in *-a*, which offered an easy analogy with Spanish feminines in *-a*. A tendency to regard towns as feminine caused several in *-e* to pass, through Mozarabic and Arabic mediation, into *-a*: BARCINONE *Barṣalūna* *Barcelona*, ASTIGI *Iṣṭījī* *Écija*, OLISIPONE *Al-Āṣbūna* *Lisboa*, HISPALI *Isbiliya* *Sevilla*, ILIBERRI *Ilbīra* *Elvira* (near Granada). In TOLETU *Toledo* the Arabic doublet *Tulaitūla* has exerted no influence. SCIPIONE *Chipiona* owes the initial and final to this interference. The feminine ending was, however, actually in *-at*, and the *t* may make its presence felt in compounds, as *qal'at Ayyūb* 'Job's castle' *Calatayud*.

Arabic masculine nouns commonly end in consonants, many of which are inadmissible in Romance. In this respect the work of adaptation was carried out very thoroughly, and sound-substitution was normal. Either, for the obnoxious consonant there was substituted one current in Ibero-Romance (*Ayyūb* *-ayud*; *al-**aqrab* 'scorpion' Sp. *alacrán* Ptg. *alacram* *alacrão*), or an additional *-e* smoothed away the difficulty (*al-**xayyāt* 'tailor' OSp. *alfayate* Ptg. *alfaiate*; *al-**duff* 'tambourine' Sp. Ptg. *adufe*). An *-o* occurs in *albérchigo* 'peach' Ar. *al-firsiq* PERSICU, which is really a Romance word; and in Sp. *alhóndiga* OCat. *alfóndech* 'granary' Ptg. *alfândega* 'custom-house', Ar. *al-fundaq* 'inn', and other similar instances, there has been a change of gender. Masculine nouns have normally 'broken' plurals, that is, their vowels are changed to indicate plurality. The Romance borrowings may be made from either the singular or the plural, e.g. *adarme* 'drachma' from the plural *al-dardāhim*, not the singular *al-dirham*.

In medieval loan-words it was customary to take over the article *al-* as part of the word, assimilated to the initial when assimilated in Arabic (*t th d dh s š z l n r*). The article is not used when a noun stands before another in a genitive relation: *qal'at Ayyūb* 'the castle of Job' (not *al-qal'a*). This so-called construct case is represented in Spanish: *Calatayud*

OSp. *zavazoke* Ar. *ṣáhib al-súq* 'market superintendent', OSp. *zalmedina* Ar. *ṣáhib al-medína* 'intendant of the city', etc.

Within the word there also occurred sounds and combinations ungrateful to Romance ears. An *l* added to *d* had the effect of rendering the lateral element of emphatic *d*, as well as making the pronunciation of *d* necessarily occlusive: Sp. *aldea* Ptg. *aldeia* Cat. *aldea* Ar. *al-dai'a* (pron. *ad-d*) 'village', Sp. Ptg. *alcalde* Ar. *al-qádī* 'city-magistrate, mayor'. The numerous aspirate gutturals of Arabic presented a further difficulty, and were variously represented by gutturals (*c g*), aspirates (*h f*), or ignored. It is particularly to be noted that no contact occurred between the modern Castilian guttural aspirate *jota* and interdental *zeta* and the Arabic sounds of the same value. The former were never represented by *j*, and the latter only by *t* in medieval Spanish, Portuguese and Catalan. The Arabic *shín* [š] corresponded to the Sp. Ptg. Cat. *x*, and to cacuminal *s*; with the result that some instances of Latin *s* were transformed into *x* through Arabic interference. Arabic *jím* [j ź] corresponded sufficiently to the Romance *j*.

Groups of consonants are especially frequent in the Western Arabic to which that of Al-Andalus belonged. The accented vowels are stressed, and the unaccented vowels dwindle into 'fugitive' sounds. These sounds become full vowels in Romance loan-words, but are not always those of the original Arabic. Thus-*quivir* in *Guadalquivir* is Ar. *kabír* 'big', *Moghrebí* *kbír*. In other cases the group belongs to all Arabic: *qaṣr* 'castle' gives Sp. *alcázar* Ptg. *alcáçar* and *alcácer(e)*; *Ibn* became *Aben* 'son' (in patronymics). Initially consonant-groups do not occur in standard Arabic, and those of Romance are represented in Arabic script with an initial *alif* (*Al-Afranj* 'the Franks') or with an intrusive vowel (*Garnáṭa* *Granada*).

If we make a representative list of arabisms in Spanish and its sister languages, we note that the words are almost always names of objects or institutions connected with a certain stage of culture. Intimate intercourse of the two languages, which lived together for 800 years, is rare. Sp. *he* in *hete* 'here you have...', *he aquí* (OSp. *afe fe ahe he e*) is

the Ar. *hâ* (pron. *he* in Al-Andalus), which is used in the same way with pronouns and simple adverbs of place: *hâka*, *hâhunâka*. The *a-* prefix, when it occurs, is probably due to analogy with the *a-* of other demonstratives: *aquí*, *acá*, *aquel*, etc. *Yâ* 'oh' (vocative) appears in the epic language: *ya Cid*. In Morisco works it occurs as *ye* also: *Ye Saad*; *ye mi Alá* 'oh my God'. *Hamihala*, in the twelfth-century *Auto de los Reyes Magos*, is an unexplained interjection, perhaps introducing the word *Allâh*, though some have taken it for a proper name, accompanied by the exclamation 'ha'. In *ojalá* OSp. Ptg. *oxalá* we find the Ar. *wa šâ' Allâh* 'if God will, would that'. Ar. *hâttâ* 'until' gives Ptg. *até*, *té* OSp. *fata*; under the influence of \*FACIA Sp. *facia hacia* 'towards' it became the MSp. *hasta*, medieval *fasta*. There were also a handful of verbs, as *alifar* 'polish' *ahorrar* 'save'.

The Moorish organization was most striking for novelty and effectiveness in warfare. In place of the heavy-armed line of knights they employed light cavalry, who broke the line by pretending to retreat and then suddenly rallying against their pursuers—the method *al-karr w-al-farr*, retreat and rally. Hence the Moorish king in a ballad shouts *alcarria*, *moros*, *alcarria*. The Moorish rear (*zaga* Ar. *sâqa*) was as important as the Christian van (*delantero*); according to Fernão Lopes the Earl of Cambridge's expedition of 1381 introduced a new system of tactics, together with the new terms *avanguarda* and *retaguarda*. The Moorish campaign was a razzia (Sp. Ptg. *algara* Ar. *al-ğâra*); it was conducted amid uproar (Sp. Ptg. *algarada* OCat. *algarrada* Ar. *al-‘arrâda*) at the moment of an attack, accentuated by drums and shrill trumpets (*atambores*, *añafiles* Ar. *al-nafir*), preceded by a muster (*alarde* Ar. *al-‘ard*), and led by *adalides* (Ar. *al-dalîl*). There were horsemen (*alférez* Ar. *al-fâris*) and skirmishers (Cat. *almogàver* Ar. *al-muğâwar*), and among their accoutrements one notes the scimitar (*alfanje* Ar. *al-χanjar*), targe (*adarga* Ar. *al-darqa*) and saddle-bag (*alforja* Ar. *al-χurj*). The organization of the Moorish fortresses was also important; the *alcázares* (Ar. *al-qâṣr*) and *alcazabas* (Ar. *al-qâṣaba*), commanded by

their *alcaides* (Ar. *al-qāid*), and protected by their battlements (*almenas* and *adarves* Ar. *al-man'* *al-darb*). Against reprisals the Moors depended on their look-outs (*atalayas* Ar. *al-talā'ih* 'scouts' plural), and their detached castles (*Alcalá* in place-names, Ar. *al-qal'a*). A complicated quasi-monastic organization for war is revealed by such words as OSp. *arrobda*, *Arrábita*, *Almorávides* (Ar. *murábitūnā*), etc., which furnished models to the Christian orders of Calatrava, Alcántara, etc.

The head of the state for war and peace was the caliph, emir, or *Miramamolín* (Ar. *amīr al-mu'minīn* 'commander of the Faithful'), who relied on his vizier (*alguacil* Ar. *al-wazīr*). The city magistrate was the *alcalde* (Ar. *al-qādī* 'judge'), and there were those who superintended various departments of activity, like the *zalmedina* (Ar. *sāhib al-madīna* 'ruler of the city'), an official who continued in Aragonese administration, *zavazoke* (Ar. *sāhib al-sūq* 'ruler of the market'), *almojarife* 'inspector, collector of the royal dues' (Ar. *al-mušrif*), *almotacén* 'inspector of weights and measures' (Ar. *al-muhtasib*). The market-place (*zoco* in the Toledan *Zocodover* Ar. *sūq al-dawwār* 'village market'), the customs-house (*aduana* Ar. *al-dīwān*, which gives also the modern *diván*), the arsenal (*dársena* Ar. *dār ṣan'a al-bahr* 'house of marine works'), the store-house (*almacén* 'shop' Ar. *al-māzān*), were important aids to administration, which required a more elaborate classification of communities into cities (*Medina* in place-names), suburbs (*arrabal* Ar. *al-rabad*), villages (*aldea* Ar. *al-dai'a*, *aduar* Ar. *al-dawwār*), districts (Ar. *balad* in *Vélez-Málaga*, *al-hauz* in *Alfoz de Lara*).

An accurate scale of weights and measures, and a money standard facilitated the heavy commerce of the southern cities. Dry measures were especially useful: *quintales*, *arrobas*, *almudes*, *cahices*, *fanegas*, *maquillas*. The carat (*quilate* Ar. *qīrāt*) measured gold and precious stones; the *adarme* and *azumbre*, liquids. The coinage of the Almorávides (*maravedí*) long served as the basis of northern coinage. The classification of city tradesmen showed that division of labour had gone far. There were the tailors (Ar. *al-χayyāt* OSp. Ptg. *alfaiate*), potters

(*alfarero* Ar. *al-faxxár*), pack-saddlers (*albardero* from *albarda* Ar. *al-barda* 'a saddle'), farriers (*albeitar* Ar. *al-baīṭar*), barbers (OPtg. *alfageme* Ar. *al-hajjám* 'cupper, barber'), carpenters (*albañil* Ar. *al-banni*) and architects (*alarife* Ar. *al-‘arif*). The elegance and comfort of Moorish houses were striking. They were of sun-dried bricks (*adobe* Ar. *al-ṭūb*), often adorned with bluish ornamented tiles (*azulejos*, from *azul* 'blue' Ar. *lāzu-ward* 'lapis lazuli'), with terraces for coolness (*azotea* Ar. *al-suṭaiḥa*), with convenient alcoves (*alcoba* Ar. *al-qubba*) and porticos (*zaguan* Ar. *saṭwán*), and made sanitary by culverts (*alcantarilla*). The minstrel class gave to Spanish a remarkable list of instruments, whether Arabic or Greek Arabicized, sufficient to constitute half the medieval orchestra: the lute, rebec, canon, dulcimer, drum, kettledrum, trumpet, etc.

The state rested on agriculture, and the agriculture on the water-supply. Water was conserved and used with a skill that has since fallen into decay; the Valencian Huerta is an indication of the once blooming condition of all Al-Andalus. There were names for various kinds of supply: the *albufera* or *albuera* 'lagoon' (Ar. *al-buhair*), the *alberca* (Ar. *al-birká*) 'pool', the *aljibe* *aljube* 'well' (Ar. *al-jubb*). Water was gathered by weirs with sluices (*azuda* Ar. *al-sudd*) and raised to higher levels with water-wheels (*noria* Ar. *ná‘úra*). Rice (*arroz* Ar. *al-ruzz*) and oil (*aceite* Ar. *al-zait*), together with the olive (*aceituna* Ar. *al-zaitún*), were staple crops of the south, as were also the orange (*naranja* Ar. *náranj*), the apricot (*albaricoque* Ar. *al-barqúq*) and the peach (*albérchigo*). One notes also salt-wort (*acelga* Ar. *al-silq*), the carob bean (*algarroba* Ar. *al-χarruba*) and the lupin (*atramuz* Ar. *al-tarmus*). The names of these much-wandered plants are not always pure Arabic. *Albaricoque* and *albérchigo* are from the Latin; *atramuz* and *acelga* from the Greek; *albérchigo* PERSICU means the 'Persian fruit', and Persian is the origin of *naranja* and *algarroba*. Spanish Arabic was more important as a carrier than as an originator of refinement.

This position as mediator is evident in the important scientific contributions made by Arabic to Europe. In the

sphere of mathematics, arithmetic was long known as *algorismo* from the great mathematician *Al-Khwarismi*; and together with 'Arabian' numerals (really an ancient Indian alphabet), came the cypher (*cifra* Ar. *sifr*) which made rapid calculation possible. Similarly, *algebra* was theirs (*al-jabr*), together with its basic symbol *x* (Ar. *šai*, Sp. *xei* = 'thing'). In the mixed science and pseudoscience of astronomy and astrology, there are numerous Arabic terms (like *zenith*, *nadir*, *theodolite*) which are international in range. Many of the more brilliant stars are, for the same reason, called by Arabic names, while the most prominent remain Latin together with the constellations. Beside Sirius, Capella, Arcturus, etc., we have in all European languages *Aldebaran*, *Algol*, *Betelgeuse*, *Alkor*, *Atair*, *Rigel*, *Deneb*, *Akrab*, etc.

The Spanish map has been, to a considerable extent, renamed in Arabic. Ar. *Wâdî* 'river' appears in *Guadalquivir* 'the big river' (Ar. *kabîr*), *Guadiana* 'the Anas river', *Guadalete* 'the river Lethe', *Guadalajara* 'the river of the stony place' (*al-hajjâra*), *Guadalaviar* 'the white river' (*al-abyad*), *Guadarrama* 'the river of sand' (*al-ramla*), etc. ACCI gave *Iš*, and then *Wâdî-Iš* *Guadix*. The name of Guadalajara city was, for Arabic geographers, *Medînat al-dâhiya* 'the frontier town'. This word Ar. *medîna* 'town' is also frequent: *Medinaceli* (*Sâlim* 'of Selim'), *Medina Sidonia*, *Medina del Campo*. Other names have a military significance, as *Alcalá* (Ar. *qal'a* 'castle, fort'); Ar. *'isn* 'castle' (rare) in *Iznalloz*. *Gibraltar* and *Gibralfaro* have *jabal* 'hill' ('Târiq's hill', 'lighthouse hill'). The *Albufera* of Valencia is based on *al-buhair* 'the lagoon', and *Algeciras* on *al-jazîrat al-χadrâ* 'the green island', substituted for the ancient name *Carteya*. The famous Roman bridge over the Tagus gives rise to *Alcántara* 'the bridge', *Valencia de Alcántara*; and the word is connected with other bridges and aqueducts. These names are especially frequent in the region of Granada, with its *Alhambra* (*al-ħamrâ* 'the red', fem.) *Generalife* (*janna(t)* *al-‘arîf* 'the architect's garden'), etc. The Granadine *Vivarrambla* means 'gate of the sandy way' (*Bâb al-ramla*), and Barcelona's *Ramblas* have the same

word. The Toledan *Puerta de Visagra* is twice named, since *vi-* means *puerta*. Ar. *Bāb* 'gate' was pronounced with *imāla* [bib].

This Arabic influence reached its apogee in the tenth century, when the Mozarabic element of the Leonese population was carrying the weight of that kingdom's culture. Documents of that era contain the words that modern dictionaries record, together with others (like *zavazoke* or *alhajara*) that had disappeared before the first Castilian masterpieces were recorded, or vanished in the course of the sixteenth century. The rise of Castilian to primacy over Leonese was a deadly blow to the Arabic innovations. The Spanish language turned its back on Arabic, and sought inspiration in French and Latin. The Arabic vocabulary has continued to decline, and belongs largely to the less used part of the lexicon. The names of things suffer with the change of fashion. The French tailor (Sp. *sastre*) triumphs over the Moor (Ptg. *alfaiate*); the vizier sinks into the policeman (*alguacil*), or rather 'Bow Street runner', since the modern police forces use Latin terms; the *alférez* 'horseman', who acted as Constable to Sancho II in the eleventh century, in the sixteenth had no horse but only carried the company standard for his *capitán*, and he has since given way to the *teniente*. In view of this it is surprising how much that is primary and permanent bears an Arabic name: *alcalde* *alcaide* *arroz* *laúd* *cifra* *cénit* *x* etc. It is, however, a long cry from the tenth century, when *Cite* 'my lord' (*Cid Ruy Díaz* is the last of these) gave the patronymic *Citez*, and there was even a *Mafumetez*; while Christians called themselves *Zeit diaconus*, *Abdalla presbyter*.

#### ASTURO-LEONESE

The Mozarabic dialect, cut off from literature and devoid of administrative prestige, continued in a state of arrested development, and the hegemony in Spanish lay, during the earlier centuries of the Reconquest, with Galicia and León.

The former province, which seemed the more important to the Moslem enemy, gave birth to the Galician, and ultimately the Portuguese, language—a language rich in vowels subtly nuanced, and adapted to the needs of a wistful lyric muse. In the latter was developed the Asturo-Leonese dialect—or rather dialects, since they never attained unity but were only accommodated by a series of official compromises. A middle way of speech was sought which would give expression to the reunion of Spanish Christendom in a state recalling the glory of the Gothic kings; but this *koiné* could not be standardized in the absence of a vernacular chancery and literature. Latin was the language of the few men of learning—mostly Mozarabs—who compiled chronicles in León, and a popularized Latin was the language of the law.

Though the Christian revolt broke out first in the region of Gijón under Pelayo, it gathered strength in the western Cantabrian mountains. From thence, about the year 750, Alfonso I made a desert of Portugal and León as far as the Duero, and so gained a respite for the refugee colonies of Goths and Swabians in Galicia and the Asturias. The capital was established at Cangas de Onís; then at Oviedo. At Oviedo Alfonso II felt the influence of Charlemagne's prestige and victories, and possibly married a French princess and became some sort of client-king to the Emperor. These relationships have been so traversed by epic legend in later centuries that it is difficult to make positive assertions. The king's epic reputation for pusillanimity, at least, cannot be deserved, for it was Alfonso II who first seems to have dreamt of the 'empire' of the Spains. He was a *magnus rex*, that is to say, he was king of León as others were sovereigns elsewhere in the Peninsula, but he alone was hegemon and the successor of those who had ruled all Spain from Toledo. This idea grew under his successors. Alfonso III 'the Great' was again a *magnus rex*, but took upon himself the more high-sounding by-name of *imperator*, and by affecting to discover at Vizeu the tomb of the last of the Goths, he made unequivocal his claim to the hegemony of all Spain. An

'empire' of the Spains was thus vaguely adumbrated, and was associated with coronation at León until the elaborate ceremony performed for Alfonso VII in 1135. By that time, however, the seat of power had been transferred to Castile, and the Leonese pretence was gradually forgotten. This 'empire' was not incompatible with local independence. It represented a claim to speak on behalf of Spain as a whole, and is reflected in later literature by the circumstance that medieval Portuguese and Catalan chronicles restrict their scope to local affairs, leaving to Castilian the task of compiling general chronicles.

Oviedo was embellished with a metropolitan church, handsomely appointed; but it was too far north for the convenience of government when the tide of conquest and colonization swept back over León. The desert created by Alfonso I could only be held if it were effectively occupied, and the problem of the Leonese kings was to hold as much territory as they had numbers to settle. Hence there are waves of colonization across León, with intervals for recuperation. The first notable advance was achieved by Ordoño I (850-66), who occupied the northern third of this area: Tuy near the Minho, Astorga, León city, and Amaya in northern Castile. The last three fortresses controlled the great road which threads the north of the Peninsula from Roncesvalles to Santiago, south of the Cantabrian range. Settlers from all parts were summoned to occupy this area, and their colonies may be identified in village-names: *Toldaos* (Toledan Mozarabs in Galicia), *Toldanos* (by León), *Villagallegos*, *Castellanos*, *Báscones* (by Oviedo and near Amaya) and *Vascois* (on the Sil in Galicia). The occupation of northern Portugal and central León was carried out by Ordoño's successor Alfonso III (866-914), despite several grave Moorish invasions. His fortresses were Lamego, Vizeu, and even Coimbra in Portugal, Toro and Zamora to guard the line of the Duero (which he walled round with the aid of Mozarabs), Dueñas, Simancas, and Burgos (884). The last-named colony had important consequences for Spain. Immediately it allowed a rectification

of the great transverse road, which was less comfortable for use running so far north as Amaya. More distantly, it assured the hegemony of Castilian. Instead of occupying the ancient Cantabria or Bardulia, a mountainous strip on both sides of the Cantabrians, backed against the Basque border, Castilian descended to the Meseta, and the tributaries of the upper Duero. Burgos became a new centre of diffusion, and acquired significance by the decisive character of its citizens and the prestige of the great Castilian epics. But in the ninth and tenth centuries, Burgos was no more than an appanage of León.

The village-names that mark displacements of population in this second movement of expansion include the usual general denominations (*Gallegos, Castellanos, Asturianos*), but also more detailed information. There were *Navianos* from Navia on the Asturo-Galician border, and *Bercianos* from the Bierzo region north-west of Astorga. At San Ciprián de Sanabria there is a linguistic islet in which unaccented final *-a* remains, but when followed by a consonant becomes *-e-:* *tú cantes, nosotros cantábemos, cases.* This change occurs regularly in Catalan, but in Spanish is restricted to the Asturian of Oviedo, and is therefore held to be proof of Oviedan colonization in San Ciprián. Mozarabic settlers brought with them their wealth, their culture, their Arabic names, and a copious vocabulary of loan-words, profoundly modifying Leonese Spanish.

Under Ordoño II the capital city became León, where he was the first of the kings to be buried (923); and it was he who first took measures to reduce the power of Castile, by seizing four Castilian counts at an interview on the Carrión and killing them at León. His son Ramiro II (931-50) carried Leonese colonies over the Duero, and occupied the Tormes basin. Ledesma, Salamanca, Los Baños and Peña Ausende were his principal fortresses in this region. The racial mixture is indicated by village-names: *Gallegos, Galleguillos, Mozarbitos, Mozárvez, Huerta de Mozarbitos, Castellanos*; and again there is a linguistic islet of Oviedans at El Payo (to

the south of Ciudad Rodrigo). The component elements of the Salamancan populace remained nominally distinct as the *linajes de Salamanca*: *castellanos*, *mozárabes*, *portugueses*, *toreses*. In its cathedral the Mozarabic rite continues in use.

Ramiro's aggrandisement was effected despite the overwhelming military superiority of the Caliph 'Abd al-Rahmân III, but his kingdom was ruined by the razzias of Al-Manṣûr. Los Baños fell to the invaders in 977; León city was twice sacked (981 and 988), and in 988 the two great religious centres of León, Eslonza and Sahagún, were laid waste. The acme of disaster was reached in the destruction of the shrine of Compostela in 997, when the bells were transported to Córdoba on the backs of Christian slaves. With the great general's death, the Leonese set about repairing their misfortunes, and the city received a fresh charter in 1020. But the wounds were too deep; and the counts of Castile had profited by their relative immunity both to declare their independence, and to become serious rivals to the *magni reges*. For a period Castile was attached to Navarre, but it recovered its identity under Fernando I, now with the rank of a kingdom; and this astute monarch acquired the kingdom of León also in 1037. When he came to divide his property on his death-bed, he gave Castile to his elder son, León to his second. Rebell ing against this division, Sancho II inflicted two heavy defeats on the Leonese, at Llantada and Golpejera, which left no doubt where the superiority of force lay; and though the Leonese recovered their theoretical prestige under Alfonso VI, who was their king before succeeding to his brother, yet Toledo, when it was captured, fell to the lot of Castile (1085). Alfonso VII took his title of 'emperor' in León city in 1135; but thereafter even this mark of deference to León was discontinued. The kingdoms were divided under Alfonso VIII and IX, and the Leonese extended in a narrow wedge towards Extremadura. But the Castilians were the leading spirits in the great campaign of Las Navas de Tolosa in 1212; and in the final union of the crowns under Fernando

III and Alfonso X, the royal chancery resolutely patronized the Castilian form of Spanish.

The linguistic state of León reflects its politics. It is a language of compromise with all its neighbours: with Galicians, Castilians, and Mozarabs. The Galician influence is most marked in the west, where the diocese of Astorga serves as the basis of a western Leonese dialect. It is also predominant in the early years of the monarchy. Castilian influences strongly the counties of Liébana, Carrión and Saldaña, which constitute the eastern Leonese dialectal area, together with the great monastery of Sahagún. Through eastern Leonese Castilian forms press into central León during the eleventh and twelfth centuries; and they now occupy that whole area. Mozarabic co-operation in many important settlements brought the use of Arabic terminology to a maximum in Leonese. In the north, sheltered behind the Cantabrian mountains and more and more cut off from the imperial plans of León, the Asturian dialects continued their uninterrupted development from the common Latin base, and to this day constitute the most differentiated region of Spanish-speakers.

Leonese is marked off from Castilian by its hesitancy in dealing with the quality of the diphthongs arising from accented ē õ and the monophthong from AI AU, by its general conformity with Romance practice and with that of other Spanish dialects, and by its development (in common with Galician-Portuguese) of unvoiced consonants in weak position and of initial PL- CL- FL-. The accented ē õ are liable to retention in place-names and words of culture, the latter persisting as late as the thirteenth century: e.g. *in illo mallollo* (León 1061), Cast. *majuelo* 'new vine'. When the diphthong at last prevails, it is not impeded, as in Castilian, by a following palatal: as FÖVEU which gives *Fueyo*, *Los Fueyos* in the Asturias, but *Hoyo Hoyos* in Castile; HÖDIE uuoy Cast. *hoy* 'to-day', also *uey*; ARRÖGIU *arruoyo* Cast. *arroyo* 'stream'. The diphthong arises by the lengthening of the vowel (ee oo) and by the differentiation of the parts, whereby the first element

becomes more closed than the second (*ee oo > ie uo*). The accentuation of this diphthong in western Leonese is a matter on which expert observers differ. Some hold that it may rest on the whole diphthong and on either of its parts, and especially that *ie uo* are heard as well as *ie uó*; while others maintain that the first element is always of the nature of a semi-vowel, incapable of bearing the accent. The diphthong *ie*, pronouncing the latter element yet more open, results in *ia*; *uo*, by a like dissimilation, gives *ua*, and also *ue* (with *uɔ* as the presumptive middle stage). All these diphthongs are found in Leonese: HÖDIE *uuoy uey* 'to-day', HÖRTOS *vortos* Cast. *huertos* 'gardens', MÖRTE *muarte* Cast. *muerte* 'death', NÖSTRU *nuastro* Cast. *nuestro* 'our', ĚST *ye ya* 'is', CASTËLLA, *Castella* *Castiella* *Castilla*, PËDE *pia* 'foot'. As late as the thirteenth-century *Fuero Fuzgo* we have *voaltas oabras encuantra*, and the diphthong survives at Cangas de Tineo and other points in the Asturias: SÖMNU *suaño* 'dream'. *Ampudia* FÖNTEPUTIDA implies *fuan(te)*. Early Castilian practice is not consistent in this respect, but it reached the final stages *ie ue* more rapidly than León.

The Latin diphthongs AI AU linger on in Leonese, which has characteristically advanced only as far as the stage *ei ou*: *karreira obtorgare* Cast. *carrera otorgar* 'road' 'authorize'. The simplification of these diphthongs is due to an impulse from the Tarraconese region, which was adopted from Aragonese by Castilian, but failed to affect León and Galicia-Portugal. In the same fashion Leonese agrees with Portuguese to retain -MB- (PALOMBA Ptg. *pomba* Leon. *palonba* Cast. *paloma* 'dove') against the impulse towards -m- that came from the east. These cases also show agreement between Leonese and the still more conservative Mozarabic. Leonese retains, like all Romance languages save Castilian and Gascon, Latin F-, develops -LI- and -CL- to -LL-, preserves initial J- G- before front vowels (as *y-*), and makes -it- of -ct-. In the last case there is a good opportunity to watch the intrusion of Castilian forms into Leonese territory: PACTARE Leon. etc. *peitar* Cast. *pechar* 'pay'. Forms in -ch- make an early conquest of eastern

Leonese, and we find *pechar* in central León at Eslonza in 1173, *Fontecha* in León city in 1136. By the next century the forms in -it- had become a mark of western Leonese. Like Aragonese, Leonese occasionally uses accented forms of ĚS ĚST *yes ye*; and it experienced the palatalization of initial L- which occurs sporadically in the Peninsula as a whole, but not in Galician-Portuguese or Castilian.

In two respects Leonese innovates. Like Portuguese it has a strong tendency to turn intervocalic -P- -T- -K- into -b- -d- -g-, and the preference was lively enough to intrude into the popularized Latin of notarial documents, where we find CINGITUR, for instance, written CINGIDUR. The other innovation has to do with initial PL- CL- FL-, and will be dealt with more fully when we come to discuss the formation of Galician-Portuguese. The stage reached by medieval Leonese was [š]: CLAUSA *xosa* 'enclosed ground for fruit trees', FLAVINU *Xainiz*. In modern western Leonese the representative of these initial groups is [š], dental affricate, as in CLAVE *tsabe* 'key'. It corresponds with the central Asturian (and Spanish) *llave*, and a similar equation has occurred between central Asturian *lluna* and west Asturian *tsuna*, though the source is here L- in LUNA Sp. *luna* 'moon'.

### NAVARRO-ARAGONESE DIALECTS

Navarro-Aragonese forms of Spanish were spoken in a band which reached from the Upper Ebro to the frontiers of Catalonia, embracing the districts of La Rioja, Navarre, Aragón proper, Sobrarbe and Ribagorza. This region knew no political unity until its final absorption in the Spanish monarchy, and each part was associated politically with people of alien speech: Navarre with the Basque provinces, Aragón with the Catalan-speaking area. Until the sixteenth century, however, Navarro-Aragonese was not subjected directly to the hegemony of Castilian, and was supported by the two chanceries of Pamplona and Zaragoza. In the early Middle Ages its Riojan form was in use in the important

monasteries of San Millán de la Cogolla in La Rioja, and Santo Domingo de Silos in Castile. Thanks to the cultural significance of these two centres, Riojano is of great importance to the student of early Spanish and of Castilian origins.

Like Leonese, Navarro-Aragonese is a survival of the consensus of Spanish dialects which was the Visigothic platform, and which was represented quite closely in Mozarabic; it had certain north-eastern peculiarities, but generally agreed with the other dialects in their opposition to Castilian peculiarities. We may summarize them briefly. Initial **F**: *FILIU* Cast. *hijo*. Initial **J**- **G**- retained: *mea iermana* MEA GERMANA Cast. *mi (h)ermana*, *JACTAT geitat* Cast. *echa*. Initial **L**- palatalized: this occurs regularly in Aragonese, at the beginning of words and also at the beginning of syllables, e.g. *Uilla Carlli*. In modern Ribagorzano the **L**- palatalizes even in groups: *pllaza*, *dobllar*. Initial palatalization is also a feature of Catalan, so that this tendency was more declared in the north-east than in the west or south. Medial **-CT-** changed to **-it-**: *JACTAT geitat*, *FACTU feito* Cast. *echa*, *hecho*. The same change is suffered by **-LT-** in *MULTU* Arag. Leon. Ptg. *muito* Cast. *mucho* 'many'. The Castilian **ch**, however, invades Aragonese documents early, and the form *mucho* is normal in the fifteenth century. As well as *feito* Aragonese knew *feto* in the tenth century as to-day. Medial **-CL- LI-** gave **-ll-** (often spelled *yl* or *yll*): *FILIU fillo* Cast. *hijo* 'son', *SPĒCULU spilli* (*Glosas Em.*) Cast. *espejo*, *COLLECTURA collitura* (*Glosas Sil.*), *CONCILIU conceillo* Cast. *concejo*.

Among the characteristics distinguishing Navarro-Aragonese from Leonese is the conservation of initial **PL- CL- FL-**, in agreement with Catalan and with Mozarabic. Aragonese and Catalan also retain **-P- -T- -K-** in weak position, and particularly between vowels, much more freely than do the north-western dialects. *CAPUT capot* (1081) Sp. *cabo*, *\*CAP̄TTIA capeças* OSp. Ptg. *cabeças* 'heads'; *TOTA VOLUNTATE tuto bolumtate* (1062); *LORICA lorika* (1090). Such words, preserved in legal documents, may be unduly influenced by Latin tradition;

but there still exists an area lying to the north of Huesca, in Sobrarbe and across the frontier in Béarn and Bigorre, where the intervocalic unvoiced consonant persists: *AQUILA álica* Sp. *águila* 'eagle', *capeza* 'head', *marito* Sp. *marido* 'husband', *Nocito* elsewhere *Nocedo*, etc. This conservative tendency is also noted in Mozarabic.

Catalan and Navarro-Aragonese innovate by reducing -MB- to -m-, -ND- to -n-, and by simplifying the diphthongs AI AU to *e o*. The latter is a modification which has extended into Castilian also, there being early vacillation in the documents of Oña; and through Castilian it has come to be the norm in Spanish. *TERTIARIU terzero* (*Glosas Em.*), *trastorné* (*Glosas Em.*), *semdero matera* (1044); *AUCTORICARE otorekare* 'authorize' (1061). Castilian and Aragonese had completed the evolution AU *o* by the eleventh century. The vowels Ě Ō, accented, give diphthongs under all conditions in Aragonese as in Leonese, and the quality of the diphthong is not determined: *ie ia, uo ua ue*. The simplification of the consonant-groups indicated is, however, a notable feature of north-eastern Spain, and has been associated with the theory of an Oscan settlement in the vicinity of Huesca, though improbably, as has already been remarked. At Ribagorza in 913 we have: '*conciamamus nostram terram... in locum ubi dicitur Intramas Aquas*' (cf. *cambiar, ambas*). This change does not appear to have taken place in La Rioja, where *mb* characterizes the language of Gonzalo de Berceo and the documents of the region; but it presses into Castile, where *conciamacionem* is reported as early as 972. The assimilation of the group -ND- is more restricted. Both *nd* and *n* are found in medieval Aragonese documents: *quando quano, Galindo Galino, SPÖNDA espuenda* 'field by a river' Cat. *espona, illa spuenna, super illa sponna, spuanna* (S. Juan de Peña docs. 1062-85). A limited number of examples are found in Castilian and in eastern Leonese.

Navarro-Aragonese used accented as well as unaccented forms of ĚS ĚST, as did Leonese; and *ye* ET may even indicate some kind of syntactical accentuation of the conjunction.

The third person plural of the preterite borrowed *o* from the singular: Cast. *compró compraron*, Arag. *comparoron* (1062). This development is widespread in modern Leonese and Aragonese patois, but is not strongly attested by early documents. The presence of the dative pronouns *li lis*, and of the possessives *lur lures* 'their', is noteworthy in Aragonese; and in Berceo helps to confirm other pronominal nominatives in *-i*, such as *elli* Cast. *el*. There is considerable vacillation as to forms of the article in Aragonese and in Leonese: *el* concurrently with *lo*, *ela elos*, assimilation with *con* and *en* (*enna conna*, etc.), and in Sobrarbe *ero era*. As well as **ILLE**, **IPSE** was used sporadically in all the Spanish area as an alternative article: *super ipsa via, de ipso porto*. Thus used, however, **IPSE** always retains its Latin form, and is not a Romance word. An odd feature of Navarro-Aragonese is the tendency to double honorifics, especially before names of women or of clerics: *dueño dueño Cristo*.

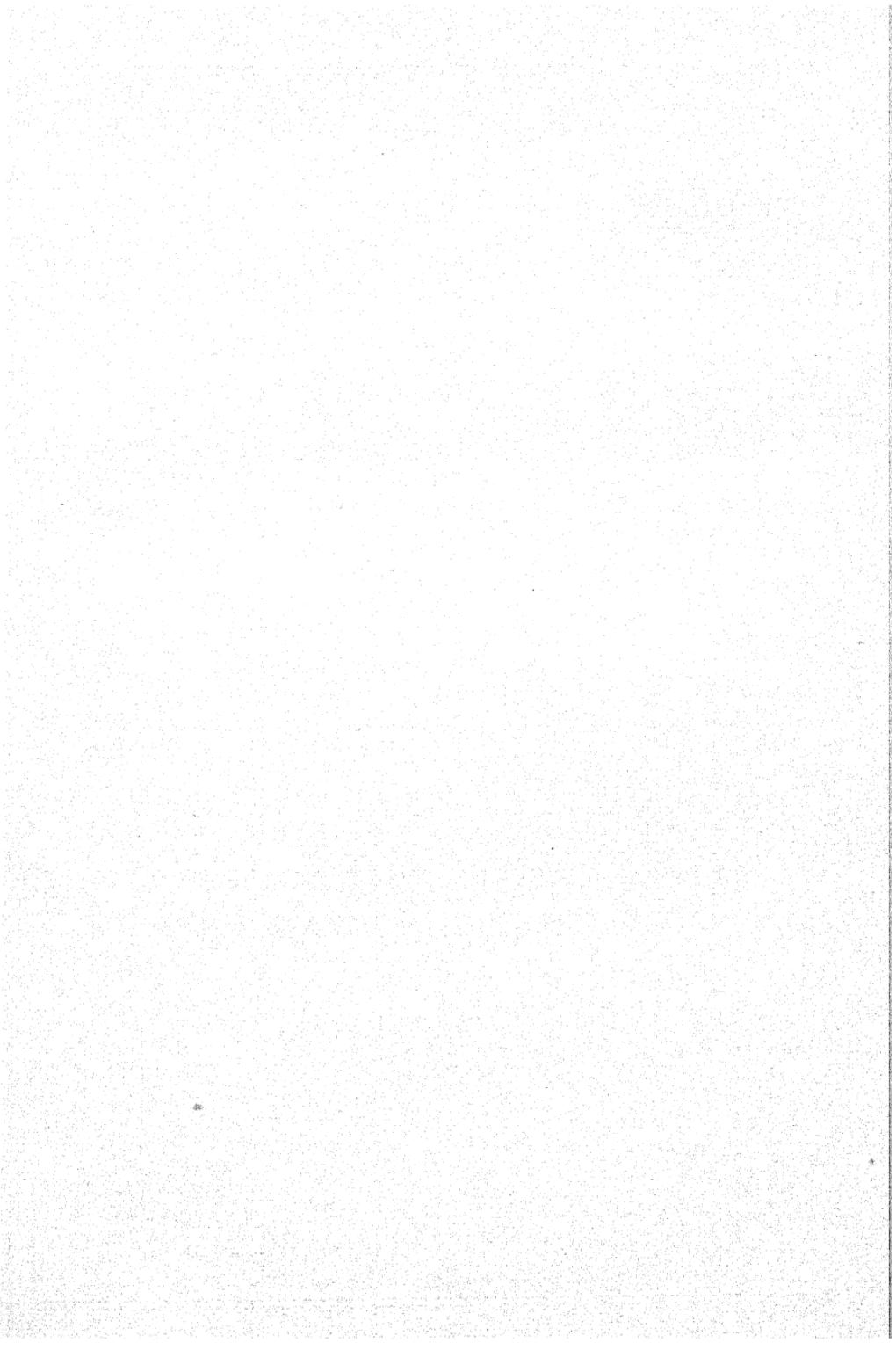
The kingdom of Aragón rose, somewhat casually, out of a donation by Sancho the Great of Navarre. He gave the valley of the Aragón river to his bastard son Ramiro. Ramiro, however, contrived to retain his independence against Castile, and his successors gave body to the kingdom by incorporating the powerful Moslem state of Zaragoza. They were able to contribute the title and prestige of a kingdom to the counts of Barcelona in the union of Aragón with Catalonia, though the latter was the predominant partner in Catalan policy. The chancery of Zaragoza and the Aragonese Cortes and customs remained quite different from those of the other three-quarters of that state; and the language survived in official and general use until its final merger with Castilian. To the east of Aragón proper lay the two hilly counties of Sobrarbe and Ribagorza. The latter, divided into two parts by the Noguera Ribagorzana, is a land of transition from Spanish to Catalan. The westernmost limit of Catalan features is on the Cinca and Ésera, the middle line of demarcation is the Noguera Ribagorzana, and the transition is completed in the east by the time we reach the Noguera Pallaresa and

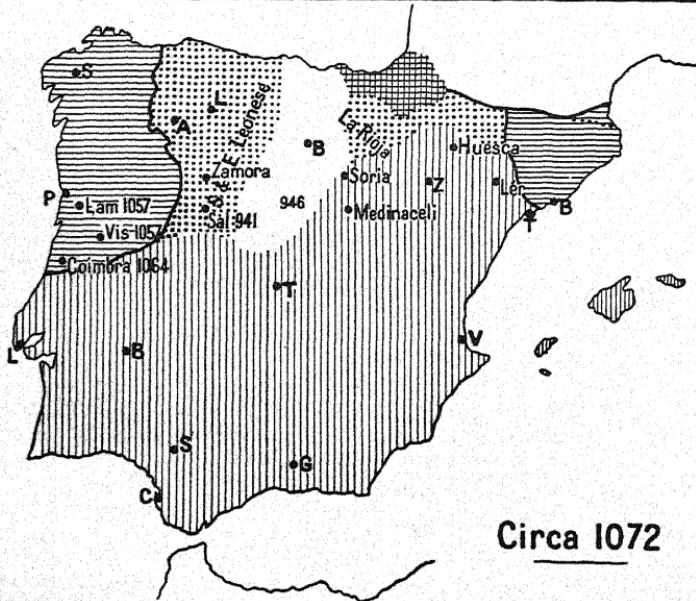
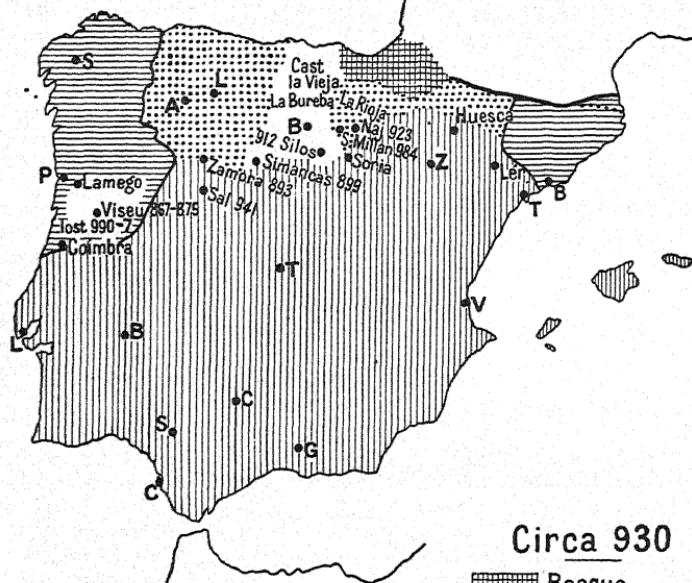
the Catalan-speaking county of Pallars. This linguistic hesitation corresponds to an early political dubiety in this region, which only attached itself to the fortunes of its western neighbours in the tenth century.

At the other extreme of Navarro-Aragonese territory lay the districts of Upper and Lower La Rioja. The Upper province lies in the hills, and was closely associated with Old Castile. The Lower lay along the Ebro in the vicinity of Nájera and Logroño, and was a land of debate between Castile and Navarre. In its early history it corresponds rather to Navarre. The frontier against Castile lay on the Montes de Oca in the tenth century, which became famous in the heroic epics when the poets referred to the narrowness of the original Castile. During the eleventh and twelfth centuries the possession of this region was debated, but it was definitively incorporated with Castile in 1176, after which it suffered a rapid castilianization. What gives interest to this transitional region is the importance of its religious foundations. Albelda and Santa María de Nájera served to inspire Latin chronicles; San Millán de la Cogolla and its offshoot in Castile, Santo Domingo de Silos, provide our first vernacular documents, the *Glosas Emilianenses* in the tenth century, and the *Glosas Silenses* of the eleventh. Silos is, in fact, situated in Castile; but its traditions were Riojano, at the same time as it served to attract Castilians to visit or revere the parent monastery. It was the home also of Gonzalo de Berceo, the oldest important Spanish poet to publish under his own name, whose language still bears traces of his dialect: *elli* Sp. *él*, *li* Sp. *le*, *soltóllas* Sp. *soltóselas*. That the language of the Glosses is not Castilian may be seen from such forms as *spillu* *muito feito* *geitat* *aflarat* *aplecat* *ies* *iet* *uemne* *faca* *ayutorio* *lueco* *collitura* *adduitos* Cast. *espejo* *mucho* *hecho* *echa* *hallara* *allega* *es* *hombre* *haga* *ayuda* *luego* *cogedura* *ducho*.

## THE RISE OF CASTILIAN

It was, then, amid such competitors that Castilian rose to supremacy and transformed itself into standard Spanish. Its basis is the ancient Cantabria, a district lying across the mountains near Santander, close to the Basque border. The Santander region (Asturias de Santillana, de Trasmiera), Campoo, and the northernmost part of the province of Burgos constituted ancient Castile, Bardulia or Castilla Vieja. Its long and troubled history gave a certain unity to this area. Under the Roman Republic Cantabria had been, with Asturica and the Basque country, unsubdued and sundered from the rest of Spain. It fell only to the legions of Augustus in 19 B.C. *Gallæcia et Asturica* and the Cantabrian region were associated with the east of the Peninsula in the Hither Spain, and so kept apart from Lusitania and Bætica, which formed the Further Spain; but under Diocletian's reorganization Cantabria was part of the *conventus* of Clunia, and so separated from the future Leonese and Navarro-Aragonese regions. When the Visigoths succeeded the Romans in Spain, Cantabria formed, with the Basque country, an unsubdued region, and it was there that Roderick waged his last campaign. It was not part of the Swabian kingdom of Galicia and the western Asturias. The arrival of the Moors perpetuated the Visigothic state of affairs. Cantabria remained independent under its 'duke' Pelayo, and inflicted the first defeat on the Spanish Moors at Covadonga. The subsequent history of the Reconquest, however, based as it was on Galicia and León, tended to attach Castilla Vieja to its western neighbours. It was a Leonese king, Ordoño I, who brought these mountaineers down to the edge of the plateau by occupying the stronghold of Amaya in 860, and another, Alfonso III, who gave them Burgos in 884. Burgos on the Arlanzón occupies the centre of a river-system to the north of the Duero, and it became in time an important centre for the propagation of castilianisms over the high *meseta* east of the Pisueña, the frontier of León. The next advance was south-eastward into the Alfoz de Lara, about





the year 912, when the Duero became the frontier, from Simancas to Osma. In 914 the river was crossed, and Castilian expansion changed to a south-westerly direction. Sepúlveda fell in 946, and this frontier became the Cea. In the next century this frontier was crossed, and Segovia and Ávila fell before Castilian arms. In the latter town Castile had acquired a fragment of the ancient Lusitania. The region had constituted an unsettled frontier (Extremadura del Duero) for a long time, but was effectively colonized in 1088.

These successive extensions of territory are associated with the prestige of certain monasteries. Castilla Vieja had Oña for its cultural centre, and the documents of this monastery are our authorities for Oldest (or Cantabrian) Castilian. When Burgos was recovered, two new monasteries became prominent, San Pedro de Cardeña and San Pedro de Arlanza. They are associated with Castilian heroes and the national *gestes*; the former with the Cid, the latter with Count Fernán-González and the independence of Castile. In the Alfoz de Lara the great monastic centre was Santo Domingo de Silos, which, however, we have seen did not pertain linguistically to its vicinity. It was in the Alfoz de Lara that the most tragic, and perhaps the oldest, of the epics was played out. The linguistic supremacy of Burgos, however, was not affected by this addition of territory, nor by the settlement of the Extremadura del Duero; and it is from Burgos that the characteristically Castilian waves of change radiated over the rest of Spain, until Toledo was subdued by these innovations and became the standard of correct Spanish in the eyes of Spaniards of the Golden Age. The Castilian ascendancy continued to increase linguistically after it had been fully established in politics; and as this augmentation of area occurred when the language was under the control of a developing Spanish literature, its consideration falls within the next chapter. For the present we are concerned only to note the features of Castilian in its pre-literary era.

The first centre of radiation was, as we have remarked, Castilla Vieja, and its documentation is chiefly that of the monastery of Oña. Here we find, with certain vacilla-

tions, that Castilian had already the resolute and innovating character which it wears among Spanish dialects. The diphthong to be derived from accented ē õ was settled in Cantabria as *ie ue*, without the alternatives existing in León and Aragón. This diphthong is not found with a palatal, apart from a single instance which may be the work of a Riojan notary (*cuejan*). The reduction of the suffix *-iello* to *-illo* (OSp. *Castiella* MSp. *Castilla*) begins to appear in this region as early as the tenth century. The diphthongs AI AU, on the other hand, still vacillate in Cantabrian Castilian, down to the twelfth century: *Tinteiro* (1017), *Emdeira* (1090), *Ferreira* (1173), but also *hera* (975). The simplification of these vowels is characteristic of Aragonese, and is carried through systematically by the *Glosas Silenses*. When Castilian begins to radiate from Burgos instead of Oña -ARIU gives only *-ero*: *karrera semdero Armentero eras fossatera*. Such forms appear normal in the tenth century. An archaic state of final unaccented vowels in Oldest Castile preserves traces of *-u* in the documents of Oña, and so of a declension *-u -os -u -os*. This is not a peculiar sign of the Cantabrian dialect, but is seen also in the *Glosas Silenses* which belong to the Riojan patois, and is present in southern Italian and Rumanian. The *Glosas* give us *nafregatu, mintiru*, etc., but *nafregatos, elos cuerpos, afliitos, sapiendo* (from *-o*), though also *omiciero* HOMICIDUM. In Cantabrian documents the *-u* continues to appear down to the thirteenth century, but without consistency: *don Peydro Martínez el Orejudu, Domingo Moçu, de lu lombo*.

The Cantabrian dialect permits the assimilation of the article with the prepositions *en* and *con*, and it shows tendencies to fix the orthography on lines somewhat different from those subsequently adopted. The letter *g* had the values [j] and [ʃ], but Cantabrian scribes tend to discriminate *g* [j] from *gg* [ʃ], fricative from affricate mediopalatal. They possessed no better means of expressing the voiceless mediopalatal affricate [ç] than by using the voiced sign *gg*: hence *Naggara* (*Nájera*), *bieggo* (*viejo*), *figgos* (*hijos*), and *Sanggez* (*Sánchez*), *contradiggo* (*contradiccio*). The dialect used freely

two old suffixes -ēccu and -ōccu: *kannariekas*, *illa Monneka*, *pedruecos*, *pennueco*. The former extension of these suffixes is shown in place-names: *Muñeca* and variants in Palencia, Soria, León and Oviedo; *Palomeque*, *Manzaneque* in Mozarabic territory.

It was in this Cantabrian region, moreover, that the loss of initial *f*- was endemic. It appears in place-names as an aspirate *h* or silent, and was doubtless due to the specially close association of Cantabrians and Basques. The other differentiae from the general practice of Spanish dialects also appeared: -CL- -LI- developing to *j* (spelled *gg*), -CR- to *ch* (spelled *gg*), loss of initial *J*- *é*-, etc.

The language of Burgos was marked by the resolute completion of the few matters on which Cantabria continued to hesitate. This was partly due to Aragonese proximity through the neighbouring Riojano. So the diphthongs *ie ue* have fixed their quality, and -ARIU gives -ero alone. Medial -MB- tends, under Aragonese influence, to -m-: *lomo LOMBU* (Leon. *lombo* Cantabrian *de lu lombo*), *amos* (later *ambos* is a Latinism) *AMBO* 'both', *paloma PALUMBA* 'dove', etc. The letters *j* and *g* appear for [j], as in later Spanish.

It is not possible to discover the peculiar features of south-eastern or south-western Castilian. In the one case, the loss of the *Leyenda de los Infantes de Lara* deprives us of our most promising lay text, and the clergy were under the Riojan influence of Silos. Beyond that frontier to the south, the *Poema del Cid* shows a Mozarab of Medinaceli composing in the language of Burgos, but a little uncertain as to the right use of *ll* and *j*. The prestige of Burgos was firmly established by the great cycles of gestes before the definitive colonization of the south-west, where, in Ávila at least, we should theoretically expect to have met some of the conservative marks of Lusitanian Spanish.

The change of the direction of advance in 912-14 continued in later centuries, and at length, passing through Toledo, cut off Leonese from the south. A vast fan-wise extension of Castilian took place at the expense of León; but

Castilian also pressed due west against its neighbour. The eastern counties of Liébana, Saldaña and Carrión, which lined the Pisuerga, had long acted with Castilian counts against the authority of their suzerains of León, and they show an early castilianization. A few years later the linguistic battle was transferred to central León. Each Castilian feature had its own original focus and its own rate of expansion, until they were all arrested by the resistance of western Leonese, supported by Galician-Portuguese. The earliest and most active were the simplification of *AI AU* to *e o*, and the development of *-cr-* through *-it-* to *-ch-* in such words as *pechar, lecho*, which are embedded in central Leonese by the middle of the twelfth century. The group *M'N* gave in Castilian *-mn- > -mr- > -mbr-*: *LUMINOSU lumbroso, NOMINATU nombrado, -UMINE firmedumbre* (the word *HOMINE hombre* 'man' does not serve as its medieval Castilian spellings are guilty of archaism in *-mn-* or *-m̄-*). Of this change east Leonese shows 86 p.c. of examples in the thirteenth century, and central Leonese only 16 p.c. The figures prove that this feature had invaded eastern León in the eleventh or twelfth century, and had become the norm at Sahagún in the thirteenth, while at the same time commencing its invasion of central León. In *-ARIU- > -ero*, in which Castilian propagates a north-eastern dialectalism, its use in León rises from 50 p.c. in the tenth century (against *-air-* and *-eir-*) to 65 p.c. in the second half of the same; in the first half of the eleventh century the figure is 85 p.c. and *-air-* has been eliminated; in the second half, 86 p.c.; and in the early twelfth century 88 p.c. In this case the whole profit of eliminating the alternative *-air-* went to *-er-*, which was supported by Castilian prestige.

For knowledge of the period covered by this chapter scholars are wholly indebted to the researches of Sr Menéndez Pidal, published in his masterly *Orígenes del Español*. Texts illustrative of the dialects will be found in the brief anthology which constitutes the opening section of that work.

## CHAPTER VI

### STANDARD SPANISH

The year 1140, which probably witnessed the composition of the *Poema del Cid*, one of the oldest extant literary documents of Spain, is taken as apposite to mark an epoch in the history of the language. Up to that date Castilian had continued to rise from small beginnings as an unconsidered dialect spoken hard against the Basque border to a position of political and cultural hegemony over the centre and west of the Peninsula. In the century following 1140, however, Castilian continues, indeed, to meet the rivalry of Leonese and Aragonese among the Spanish dialects, and of Portuguese and Catalan in a wider area; but the contest is profoundly modified by a new impetus toward administrative and literary standardization. Replacing Latin in the chancery of Toledo, Castilian acquires more and more fixity; replacing Latin as the language of Spanish literature, Castilian becomes wealthy, supple, elevated and inclusive. It ceases to be a victorious dialect and becomes standard Spanish. Centrifugal interests set up standards for Portuguese and Catalan also, though these languages do not remain immune from the encroachment of Spanish. The weaker life of the Leonese and Aragonese dialects dwindles until they abandon their capitals to linger on in valleys and on hills remote from the foci of Spanish culture.

During the reign of Alfonso VI, in the second half of the eleventh century, various contributory influences in favour of standardization begin to operate. The capture of Toledo in 1085, the Visigothic capital and symbol of Spanish unity, is of supreme importance. This city fell, though to a king of Leonese predilections, to the Castilian nation. Alfonso took steps to give coherence to his dominions and to attach them to European traditions. He replaced the Mozarabic

missal by the Roman, and the Visigothic minuscule by the Caroline. The former may be read in the pre-literary Glosses of Silos and San Millán de la Cogolla, with its characteristic broken-backed *e* and *a* so open at the top as to resemble *u*. Conservative nobles like the Cid Ruy Díaz continued to sign in the older script, but the practice of the chanceries confirmed the younger. With this overlap, we need not suppose that the change of script sufficed to obliterate a hypothetical literature of the tenth and early eleventh centuries; but it did contribute to intellectual intercourse between France and Spain. French influence thus became important for Spain simultaneously with the opening of the literary epoch, and it expressed itself in the peaceful penetration of Cluniac monks, the appointment of Frenchmen as bishops and counts in Alfonso's dominions, pilgrimages to Santiago de Compostela along the French Way, crusades like those of Barbastro and Las Navas, new standards of Latin style and popular appreciation of epic poetry. From the older script there descended one surviving mannerism. The Visigothic *z* was frequently written with a large curl for the top bar: *ȝ*. Further exaggerated this gave the Spanish *ȝ*, adopted by France in the sixteenth century as the French *céille*.

#### FIXATION OF ORTHOGRAPHY

Literature and the chanceries demanded that some sort of uniform spelling should be adopted for the official language. Pressure in this direction is already evident in the notarial documents of the pre-literary period, in which, for instance, personal and place-names and some necessary terms presented problems of spelling for which Latin precedents were insufficient. As a result of this pressure the twelfth century already witnessed a considerable growth of uniformity in the scribal practices of Castile. The numerous experimental forms for non-Latin sounds had already begun to be reduced to a limited number of favoured forms, though these forms were not always those finally adopted in the next century

(e.g. *gg*, as in *Sanggiz*, was preferred by many scribes to the *ch* ultimately adopted). In the thirteenth century Spanish spelling was regulated by the practice of the Toledan chancery, on a Castilian basis but with a notable concession to Toledo in the use of *f* where Castilian employed an aspirate *h*. The system thus adopted was almost perfectly phonetic, and with further adjustments in the sixteenth century and in the nineteenth, it has remained a true representation of the sounds of the Spanish speech. Portuguese and Catalan spelling evolved in a manner generally parallel to Spanish, though the former made greater concessions to etymological prejudices, and the latter, owing to its greater complexity of sounds, suffered more changes.

The problem set before the scribes was to find satisfactory equivalents for sounds not used by Latin. Those which the language had taken over from its parent retained their Latin representation. The alphabet, however, both exceeded the needs of Latin itself and fell short of those of Romance. Superfluous Latin letters could be given new values, until they were all taken up, and further sounds could be represented either by means of diacritical marks (as in *ç*) or by combinations. Latin presented doublets of *i* and *u* in the form of *j* and *v*. These doublets continued throughout the Middle Ages, but with an increasing tendency to make *i* *u* vocalic and *j* *v* consonantal. Late Latin had no aspirate; its *h* was conventional; it already served as the factotum of the alphabet, and had already been used in Latin to represent Greek sounds in the combinations *ph th ch rh*. This habit proved to be of great importance in Romance. Latin *y* and *z* were also equivalents for Greek sounds. The former had, however, lost its characteristic value in late Latin, and had become yet a third way of representing *i*; the latter had come to coincide with the Romance derivatives of Latin *i di*. The letters *c g* represented two values: [k g] before back vowels *a o u*, and [s j] before *e i*. For the value [s] of *c* Visigothic offered the letter *ç*, thus setting up an antithesis between *c* [k] and *ç* [s, later θ], which never became obligatory. On

the other hand, the double value of these letters forced the Spanish scribes to find new ways of representing the sounds [k g] before *e i*. German influence, as well as Greek, modified the Latin alphabet before the Spanish scribes faced their problem. The aspirate, which did not exist in late Latin, made its reappearance as *h* in German words. The German *w* corresponded with Latin *u v* but was a more tense sound; hence the spelling *vv* or *uu*, whence the new letter *w*; but more commonly Romance speakers imitated this labiovelar *w* by prefixing to *u* a fricative *g*, whence *gu*. Thanks to German also *k*, which had no acceptance in Latin, came into limited circulation, notably in spelling Germanic names, as *Karllos*.

The new sounds which were clamouring for scribal attention were [k g] before front vowels (*e i*); the new fricative values of *b d g*; and many palatal affricates and fricatives [c j s z̄] in the affricate series; š z̄ ū λ n̄ in the fricative; and also *s z*]. With regard to *b d g*, the fricative and occlusive pronunciations are closely related in the Peninsular languages, and the distinction was ignored, save in the first instance where *v* offered a convenient way of marking the difference: *bever* (BIBERE) *bivir* (VIVERE). This alternative arose out of the fact that in Iberian Latin the values of *b* and consonantal *v* were identical. For the other sounds a considerable number of possible equivalents were discovered by experiment, and were gradually reduced to standard solutions. It was possible to set new values on superfluous Latin letters, especially when the Romance value had evolved from the Latin one. Thus *x* [ks] became in Spanish, Portuguese and Catalan the equivalent of [s̄], aided by such obvious instances as *dixo* from *DIXIT*. With the evolution of Spanish [s̄] to [χ] *x* has given way to *j* since the eighteenth century, and has recovered through academical influence the value of [ks]. The Latin value influences also Portuguese and Catalan, where the sound [s̄] survives, and causes Catalan to spell this sound not *x* but *ix*. Where aspirates existed in Spain, *h* served to represent them; but as Castilian *h* corresponded to Toledan and Leonese *f*, *f* also served as the con-

ventional equivalent of the French and Arabic aspirates, which were also liable to remain unpronounced.

In some cases, where either the voiced or the voiceless form of a given sound existed, it was possible to use an old letter in two senses. Latin *g*- before *e i* had the value of [j], which is the voiced equivalent of voiceless [c]. So we find *g* for [c], e.g. *ni de nog ni de dia* (for later *noche*). More frequently the awkwardness of a double use of one sign was avoided by doubling the letter: so *Sangziz* for *Sánchez* [c]. This device of doubling was employed also in Arabic and Morisco writing, where it took the more compact form of the diacritic *tashdīd*; for instance, *b* served for Spanish *b*, but often *bb* for *p*. Doubling provided a solution for the various values of *s*. Initially and finally this letter was voiceless [s]; between vowels it might be voiced [z] or voiceless [s]. Medieval Spanish, together with Portuguese and Catalan, represented the former by *s*, the latter by *ss*, leaving the letter *z* to correspond with *g* as voiced to voiceless. So *rosa* but *passar*. *R* had more than one value in the Peninsular languages. It is either a fricative or vibrant weakly trilled, or a tense vibrant with several trills. For the former *r* served, for the latter *rr*: *pero perro*. Initially or after *n* the *r* is always strongly trilled, and as no ambiguity arises, modern Spanish economises a letter (*rosa honra*). Medieval Spanish sometimes did the same, or continued to employ *rr* (*rrosa honrra*) or to use the capital as an additional letter of the alphabet (*Rosa honRa*). Doubling was also used in standard Spanish from the thirteenth century to represent the new palatal sounds [ñ ñ]: *Castiella señor*. *Ñ* is merely a scribal variant of *nn*.

Combinations of letters were devised by making use of the factotum *h*, the Romance equivalents *i j y g*, the consonantal *u*, and occasionally *t* and *l*. *H* is the most useful of these letters, as it had no value in itself and could be supposed to add any shade to an existing letter. Added to *c g* an *h* confirmed them in the values [k g] before *e i*. This is the standard usage in Italian (*chérico ghetto*). It occurs in the final *-ch* of Catalan *poch*, recently abolished, and in *achesta*

*strela* (*Auto de los Reyes Magos*). But the same *h* might give an affricate nuance to *c* in Sp. *noche*, leading to ambiguity in Spanish, Catalan and Portuguese (Ptg. *ch* represented [č] until the middle of the eighteenth century, though now [š]). *H* also served to indicate the palatalization of *l* and *n*, and as such has remained the standard of usage in Provençal and in Portuguese (*molher lenho*).

For palatalizations, however, the usefulness of some variant of *y* was apparent to our experimenters. It is a palatal semi-consonant, and it appears on rough analysis to give the palatal nuance in such words as the English *union onion senior million*, etc. The ear might fancy it detected this element either before or after its companion (since it is really simultaneous, as forming one single palatal phoneme); the tension of these consonants suggests the device of doubling; and the variants of *y* include *i j* and the Romance *g* in certain conditions. Hence there was a wide field for experimentation. The sound [λ], in addition to the *ll lh* already indicated, had the variants *yl ly yll lly, il etc., jl etc., gl gli etc.* Aragonese and Navarrese scribes tended to prefer *yl* or *yll* (*Payllas* for *Pallars*). Spanish settled on *ll* as also did Catalan. Portuguese and Provençal preferred *lh*; French *ill* (*mille fille juillet*); Italian *gli* (*figlio foglia moglie*). In Spanish documents of the eleventh and twelfth centuries we find such forms as *strela Castieilla obellgas* (Cast. *ovejas*) and even complex graphs like *igl ligl*, all designed to avoid the ambiguity inherent in combined letters. Exactly the same licence of experimentation existed in respect of the palatal nasal [n], for which we find *sennor senior banios vergoina kastango Compagni senigor pungno domgna*, etc. Again the Romance languages have chosen variously: Sp. *señor*, Ptg. *senhor*, Cat. *dany*, Arag.-Nav. *daynno*, Fr. *vigne*, It. *gnaffe*, etc. The palatal sibilant [š] showed similar vacillations: *Xemeniz coixu Scemeno escieret eleisco quessa eiso Kaissal*. The Peninsular languages preferred *x* or *ix*, despite the concurrence of the Latin value [ks]; Italian has chosen *sci: lasciare*.

The semi-vowel *u* belongs to the order of back vowels, and

so requires that a preceding *c* or *g* should have the velar quality [k g]. By losing its own peculiar pronunciation, it came to serve as a device for preserving [k g] before the front vowels *e i*, the more necessarily so since *ch* was an affricate. For [k] it was possible to make use of a superfluous letter of the Latin alphabet which was always found in company with *u*, namely *q*: *qu* is [k] before *e i* in *busqué quiero*, etc., but [kw] in OSp. Ptg. *quando*. No such resource was open in the case of [g], so that *gu* is [g] in *guerra*, but [gw] in *averiguar*. Medieval Spanish did not find embarrassing the fact that *qu gu* had two values each, but modern orthography has preferred to write [kw] always *cu*, and [gw] *gu* before back vowels, but *gü* before front ones: *cuando averigüé*.

The use of a conventional *t* to mark tension in certain palatals is characteristic of Catalan, in which [ê] is *tx*, [j] *tj*, [s̪] *ts*, [z̪] *tz*, and [λ:] *tll*: Cat. *despatx mitja Prats esclavitzar batlle*. The Arabic emphatic letters *d t*, etc. involved a tension which Spanish indicated by prefixing to them an *l*, which, however, retained its proper value: *alcalde* Ar. *al-qâdi*.

In the twelfth century we find Spanish spellings rapidly approaching a norm which contrasts with the licence of the eleventh-century documents of Oña. The *Auto de los Reyes Magos* shows a latinizing spirit, and limits its choice to a few main alternatives. In the *Disputa del alma y el cuerpo* one can detect only a few irregularities: *leio* (*leito* or *lecho*?), *nog* (*noche*), *festir*. The function of the Toledan chancery, therefore, was to complete a work already begun by making a final choice between the available alternatives, and giving validity to this decision in a vast number of official documents and in standard literary compilations. There was, as yet, no opposition to the phonetic principle in spelling, and no binding tradition. The result is that medieval Spanish orthography is a faithful picture of the language as it was spoken in official and cultured circles at Toledo about the year 1275. In various respects this representation became faulty towards the end of the fifteenth century, notably in the retention of *f* where an aspirate was now common in speech, and some

details of the pronunciation of *b*. In Nebrija's *Gramática* (1492) and in his *Orthographia* (1517) the spelling is again made consonant with the language. Nebrija grappled also with the innate difficulty offered by combined letters for a simple sound, and proposed to indicate such by a mark of union (1492): *muchos deñar proveñó*; but this suggestion was abandoned. He reaffirmed the phonetic principle, that the language should be spelled as it is pronounced; as did also the poet Herrera, who avoided the use of otiose *h* and sought to indicate hiatus and liaison between the article and a following noun or adjective.

By this time, however, the claims of tradition were stronger and the humanists had begun to insist on etymologies. Juan de Valdés (1536) allows himself to be eclectic in details. It was in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries that changes occurred which considerably affected the pronunciation of medieval *x j g z s -ss-*, and as adjustment did not keep pace with the linguistic advance, Spanish orthography showed many anomalies when the Academia de la Lengua began to take official control of the language in the eighteenth century. Successive edicts have reduced the gap. *X* is officially [ks] (1815); *c g* continue to have double values, but the circumstances have been defined, and corresponding rules have been given for *z j*; *ss* has disappeared; accents indicate all deviations from certain simple rules of stress. Once again, therefore, Spanish spelling presents an accurate picture of *español correcto*, though it is necessarily conventional as an equivalent for the pronunciation of many Spaniards and Spanish-Americans. Catalan has been regularized in the present century. In Portuguese the influence of the etymologists lasted longer, especially in erudite words like *philosophia*, and the effort to standardize the spelling on a phonetic basis, connected with the name of Gonçalves Viana, may be deemed still in progress. Portuguese spelling norms have been more personal than those of the sister-languages, but in such a manuscript as the British Museum copy of the *Crónica de João I* (Add. MS. 20946) the scribe's habits are as

satisfactorily phonetic as those of Alfonso X or Nebrija in Spain.

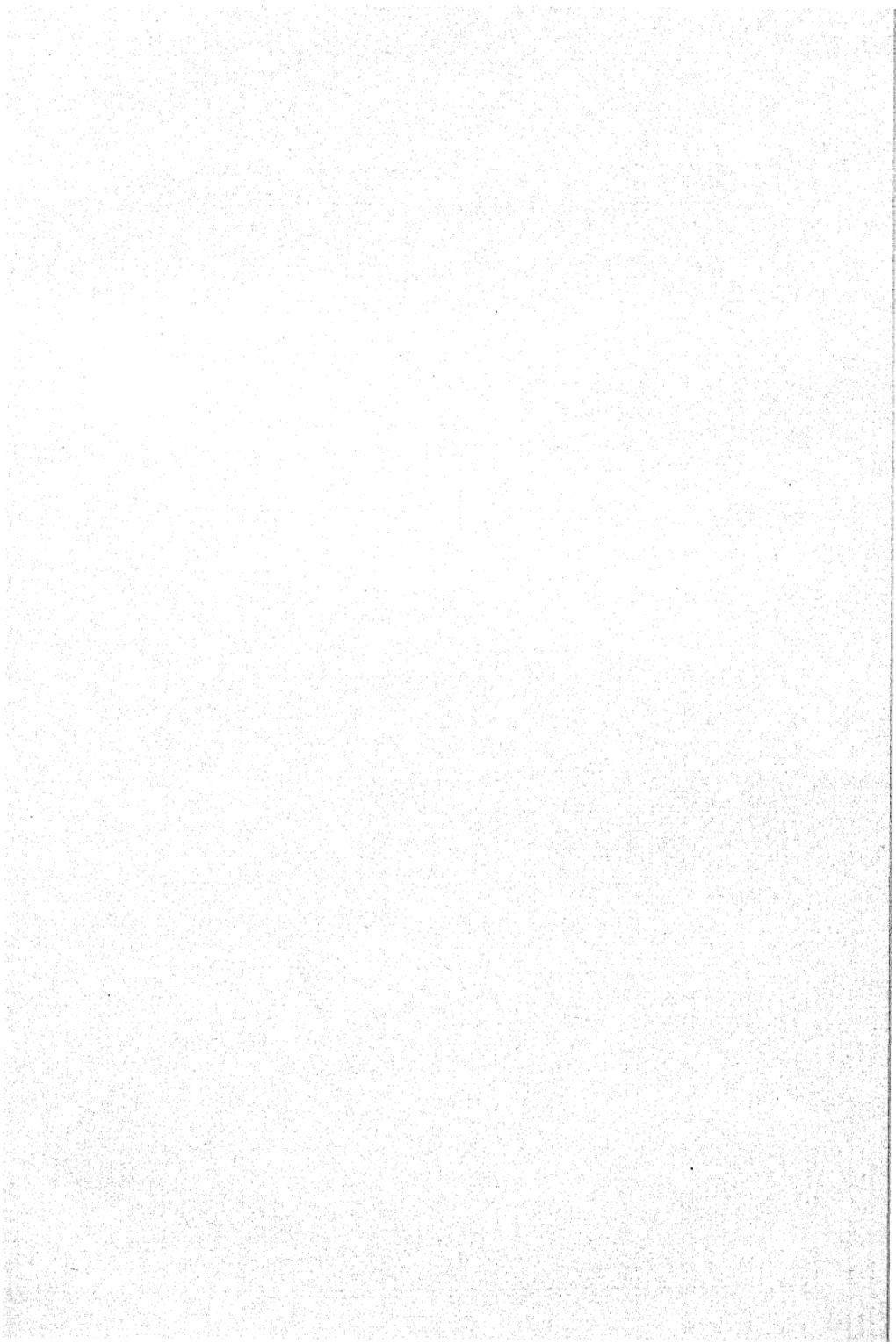
### THE EXPANSION OF CASTILIAN

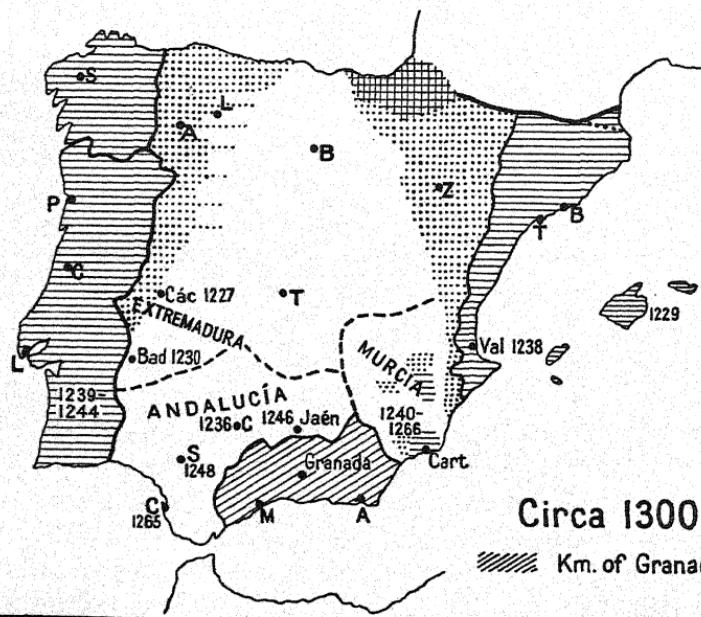
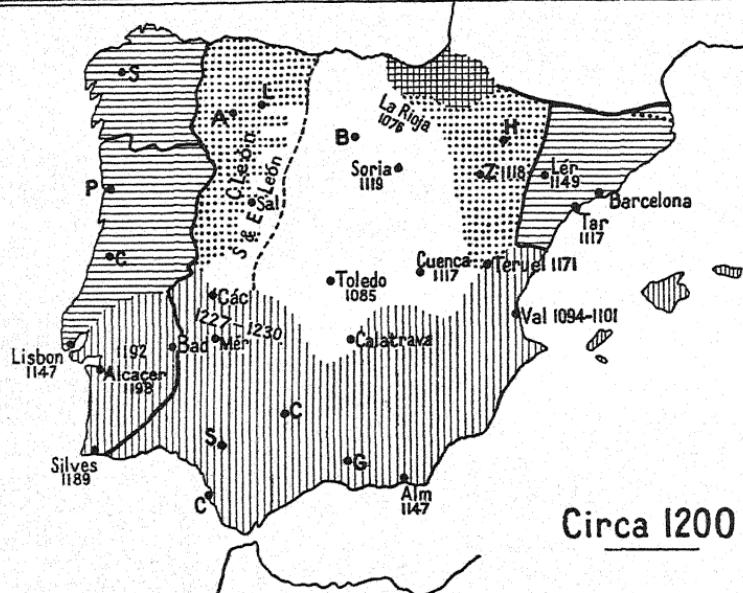
The later Middle Ages witnessed the completion of the process which had begun in the eleventh and twelfth centuries by which Castilian and Spanish became synonymous terms. Originally a dialect backed on the Basque border, more radical than the speech of the majority of Spanish-speakers, Castilian spread out fan-wise in a southerly and south-westerly direction until it reached the borders of Portuguese and Catalan near the middle line of the Peninsula, and then advanced southward as the sole parent of the Andalusian and American varieties. In this way Castilian cut off Leonese and Aragonese from the south, preventing their further development; and at the same time it exerted a vigorous lateral pressure which in the end has driven Aragonese off the plain of the Ebro, and Leonese out of eastern, southern and central León to take shelter in the mountains of Astorga or behind the Cantabrian range. The pressure was exerted not only by the Castilian dialect as a whole, favoured by the chanceries and the heroic songs, but by each individual castilianism. Each phenomenon has its own history of aggrandisement not identical with that of any other, but contributing to the joint result.

Of these phenomena the most outstanding is the substitution of *f* by *h*. In this respect Spanish differs from Catalan and Portuguese in the Peninsula, and from all the other Romance tongues; *f>h* is therefore a criterion of Spanish. And yet it was not originally a practice common to all Spain, but only to Castilian. In literary documents the *f* is written continuously throughout the Middle Ages, and there is no vacillation until we reach manuscripts of the fourteenth century. In the next century the hesitation between *f* and *h* indicates that the actual sound was an aspirate; and the fact that *h* makes hiatus in the verses of Garcilaso de la Vega,

Luis de León, Ercilla and Herrera proves the continued existence of this aspirate in standard Spanish down to about the year 1580. In the succeeding generation of Lope de Vega the aspirate is weakened and lost, and is unknown to Calderón. In the Andaluz dialect, on the other hand, in Extremeño, and in such American dialects as agree with Andaluz, the survival of the aspirate is a noteworthy feature, represented in Spanish borrowings by *j* in *jándalo* 'huckster' (cf. *andaluz*), *jamelgo* *FAMELICU* 'starveling', *juerga* 'jollification' (cf. Cast. *huelga* 'rest, strike').

This passage of *F>h>* - has been misunderstood. Two schools of thought existed among philologists. Some laid stress on the fact that *f* is wanting in Basque (and apparently in Iberian) and in the Gascon dialects of French. They held that *f* (labiodental) was wanting in the language of the Iberian substratum, and so was not learned by the Iberians who spoke Latin. The spelling *f* of the manuscripts, under these conditions, could not represent a labiodental *f* but only some sound of an aspirate nature, which might be the bilabial aspirated fricative [ɸ]. Special cases would be the groups *fr- fu-* (*frente fuente*) in which either the labial sound was protected by the succeeding *r u* or has been restored by a better acquaintance with Latin. Other philologists rejected this explanation, and held that the appearance of the aspirate in Spanish was due to linguistic evolution in the fourteenth century, for which no ethnic cause should be attributed. Both explanations have been shown to repose on a misconception, namely that the evolution of Spanish was carried out uniformly over its whole area. This is not the case. The point of departure is found in the district of Castilla Vieja or Cantabria, which lies across the mountains from Santander to La Bureba, beside the Basque border. As we have no specimens of Spanish before the *Glosas Emilianenses* of the tenth century we cannot determine whether the *f* had never made a lodgment in this region, which was undoubtedly one of very late romanization. The phenomenon may or may not be Iberian, but it is certainly to be connected with the





The expansion of Castilian

similar want of the labiodental as a genuine Basque sound and is caused by the community of intercourse or origin between Cantabrians and Basques. Place-names and the notarial documents of Oña make it clear that the aspirate was general in this region in the eleventh century: *Hormazuela* *Hormaza* *Las Hormazas hayuela* (Oña 1057) *Rehoyo* (1151) (as well as *Refoyo* 1188). The aspirate was doubtless weak, for evidence of its suppression soon follows: *Ormatia* (1106) *Ornilla* (1105) *Ormazola* *Ormaza*. Clearly, the focus of radiation for both changes was the same, Castilla Vieja or Cantabria, with an interval of half a century or more between them. Very early instances are *Assur Hanniz* (Oña 944) and *Anni Obecoz* (Covarrubias 972). In the notarial documents of Burgos forms in *h* or - are rare even in the thirteenth century. One of 1224 has *Forniellos* (*Hornillos*), but *Ormaza*. On the other hand in Upper and Lower Rioja, standing closer to the Basque border, the *h* is frequent, notably in Gonzalo de Berceo: *herropeado* (also *erropeas* in a fourteenth-century manuscript), *Henar* (*Cid: Fenares*), *hazanna*, *rehyertas*. The original localization and early expansion may be studied in place-names corresponding to the Latin SANCTU FELICE OR ECCLESIA SANCTI FELICIS. These names give three possible developments: (1) where *f* promptly became an aspirate and disappeared, the group *nt* was in favourable conditions for survival, and one obtains the type *Santelices*; (2) where *f* persisted, the group *ntf* lost its middle occlusive and became *nf*, which assimilated to *ff f*; when the residual *f* became an aspirate or was lost, the type is *Sahelices* (cf. *Sahagún SANCTI FACUNDI*); (3) where the *f* survives: *San Felices*, *San Fiz*, *Safiz*. The first type is to be found in two place-names in Vizcaya and in the Partido de Villarcayo, to the north of Burgos. The frontier between the second and third types occurs on the Sella, towards the eastern end of the Asturias de Oviedo, where we find *Cofiñal CONFINALE*. *Sahagún* and *Sahelices* stand close together in Eastern León.

To illustrate the further expansion of *h* and - we may take the evidence of place-names in FONTE, as these are frequent

in Spanish toponymy. When this element is accented (*Fuen(te)*) the association with *fuente* 'fountain, stream' is too obvious and must have had a restraining influence on development; but when the *FONT-* was treated enclitically, its etymological value was less in evidence, and we get *Fon- Hon- On-* or *Am-* in stricter accord with the peculiarities of the local pronunciation. Judged by this criterion there was a virtually *f*-less region about the year 1300, extending from the Sella to the Basque border and from Santander to Burgos (*Hontanar Hontoria Hontamio Hontanada*, but also *Fombellida Fontecha Fontasquesa*). South of Burgos and extending across Toledo and La Mancha was a region of conflicting practices, with predominant *h* or - (*Ampudia Hontangas Hontalbilla Ontigola Oncebreros Hontanares*, but *Fontanillas Fontanar Fontalba*). On either side the conflict affected southern León, Extremadura, the Guadalquivir valley and Cuenca, with a predominance off (*Fonfría Fonseca Fompedrada Fontanar Fontanilla*, but *Hontillas Hontanares Hontecillas*). Aragón, Murcia, western Extremadura, western and central León were then entirely occupied by forms with *f*; Granada lay outside the Spanish Christian domains. A little later we find instances of the intrusive *h* in Juan Ruiz's *Libro de Buen Amor* (1330, 1343): *Henares hadedura* (cf. *hado* *FATU* 'fate'), *herrén* *FARRAGINE* 'cattle-food', *hosco* *FUSCU* 'dark-coloured'. The author was born at Alcalá on the Henares, and spent his life at Hita and Toledo. Manuscripts of D. Juan Manuel (1325) show *halcón* 'falcon', *hazer* *FACERE* 'do'. Two hundred years later the aspirate and the elimination of the sound had gone so far as to impose the Castilian characteristics on the whole central area of Spanish. Old Castile from the Cantabrians to the Guadarramas lost the aspirate, and this phenomenon had invaded the Esla valley in central León and the upper Ebro basin. South León (with the university city of Salamanca) and New Castile (with Toledo) continued to aspirate *h*, with decreasing frequency in the eastern half of the area (Talavera, Madrid, Cuenca, Albacete). The aspirate persisted, and persists to this day, in Extremadura and Andalusia. Granada belongs

to this area of southern Spanish, but its place-names are notable for their conservatism, both in regard to *f* and in the treatment of vowels and diphthongs: *Farfán Las Fontanillas Funes Fornes Ferreirola Febeire Castil de Ferro*. In the bishopric of Astorga to the west of the Esla valley, in the Asturias west of the Sella, in Aragón north-east of Huesca and Monzón, the old Leonese and Aragonese *f* survives as also in Galicia, Portugal and Catalonia, beyond the linguistic boundaries of Spanish.

The expansion of Castilian is illustrated by several other instances in which Cantabria has imposed its will on the Spanish standard speech, as in the suffix *-illo*, the loss of initial *J- G-* (before *e i*), the evolution of *ch* and medial *-j-* in certain cases.

The source of the suffix *-illo* is the VLat. *-ĚLLU*. *Ě* accented gives in Spanish *ie*, but as early as the tenth century, and perhaps from the ninth, we have cases of *-illo* in Old Castile, as *Uallilio Castillo* (Cardeña 921, copy of date 1085). In the twelfth century these forms are noticeable in the documents of Oña, the Partido de Villadiego and La Rioja (*Uozilla Asprilla Calaforilla*), but at Burgos and in the vicinity of Aguilar de Campoo *-iello* and *-illo* are equally frequent. North of Aguilar and south of Burgos (notably in Toledo) and to the west in León there is only *-iello* or the Mozarabic *-iel*. In the thirteenth century the situation is drastically changed by the adoption of *-illo* in Burgos (*Castilla Terradillos Francillos*) as the predominant form; and it is from Burgos that the innovation expands, while there is a reaction in the northern districts in favour of *-iello*. Confined to Castile in this century (it is not even found at Osma) the form in *-illo* crosses the dialect frontier in the fourteenth century, when it begins to appear at Toledo (*Johanillo* 1349) amid predominant *-iello*s. In the fifteenth century *-illo* is normal at Valladolid, Segovia and Ávila, and by the end of the period it has ousted *-iello* from literature. Some early cases of *-illo* in Aragón are not easily explained (*Guasilgu* 1055, *Fontilgas* now *Fontellas* 1083). These may be due to a suffix in *-ICULU*

as a variant of -*ICULU*, and so be irrelevant to the present discussion. In common nouns *-iello* is used in Aragón during the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, *-illo* appearing in the fifteenth: *escopilla* 1427, *ramillya* but *castiellyo* 1446. Closely associated with this change from *-iello* to *-illo* are certain words in *-sp-* as *avispa* 'wasp' *nispero* 'medlar' *vispera* 'eve', which displayed a diphthong in older Spanish, and also *siglo* 'world, century' from *siegle* *SAECULU*.

A wider area of diffusion is found in the case of the loss of *J- G-*, and the reduction of *c'L G'L LI* to *j*. We meet with the change in all of Old Castile and the Asturias de Santander, in La Rioja (western portion), in eastern León as far as Sahagún, and southern León (Salamanca). This extension is attained already in the eleventh century, when the southern frontier of the phenomenon followed the crest of the Guadarramas so as to exclude Toledo, Madrid, and Medinaceli (the home of the poet of *Mio Cid*). In central and western León (León city, Eslonza, etc.) and in Aragón (including La Rioja, the lower part, and also the monastery of Silos, an offshoot on Castilian soil) the *J- G-* are preserved and *c'L G'L LI* take their pan-hispanic form *-ll-*. In the thirteenth century the Castilian practice exerts sufficient influence on the surrounding dialects to lead to vacillation. In the documents of the great monastery of Sahagún there is a notable increase throughout the century of *-j-* from *c'L G'L LI*. These groups gave first the pan-hispanic lateral palatal [λ], then the palatal fricative [j], whence a sibilant palatal fricative [ž] or affricate [j̪]. These three related sounds coexist for the pronunciation of *ll* in modern Spanish, where, for instance, *caballero* is pronounced [kaβaλéro] in standard Spanish, [kaβaʎéro] vulgarly and in the south, and [kaβažéro] or [kaβaʝéro] on the Plate; from which it is clear that the Castilian *j* from the above-mentioned groups is at the end of a phonetic evolution which has the palatal fricative as its middle term. The latter was unstable, and served mainly to ease the transition. Thus at Sahagún from 1150-1274 spellings implying [λ] occur in 50 p.c. of the cases; but they drop

to 10 p.c. between 1275 and 1300. At the same time those implying the palatal fricative [j] drop from 35 to 18 p.c., the whole advantage accruing to *j* [ž] or [j]. The change is of the nature of a landslide, thanks to conservative habits of orthography among the notaries.

The widest initial area of a castilianism is that occupied by *ch* < *ct*, *ult*, as in *hecho FACTU leche LACTE noche NOCTE mucho MULTU*. This is again a case of Castilian resoluteness in carrying through a process of change to its logical extreme. The common Spanish, and most usual Romance, solution of these groups is *jt*, as in the Ptg. *feito leite noite muito*. In Catalan, and to some extent in Aragonese, the semi-vowel modified the preceding full vowel, putting an end to the diphthong (Cat. *fet llet nit* but *molt*). In Castilian the semi-vowel modified the following consonant, bringing it to the same palatal position [t̪], and then combining into one affricate [č]. Compare Eng. *try* [trai] with *chi* in *China*, or the Chilean pronunciation of *t* before *r* in *otro* [ó̪t̪io]. Already in the eleventh century the [č] was normal in Castile: *manegga 1090 fegga 1191*, *Fregas* now *Frachela, Cadreggas*. In the twelfth century the spelling *ch* emerges supreme over the alternative experimental forms: *derechero barbecho prouecho*, etc. In the same century the pronunciation [č] is indicated by documents from Toledo, Burgos, Osma, Cuenca, etc., showing that at the opening of the historical period this pronunciation covered both the Castiles. Across the southern frontier, at Medinaceli and Molina, the form in *ch* was in conflict with the Aragonese *it*: *peyte itare* but *leycho echenli* (*Fuero de Medinaceli*, 1125), *peyta feyta* but *dichos fechos* (Molina, thirteenth century). Certain words had more expansive force than others, as *fechos* and notably *mucho*, which virtually ousts the native Aragonese form from Aragonese literary documents. The invasion of León took place in two main stages, corresponding to eastern and central León. The eastern counties, accustomed to intrigue with the Castilians against their Leonese overlord, show [č] well established in the eleventh century: *Fonte tega* for *Fontechá FONTE TACTA* (*Sahagún*

1079), *peccet* for *peche* 1096, *Frachela* 1118. *Peccet* appears at Eslonza in central León in 1173. In the capital we have *Fontecha* recorded in 1136. Though central León was conquered by this castilianism later than eastern, it is possible that the retention of *it* in notarial documents of this epoch was already an archaism, supported on the prestige of Galicia, seeing that the majority of Asturian dialects have *ch*. The *it* remains to-day only in touch with the Galician-Portuguese border, to the west of Oviedo, Cangas de Onís, Astorga, Zamora, and at Miranda del Duero, which is politically included within Portugal.

A similar range was originally occupied by another castilianism of standard Spanish, viz., *sc̄ > ç*: *FASCIA* 'band' Cast. *haça* *haza* 'piece of cultivable land' *Hazas Hacinas*, but Ptg. *faixa* *faxa* Cat. *faixa* Leon. *faxa* *fexa* Arag. *faxa* Moz. *faſa*.

### CASTILE'S CASTING VOTE

In the foregoing examples we see how the self-reliant spirit of Castile imposed on the Spanish language the most logical and developed forms. Not less important is the rôle Castilian played in the acceptance or rejection of speech-habits originally restricted to one or other portion of the Peninsula. It was adoption by Castilian that made them universally valid.

Notable among these cases is the treatment of tonic ē ò and of the diphthongs AI AU. As for ē ò the Peninsular languages and dialects found themselves divided by conflicting tendencies which went back at least to the Visigothic period. To the introduction of the diphthong *Tarragonensis*, *Gallæcia*, *Lusitania* and the region of *Granada* showed a high power of resistance, radiating doubtless from their capitals *Tarraco*, *Bracara*, *Emerita*, *Corduba* and *Hispalis*. Thanks to this resistance Catalan does not diphthongize (except under the influence of a palatal, as in *Provençal*: *ull* öc'lu, *nit* nöcte owe their vowels to a simplification of *yei*), nor Galician-Portuguese at all (*olho* *noite*). The other provinces are in the Spanish area, and therefore conflict with the habits

of the whole north (Leon. Arag. *uello nueite*). Castilian belongs to this region, and exercised its influence on the history of the diphthong in three ways: it accepted the diphthong *ie ue* in most cases and so secured its adoption in Spanish; it carried through the process of simplification to the logical conclusion by eliminating the alternatives *ia ua uo*; and it exempted from diphthongization ē ò before a palatal (*ojo noche*). The cause of this unexpected piece of conservatism is not precisely known. As diphthongization before a palatal not only occurs in common Spanish and in French (*œil nuit*), but also in Provençal and Catalan which do not otherwise indulge in the practice, it would appear to have been the oldest type of diphthongization. Cantabria, on the other hand, was a land of relatively late romanization. As for the precise value of these diphthongs, Leonese and Aragonese vacillate between the various forms in most of their earlier documents, and such a sound as *ua* remains to this day in Aragonese place-names: *Lascuarres*. The pronunciation *uo* is found in the *Auto de los Reyes Magos*, *Poema de mio Cid* and *Disputa del Alma*, the three oldest documents of Spanish literature, because none of these belong to the Castilian area of Burgos; the first is the work of a Toledan Mozarab, the second of a Mozarab of Medinaceli, and the third belongs to the archaizing north (Oña).

In the case of the Latin diphthong *AI*, it was Catalan and Aragonese which first carried through its monophthongization, so that *-ARIU*, for instance, gave *-er(o)*. The Castilian of the eleventh century shows the intermediate stage *ei* in *karreira*, but in the twelfth these forms show a localization in the north, and particularly in the province of Santander, whereas in the Castilian of Burgos the vowel *e* tends to mastery. This contrasts with the long vacillation of central León, and the retention of *ei* to this day in western Leonese and Galician-Portuguese. Similarly *AU>o* was a change effected more promptly in the east of the Peninsula, but generalized through Castilian.

Among important consonantal developments which have

been influenced by Castilian are initial **L**-, initial **PL- CL- FL-**, and medial **-MB-**.

Initial **L**- was pronounced with more tension than medial and final, and involved rather more attachment of the tongue to the roof of the mouth. By exaggerating this attachment [l:] the sound passed, in several quarters of the Peninsula, into a palatal [ʎ], capable of further transformation into [j] or [ʂ]. The lateral palatal was adopted in Catalan (**LARGU llarg**, **LUNA lluna**, etc.), in the Asturias (*lluna tsuna*), and sporadically in the south (Moz. *yengua* from *\*llengua LINGUA*); Galician and Portuguese retained the dental pronunciation (*língoa lua*). The fact that Castilian also dissented from this change caused it not to be adopted by standard Spanish.

On the other hand Castilian shared partially in the western tendency to alter the pronunciation of a voiceless initial consonant followed by *l* (**PL- CL- FL-**). The treatment of voiced initials of the same series is more variable, and can be left out of account here. In this case the centre of innovating activity lay in León or Galicia, while the most conservative regions lay farthest east (Catalan) or south (Mozarabic). In these regions the Latin groups survived unaltered: Cat. *pla clamar flama* **PLANU CLAMARE FLAMMA**, Moz. *plantain* **PLANTAGINE**. In Portuguese and Galician the process of change has resulted in *ch* (an affricate or a fricative palatal); in old Leonese it gave *x* [ʂ], and in modern west Leonese it gives *ts* [ʂ]. The influence of Castilian was exerted in bringing this series of changes to a halt at an early moment of its history. The first stage must have been a pronunciation of the *l* with lingering articulation, giving *pll- cll- fl-* as at present (though perhaps from other causes) in Ribagorza. Then this *ll* was aggrandized at the expense of the initial consonant, which disappeared, leaving Cast. *llano llamar llama*. Thus Castilian has deflected in standard Spanish an evolution that centres in the north-west and has there continued unchecked.

An eastern (Catalan and Aragonese) mannerism, made valid for the rest of Spain by Castilian adoption, is the simpli-

fication of *-MB-* to *m* in **PALUMBA** Sp. *paloma* 'dove', **LOMBU** Sp. *lomo* 'loin'. But Castilian has not adopted the parallel evolution of *-ND-* to *n* in **DEMANDARE** Cat. Arag. *demanar*. Spanish retains *demandar*.

These are some of the instances in which the Castilian dialect has imposed its will on 'correct' Spanish. Generally it has been a bold innovator, carrying evolution to its limits. Sometimes it has shared in the novelties of eastern or of western Spain and given them validity for the whole country. More rarely Castilian has opposed a change, or has even caused a reaction against a form already part of the speech-habits of the majority of Spanish-speakers. In each instance it has displayed an energy and resolution similar to that which Castilians displayed in gaining and using the Peninsular hegemony. The sum total of Castilian activities is the peculiar cachet of Spanish among all languages descended from Latin.

On the above, see R. Menéndez Pidal's *Orígenes del Español, passim*. **FLAMMA** *llama* is the only important word to show this change in Castilian, but *FL-* follows the same history as *PL-* *CL-* in Leonese and Galician-Portuguese in a considerable number of words. Even there it is not easy to consider **FLORE** OPtg. *frol* 'flower' as a 'learned' word, and the question arises whether there are not two possibilities for Lat. *FL-*, viz. *fl-* and Ptg. *fr-* Sp. *fl-*. *FL-* gives *l-* in *Láinez*, *Lambra*, cf. Basque *lore* from **FLORE**.

### THE LANGUAGES OF LITERATURE

The rise of a vernacular literature acted as a precipitant on the numerous pre-literary Spanish dialects, defining with increasing clearness the literary speech, and reducing the others to subordinate uses. Under the conditions of the earlier Middle Ages Galicia made more progress in wealth and culture than the harried central plains, and it contained an important spiritual capital in the Shrine of St James. The kings of León and of León-Castile from Alfonso VII to Alfonso X were often nurtured in Galicia, and may have felt an inbred sympathy for the soft Galician speech. It is certain, at least, that they favoured the unique use of Galician in the

twelfth and thirteenth centuries for the purposes of lyrical poetry, both courtly and traditional; and they gave expression to this preference in the *Cantigas de Santa María* of Alfonso X for religious poetry, and the Galician-Portuguese *Cancioneiros*, supposedly edited by Count Pedro de Barcelos, for secular. The latter contained not only two strata of courtly poems based on Provençal prosody, but also the inimitable women's songs in parallel verses like those of the *Psalms*, with their wistfully childlike accents. On the other hand, from at least the middle of the eleventh century the profound national sentiment of Castile gave rise to heroic poems on the Infantes de Lara, the Castilian counts, and Ruy Díaz the Cid. For such narrative poems Castilian was obligatory, so that the Mozarab author of the *Poema de mio Cid* writes in Castilian, with no more than an occasional slip to indicate his native dialect (*Gujera* for *Cullera*, *Castejón* for *Castellón*, which are instances of ultra-correction). At the same time for courtly lyrical poetry Castilians, Sevillans, and even an Italian adopted Galician as their medium; and there appeared to be a specialization of dialect for literary purposes like that of Ionic and Doric in Greece. It is not that no songs were sung in Castilian. Indeed the evidence of later literature suggests that a definitely Castilian manner (the *villancico*) had already come into use, and the rhythmic chants of certain trades and vocations must have existed then as now. But as yet the Castilian lyric lacked official and literary encouragement.

As a result of the vast labours of Alfonso X a new department of literature was opened for the special advantage of Castilian, namely prose. Vast histories, treatises on science and law, books of good counsels and lastly novels appeared to the profit of this dominant dialect. Galician, on the contrary, achieved no prose save a translation of the Castilian *Crónica Troyana* of Leomarte (1373). The antithesis now stood as Galician court lyric versus Castilian epos and prose. The fourteenth and early fifteenth centuries saw lyrics also fall to the share of Castilian. Firstly Juan Ruiz, in his pre-

dominantly narrative *Libro de Buen Amor* (1330, 1343), offered samples of hill-maiden songs, songs for beggars and scholars, hymns to the Virgin, and goliardic verses in Castilian, and in a variety of metres and manners that showed a sturdy independence of the Galician and Provençalizing school. The *Cancionero de Baena* (1445) bears witness to the passage from Galician to Castilian in the career of Alfonso Álvarez de Villasandino, one of the older generation of its poets, who commences in the Galician manner and ends in the Castilian. A younger generation headed by Micer Francisco Imperial, author of an important poem on the birth of Juan II (1405), has forgotten Galician, and has passed on to a new propaganda in favour of Italian models. Similarly, whereas the grandfather of the famous Marquis of Santillana (1398–1458) composed his songs in Galician, the Marquis himself has only one such experiment, all his other verses being in Castilian. As nothing succeeded the *Cancioneiros* in Galicia, this defection of the Castilian poets led to the complete eclipse of the Galician dialect for literary purposes, until it was revived as a regional literature by Rosalía de Castro, Pondal and Curros Enríquez in the mid-nineteenth century.

In this way the use of a dual system was ended. At the same time great strides were taken in the direction of crystallizing Castilian itself. The narrative poems of the early thirteenth century show considerable dialectal independence. With a modicum of Castilian in common, Berceo used forms from his Riojano (Navarro-Aragonese) dialect, the *Libro de Apolonio* is markedly Aragonese, and the short *Tres Reis d'Orient* is near-Catalan. On the other side the *Libro de Alexandre* and the Grail-novels (early fourteenth century), together with the *Disputa de Elena y María*, have evident Leonese characteristics. Towards the end of the thirteenth century the practices of the Toledan chancery begin to influence the literary language, and they are embodied in the *Primera Crónica General*, the *Grande e General Estoria*, the *Siete Partidas*, and other works. These are Castilian, indeed, but

no longer the precise dialect of Burgos. The Burgalese aspirate is not admitted, the numerous contracted forms of the *Poema de mio Cid* disappear gradually, and the literary committees are preoccupied with the creation of an adequate vocabulary and polished forms of expression. The care taken by Alfonso X with the style of his works, though we cannot ascertain the details, was of the profoundest importance for the Spanish language. There came into existence an *español correcto* (to use a modern term)—Castilian with certain concessions to Leonese and many more to Latin—which appears as virtually the modern literary language in D. Juan Manuel's *Conde Lucanor* (1325) and other works. Dialectal traces are still to be found in the *Poema de Alfonso Onceno* and Clemente Sánchez de Vercial; but in diminishing numbers.

By the sixteenth century standard Spanish was firmly established. There remained only some controversy as to its interpretation. Two of the most influential law-givers were Andalusians, Nebrija for grammar in general, and Herrera for poetical diction. Juan de Valdés (1536) and 'Prete Jacopín' contested their authority, asserting the claims of polite society in Toledo to determine the Spanish standard. Both parties concurred in admiring as a practical measure of the language the style of Garcilaso de la Vega (d. 1536), and when at last the capital of the country was fixed in Madrid (1560) men of letters were drawn together and rapidly settled their differences, chiefly through the *comedia*, which served both as the theatre and as the journalism of that age.

The union of León and Castile into one medieval dominion caused Leonese first to disappear from cultural use. The history of Aragonese is generally similar, but with minor differences. Zaragoza was the capital of a kingdom which spoke a variety of Spanish, and its chancery was not bound to follow the norms of Toledo; nor was it governed by the Catalan-speaking chanceries of Barcelona, Valencia and Majorca. Latin yielded gradually to Aragonese in official documents, and Aragonese was to some extent normalized

for official and literary purposes. Examples of this sort of Aragonese are to be found in the great corpus of Juan Fernández de Heredia (d. 1396), in his *Gran Crónica de los Conquistadores*, in the translations from Marco Polo, Hayton and Mandeville, and in the Vatican *Tristán de Leonís*. All these works show compromise with Castilian in greater or smaller degree (e.g. the word *mucho* is normal, with Castilian *-ch-*). Lacking the support of three-quarters of the kingdom of Aragón, Aragonese had no sufficient hinterland to develop a robust tradition of its own, and on the union of Castile and Aragón in 1479 its conventional literary dialect was obliterated in favour of Castilian. There remained to Aragonese writers an attitude of mind. The Argensolas and Gracián are more austere in matters of idiom and style than their contemporaries born to the manner of Castile; scrupulous correctness, brevity and gravity are perhaps in them signs of a language gained by self-discipline.

The use of standard Spanish passed the frontiers of the language. On the east, after the incorporation of Aragonese, it assaulted Catalan. The position of Catalan had been considerably weakened by the accession in 1412 of a Spanish dynasty. Instead of the vigorous encouragement which had been given by Jaume I, Pere el Gran, and Pere del Punyalet, the Trastamaran kings showed leaning towards their Aragonese-speaking subjects, who occupy a considerable part of the *Cancionero de Estúñiga* (1458), which represents the taste of the Neapolitan circle of Alfonso the Magnanimous. Catalan emancipated itself from Provençal thanks to the four great chronicles and Ramon Lull. Under the hands of Bernat Metge and in his *Somni* (1398) the literary dialect was firmly organized for the purposes of prose. But little use was made of this tool in the unfavourable conditions of the fifteenth century; and Catalan must be supposed already suffering a cultural decline when it felt the impact of Castilian at the end of this era, notwithstanding the individual brilliance of the Valencian poets Jordi de Sant Jordi, Auzias March, and Jaume Roig. In the sixteenth century Catalan is restricted

to regional purposes; Spanish is the language of those who seek to address a wider audience. The figure who typifies this attitude is Boscán, the friend and colleague of Garcilaso de la Vega, and the joint-founder of modern Spanish prosody. He was a native of Barcelona who has deliberately preferred the language of all Spain. The sequence of antiquarian works and local histories died away in the course of the century, and in the next two Catalan was little more than a spoken dialect, supported by the peasantry, the preaching clergy, and some vulgar lyrics. It remained, however, the native tongue of Catalans, Valencians and Majorcans, and its rhythms and memories prevented a complete assimilation to Castile. In the nineteenth century an earnest attempt to solve this difficulty was made by the Castilianist school of Barcelona under Romantic impulse—by Cabanyes, Piferrer, Balaguer and Milà. They sought to express thoughts of local inspiration, and rhythms innate in them, in Castilian; but the effort was too great. On the one hand, the Castilian critics, such as Hermosilla, declined to admit the difficult rhythms of Cabanyes; on the other, the spontaneous popular lyric and local legend were necessarily falsified by transposition into an alien tongue. Compromise being unfruitful, there remained only the alternatives of submission to Castilian or the resurrection of Catalan as a literary speech. The latter line was followed. The Floral Games (1859 ff.) at Barcelona stimulated general interest, though in a conventional troubadouresque language. Jacinto Verdaguer collected genuine Catalan from the lips of peasants and poured it out in epics and lyrics of indubitable inspiration; Marian Aguiló restored the vocabulary preserved by ballads and medieval literature; Joan Maragall completed the task by forging an adequate medium for verse and prose; and Carner and López-Picó have made its rhythms subtle and its significance profound. The fact that a standard had already been reached by Metge under the old kingdom, and the abundance of national traditions, greatly facilitated the restoration. Catalan is now a language apt for poetry, artistic prose, science and journalism;

but Spanish is the language of intercourse with the rest of Spain and of appeal beyond the Catalan frontiers.

Portuguese also felt the impact of Castile. The close kinship of the two speeches, indeed, made the struggle more domestic, and of the nature of a civil war of language. Identical at first with Galician, Portuguese commenced with a rich store of courtly and popular songs in the *cancioneiros*. The work of the Toledan chancery for Castilian had an offshoot in the *Livros de Linhagens* (c. 1350), attributed to the same Count of Barcelos who compiled the song-books. In them the material is often of Spanish origin, but the language is the first specimen of literary Portuguese. This speech was further developed by the savoury prose of Fernão Lopes and the more academic manner of Azurara, the great fifteenth-century chroniclers. Thus Portuguese had body and tradition.

Its position as a cultural language, however, was threatened by the prestige of Castilian, and the later years of the fifteenth century and early sixteenth witnessed a severe crisis. The Constable Pedro of Portugal composed his moral poems in Castilian, and Castilian was the language favoured by the court of Manuel the Fortunate (d. 1525). It occupies much space in the *Cancioneiro de Rezende* (1516), which reflects the preferences of the court in lyrical poetry. It is prominent also in the farces of Gil Vicente, written between 1502 and 1536, but it is there used with a difference. Gil Vicente's Spanish is, in fact, a Spanish adapted to the norms of Lisbon, and it represents the terms on which alone Spanish could hope to supplant Portuguese in Portugal. The personal infinitive he found too useful in his own language to omit from his Spanish: *para seres loado* 'so that you be praised'. His language is full of *lusismos*, as *mor* Sp. *mayor*, *crego* Sp. *clérigo*, *frecha* Sp. *flecha*, *genojos* Sp. *hinojos*, *esta* Sp. *esté*, *sentio* Sp. *sintió*, *igreja* Sp. *iglesia*. For some of these he could find justification in the dialect of León, and for others he could plead Spanish precedent, though of an earlier epoch, as for *aína cadaldia* *hecistes defension*, etc. In some cases he falls into ultra-correction, as *plado* Sp. *prado* (since Ptg. *branco* corresponds

to Sp. *blanco*), *siendas* Sp. *sendas*, *enhadar* Sp. *enfadjar*, *cierca* Sp. *cerca*, *nos* Sp. *nosotros*. He had one sibilant for *s* & where Spanish had two, and so rhymes *romance vanse* and writes *aseche altesa sociego resar*. His vowels are not always those of standard Castilian. Thanks to Ptg. *deusa* 'goddess', he writes *diesa* Sp. *diosa*; and he can rhyme *corte* with *muerte*. Thus a modified Spanish tended to be set up in Lisbon, like the 'Inglis' of the medieval Scottish poets. Its prestige, however, varied in the poet's own lifetime. Castilian is, for him, the general tongue. He uses it for what is not specifically Portuguese, as in the *Comedia de Rubena* or the plays based on novels of chivalry (*Dom Duardos, Amadís de Gaula*). It is the language of serious figures: kings, angels, gods, heroes when they throw off their humble disguises, persons of biblical or allegorical importance. Portuguese is the language of his peasants, muleteers, witches, demons and comedy figures. But in his later farces Portuguese comes into its own. It is necessarily the language of 'Lusitania' and also of 'Fame' in the plays of those names, and the *Auto da Alma*, as early as 1508, is wholly Portuguese.

Vicente is the last great medieval author of Portugal. The new generation of humanists (Sá de Miranda, Ferreira, Camões, Diogo Bernardes, Barros, Agostinho da Cruz) gave an enormous impetus to the national tongue, and created the classical literature of Portugal. The *Lusiadas* (1572) were an imperishable memory. These poets, however, with the single exception of António Ferreira, versified also in the Spanish of Portugal, less far removed from that of Spain than Vicente's. They left the door open for the re-entry of Castilian as a result of the union of the crowns (1580-1640), the Castilian monopoly of the theatre, and the change of æsthetic principles implied by *gongorismo* and *conceptismo*. The early seventeenth century saw a new crisis in the use of Portuguese. Faria e Sousa expounded the *Lusiadas* in Spanish, Francisco Manuel de Melo wrote minor works in Portuguese but sought a world market for his *Historia de los movimientos, separación y guerra de Cataluña* (1645). It was in Spanish that D. João de Bragança

rebelled against Spain, and in Spanish he wrote his treatise on music. But the later part of this period witnessed the dwindling of Spain's political prestige, and the sudden rise of France. To France the eyes of Portuguese thinkers turned, and Spanish seemed no longer to enjoy international currency. The mediocre poets of the eighteenth century were resolute in one thing, namely the exclusive literary use of Portuguese, and for the last time Spanish was evicted from Portugal. The talents of Bocage, followed by the more lofty inspiration of Garrett and Herculano, and finally the writers of more recent times, have found in Portuguese the only means of expressing deep and moving sentiments; though the similarity of the two languages has caused Portugal to be tolerably well informed concerning literary movements in Spain. Conspicuous in the regeneration of Portuguese has been the pervasive influence of Camões; Bocage was his disciple, Garrett his epic singer, the historians are inspired by his scenes of pathos, heroic striving and disaster. Above all it is as the 'language of Camões', as the custodian of a common tradition too valuable to be forgotten, that Portuguese unites spiritually to Portugal its great daughter-republic, Brazil.

### JEWISH SPANISH

We may obtain an almost contemporary idea of what Spanish was before the great changes of its Golden Age by means of the Jewish dialects scattered over the Balkans from Constantinople to Bosnia and over the north fringe of Africa. The Jews abandoned their homeland in two principal dispersions. The first was the *diaspora* of 1492 and 1496 when they were brutally expelled from Spain by the Catholic Sovereigns and from Portugal (after a few years of feigned hospitality) by Manuel the Fortunate. The emigrants were chiefly men of the humbler classes; the rich, embarrassed by their possessions, frequently accepted the alternative of conversion, and they were so curbed by the Inquisition that their sons

lost the tradition of their fathers' worship. A third generation, however, felt curiosity as to their faith, and without renouncing Christianity openly, they fell to intensive study of the Pentateuch. Covertly realizing their holdings, they took ship in small parties for free countries where they might be at liberty to revert openly to Judaism. England was not opened to them, and after a brief stay at Hamburg, they negotiated an agreement with the civic authorities of Amsterdam, who longed for their capital. Thus the Jewish synagogue was established in Amsterdam, where it became wealthy with the rising commercial prosperity of Holland. Enabled by Cromwell to settle in England, these Sephardic communities took part in the growing mercantile prosperity of England and notably in the development of the East India Company's ventures. The second dispersion has had the most important cultural consequences, but is not of immediate linguistic interest to us. It accompanied, and perhaps in part caused, the mercantile prosperity of Holland and England. Jews of this kind appreciated Spanish literature abroad; translated directly from Spanish into Dutch and other languages some of the main successes of the novel and drama; included poets of high rank, like Pinto Delgado the singer of *Ester* and the dramatist Enríquez Gómez; while out of the conflict between Ashkenazic tradition and a rational interpretation of the Law rose the controversial works of Uriel da Costa and the philosophy of Spinoza. The loss of Hebrew by these communities has left their Spanish in the position of a liturgical language, while for practical purposes they have adopted English, Dutch or other national speeches. In Hamburg such traces have almost died out.

The earlier dispersion is less notable culturally, but has led to the survival of a medieval Spanish in a state of suspended animation. The refugees fled with the miserable remains of their property to Oran and other parts of Africa, where they were again despoiled; and to Italy, where the House of Este welcomed them to Ferrara, where partial toleration reigned. This sufficed to create conditions favourable to some literary

development, as witnessed by the Ferrara Bible in Spanish and Samuel Usque's sombre *Consolação ás tribulações de Israel* in Portuguese. More attractive conditions were offered by the Turkish sultans, and the migration continued eastward to Constantinople. There they set up their printing-presses, and the first work printed in Turkey is said to have been the Constantinopolitan *Pentateuch* of 1547. The most considerable was Almosnino's *Libro intitulado regimento de la vida* (1564), a considerable achievement of scholarship. These books are composed in almost pure pre-classical Spanish, known as *ladino* to distinguish it from the *español* or *žudío* (in Bosnia *židjó*) of current speech. Connection with Spain was not at once entirely lost. *Amadís de Gaula* was read by them, and some new ballads (like the one on the death of the Duke of Gandia, 1496) were added to the repertoire of the *cantaderas*. The alphabet normally employed among the Spanish Jews was and remains that in *Raši* characters, an adapted Hebrew, involving the use of points to indicate doubled letters, *ly* for *ll*, initial *aleph* and vowel-glides expressly marked by *y* and *w*. A tick above a letter sufficed to create a new symbol for a Spanish sound unknown to Hebrew, e.g. a tick over *gimel* to indicate both *j* [ž j] and *ch* [č], over *pe* for *f*, and over *beth* and *daleth* for fricative *b* *d*. This transcription was already in use among the Jews of Spain during the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries, but its use by Almosnino gives an exact measure of phonetic changes suffered since his day.

It is not to be supposed that the Spanish of Jews resident in the Peninsula was quite uniform in itself or identical with that of their Christian neighbours. The moral poem of Sem Tob (1350) shows a fund of metaphor and illustration different from that of its contemporaries, thanks to his Talmudic readings; but perhaps the most satisfactory text is the fragmentary *Coplas de Yoçef*, edited by Dr González Llubera. There is the characteristic *el Dio* where Christians say *Dios*; words showing a different literary tradition (*Aibto* for *Egipto*); the Hebrew form of names (*Yoçef*, *Yišhak*, etc.); archaisms

like *horro* (also in Juan Ruiz), Sp. *libre*, and a change in the form of the verse. On the other hand, even after the dispersion we hear of regional differences preserved by separate synagogues for Castile, Aragón and Portugal, and even for separate towns: *sinagogas cordubenses, lisboetas*, etc. From this it is clear that the common basis of the existing dialects is a *koiné* established since the dispersion, into which have crept new regional differences corresponding to the location of the speakers in Constantinople, Salonika, Skoplje, Monastir, Oran or Constantine. This *koiné* has absorbed the Portuguese Jews, and also others of diverse origins, as Turkish, Greek or Italian; and in so doing, it has made numerous concessions, especially in the realm of vocabulary.

The written and the spoken languages have come to vary considerably. The written tongue has almost the whole wealth of pre-classical Spanish as exemplified in the *Amadís* and *Celestina*, but the vernacular has been grievously impoverished. Thus the whole range of words *varón macho hembra niño* is possessed by the *ladino* texts but not by *žudio*. Inveterate townsmen, the Balkan Jews think of trees only as a class (*árbol*) and not of particular sorts of tree, and distinguish birds only as birds of prey (*pašaru*) or song-birds (*pašariku*); to denote species they must borrow from the surrounding languages, Turkish, Serbo-Croatian, etc. When the Spanish terms occur in ballads they are understood, but obsolete. Early travellers, however, reported that the colloquial was as correct as the language of Spain. Similarly there have been developments of the Spanish sounds. Evidently *ll* emigrated as a lateral palatal, spelt *ly*, but only *y* occurs in the colloquial, so that written *'elyía* is pronounced *eja* (*ella*). Cases of *yeísmo*, ancient vulgarisms, occur in the Cambridge fragment of Sem Tob, which doubtless emigrated alongside the correct *ll* and gradually took its place. In Almosnino *f* has become an aspirated *h*: *hilo hižo hallar hasta*, as distinguished from the 'silent' *h* of *hombre*, etc., which he spells *ombre, onra aber*. The colloquial is richer in sounds, as it contains the Portuguese and dialectal *f*, the old Castilian aspirate, and

the modern want of aspiration: *ferir fierro forka fuir forro, huente huero huerte, avlar avla* (Sp. *habla*).

The sibilants are the Old Castilian series. The voiceless [s] is distinguished from the voiced [z] which occurs when -s-falls between vowels or before a voiced consonant within a word. For this distinction the *Raši* script makes use of *sin* [s] and *zayin* [z]: *Roza Firmoza mozotrus kaza* for Sp. *Rosa Hermosa nosotros casa*, but *pasar asar gyesu* for OSp. *passar assar huesso*. The same letters *sin* and *zayin* and pronunciations [s z] serve to distinguish OSp. *g z*: *kavesa sinko senar amenazar vizinu siniza* for MSp. *cabeza cinco cenar amenazar vecino ceniza*. These *s z* sounds are dorsoalveolar, i.e. pronounced with the tip of the tongue on the lower teeth and a constricted passage between the back of the tongue and the alveoli; but the Spanish *s z* was cacuminal, i.e. pronounced with the tip of the tongue raised to make friction on the alveoli. This pronunciation has been lost in Jewish Spanish, but traces of it remain in frequent confusions between [s z] and [š ž], or *s z* and *x ž*. So we get *buškar čamuškar moška piškadu* and even *seš kantáš tenéš* for *buscar chamuscar mosca pescado seis cantáis tenéis*. The pronunciation [ž] also occurs for the ancient *z*: Bosnian and Constantinopolitan *ondzi dodze dodzena*, etc. for *once doce docena*; also *mandziya podzada* for *mancilla posada*, making use of the [ž] of the compounds of **DECEM** in which it is historically justified. In the same way Jewish Spanish continues the ancient distinction between *x, j g* [š ž] by means of *shin* and modified *gimel* in writing, and by [š ž] in speech. Now [ž] is akin to the fricative palatal *y* [j] and to the corresponding affricate [ž], as in Sp. *mayo cónyuge*. So in speech the distinction runs between [š] for the ancient *x* and [ž j ž] for ancient *j g* and *y*: **x** *bruša šabón lešos*; **y** *ja jazer jerba jugo ajer ajudar lej rej*; affricate *jemir jarra jeneroso jidió ánjel monje*; **j** *ižo* (Sp. *hijo FILIU*).

A conspicuous archaism of Jewish Spanish is the distinction drawn between occlusive and fricative *b*, a distinction maintained by medieval Castilian and even carried to the New World as late as the middle of the sixteenth century, as

Mapuche borrowings show. They discriminate *boka bien* from *vinu vela vengar*, and *barva bever* (MSp. *barba beber*). Such archaisms correspond with the language described by Nebrija in 1492, to which also belong words like *ansi ainda* (Sp. *todavía*) *arrivar* (MSp. *llegar*) *namorado konortar bevienda barragán*, etc.

In the course of their development the Jewish Spanish dialects have acquired very many peculiarities, of which we shall cite only a few which have a more general significance. They show, naturally, Judaisms. The most notable is *el Dio* for *Dios*. In the *Tragedia Josefina* (1535?) Miguel de Carvajal causes Joseph and the good characters to speak of *Dios*, but his brothers of *el Dio*. Religious motives caused the avoidance of *domingo* 'Lord's day' for the first day of the week, which is rendered prosaically by Ar. *al-ahad* 'the first', as *alxad*. The synagogue and school contribute to the lexicon: *desmazalado* 'ill-starred' from *mazal* 'destiny' (Heb. *mazzal* 'wandering stars, planets, signs of the zodiac'), which Cervantes also used as an equivalent of *malhadado*; *malsín* 'calumniator', which Christian Spaniards used from the thirteenth century in the sense of 'mischief-maker'; *mišelikar* 'to sneak, tell tales in school, denounce', cf. Ptg. *mexericar* 'to cause strife, meddle'. The relation of these words is not certain, and the etymon may be Lat. *MISCERE* or Heb. *m'sirah* 'denunciation' (Yiddish *mesirah*). Care is taken to avoid inauspicious or unseemly terms by means of euphemisms, such as *blanco* 'coal' to avoid the inauspicious word 'black'; and imprecations, for the same reason, take the form of ironical blessings. Hebrew terms are used to denote moral qualities, either as more exact or more affecting than Spanish: *andáv* 'humble', *χénef* 'flatterer', *la χenoza* 'the gracious woman', *un biento* or *un gabayí* 'a proud man'. The names of men are strictly biblical; those of women are Spanish and denote gracious qualities: *Firmoza Estreya Vida Señora Palomba Grasia*. Spanish also are the surnames (*alkuñas*): as *Alkalay Kabilyo Kalderón Montiya Kavesón Perera Maestro Pinto*. Surrounding races receive cant names, such as 'Philistines' or 'Amalekites', expressive of different degrees of aversion.

The colloquial has continued to lose ground. As the language of townsmen it has been deprived of the greater part of its nature-vocabulary, for which it borrows from neighbours as circumstances demand. The bilingualism of the Jew causes these borrowings to be very numerous, and to result in crossings which are extremely complicated, while the lexicon differs between one place and the next. Thus the dragon-fly (Sp. *libélula*) is *kačayiku* among Bulgarian Jews because of the native *konče* possibly aided by the Rumanian *calul dracului* 'dragon's horse', and in Brusa the weasel (*comadreja*) is *nobiizzka* 'the bride' so as to render either Turkish *gelingik* or MGk. νυμφίτσα (in Bulgaria it is called *patrona de kaza*). The precise source of a word cannot always be determined amid so many currents of borrowing: *triandáfila* 'rose' may be due to MGk. τριαντάφυλλο alone, or also indebted to Rum. *trandafr*. The word *meldar* has replaced the Sp. *leer* 'read', possibly owing to Gk. μελετᾶν 'to care for, meditate', as the manner of reading more suited to sacred texts. The word is put in the mouth of the Rabbi in the fifteenth-century *Danza de la Muerte*.

On the Adriatic coast the interests of Venice have spread a number of Italian terms among the Jews of Bosnia, and French has had a growing influence because of its international value in the Levant. The schools instituted by the Alliance Israélite have proved to be centres for the propagation of French, and the proportionate impoverishment of the Spanish element. More recently the exasperated nationalism that has been left as a dire legacy by the War has shown hostility to this minority speech. It was recognized by the Turks as a language of their empire, and the Jews as one of the peoples among many; but the succession states recognize only their own nationality and their official languages, which they decree must be the sole languages of instruction. Thus the minorities are overthrown through their children.

See the general treatment by M. L. Wagner, *Caracteres generales del judeo-español de Oriente* (Madrid, 1930). Texts in C. M. Crews, *Recherches sur le Judéo-Espagnol* (Paris, 1935).

PHONETIC DEVELOPMENT IN  
THE GOLDEN AGE

Antonio de Nebrija's *Gramática de la Lengua Castellana* (1492) sums up the language at a moment of relative stability, when it had run through the gamut of its medieval changes and had not yet entered upon the important transformations effected by the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries. The date is also the point of departure of the Jewish Spanish dialects as still spoken in Salonika, Skoplje, Oran and Tangiers, which have preserved for us, in large measure, the linguistic conditions of medieval Spain. These dialects have not shared either in the ennoblement of the vocabulary and style or in the phonetic changes which were brought about by the intense life of the Spanish Golden Age. One of these changes we have already had cause to discuss. In Nebrija's *Gramática* and *Orthographia* (1517) Lat. *f* has finally given way to Cast. *h* in standard Spanish; it is 'la boz que comunmente succedio ala *f* latina', as well as serving in two other cases as a conventional sign. He recognizes in this *h* a guttural of the nature of Ar. Hebr. *h*, in the phrase 'nos otros la pronunciamos hiriendo en la garganta'. But while Nebrija, an Andaluz writing at Salamanca in León, aspirated his *h*, there was already a strong impetus towards its disuse in Old Castile; and this silencing invades the standard language during the course of the century, until it becomes universal about 1580. *H* prevents liaison in the verses of Fray Luis de León (Salamanca, c. 1578), Alonso de Ercilla (Toledo, c. 1578) and Herrera (Sevilla, 1582), and the latter is careful to indicate the pronunciation by his spelling; but it has rarely this effect in the poetry of Lope de Vega (Madrid, 1585 ff.).

The medieval language distinguished two values of *b d g*, a fricative and an occlusive. The fricative arose from Lat. *B D G*, the occlusive from Lat. *P T K*. An orthographic distinction was set up only in the first case, where *v* (or *u*) offered a convenient means of discriminating the two values. They were related to each other intimately, as they are in

contemporary Spanish, namely, that the fricative became occlusive in absolute initial positions or after a nasal. Thus *VIVERE* gives *bivar*, *CAPRA cabra*, *DEBET deve*. During the course of the sixteenth century these sounds fall into a single series, invariably occlusive in strong positions, and invariably fricative in weak positions. The letters *b* and *v* continue to be used, though no longer marking a phonetic distinction; and their incidence has been regulated by the Academy more or less on etymological principles. The medieval distinction of these sounds accompanied the *conquistadores* to the New World. In southern Chile, where the conquest commenced in the second half of the sixteenth century, the Araucanian Indians distinguished the [b] from *p* in *NAPOS nabos* 'turnips' and *estribo* 'stirrup' from the [b] of *CABALLU caballo* 'horse' and *FABAS habas* 'beans' by employing different signs: *napur irtipu* but *cahuallu* (also modern Nahuatl) *aghucas*. In that language there are only voiceless occlusives and voiced fricatives, so that the Spanish distinction between the occlusive and the fricative values becomes in Mapuche a distinction between the voiceless and the voiced. The Araucanian borrowings do not indicate the parallel distinctions for *d g*. From the fricative stage, both these sounds tended to disappear in weak positions: *TEPIDU tibio* 'warm', *AUDIRE oír* 'hear', *LEGALE leal* 'loyal'. In the fifteenth century the *d < t* in the second person plural of verbs also was attacked. As early as the third quarter of the fourteenth century the ending *-edes* had given *-ées* and *-és*, and *sodes* had given *soes*. In the fifteenth century *amádis amaes amás*, *soes sois sos*, *queréis querés*, *decís* were firmly established against the *amades sodes queredes decides* of the thirteenth. The *-d-* persisted, however, when the accent did not fall on the vowel immediately preceding, so that Cervantes, Lope de Vega, Tirso de Molina and Quevedo prefer to write *amábades hariades amdsedes*. Villegas (1618) ignores this *d* also, and examples of its loss have been found as early as 1555. In the imperative *-ATE -ETE -ITE*, *-ade -ede -ide* ceased to offer intervocalic *d* through the early loss of final *e*, so that *d* remains in *amad quered decid*, and only dis-

appears when this *d* becomes intervocal in *amaos* (for *amados*), etc.

In the modern vernaculars all intervocal *d g* are threatened with elimination, and standard Spanish has virtually accepted the innovation in the case of the group *-ado*. In such words as *prado lado amado hallado* the pronunciation [aðo] is emphatic and rhetorical and [ao au] is normal in conversation, while the standard [aðo], i.e. with a much relaxed fricative *d*, is of the nature of a compromise. Vulgarly *-ada -ido -ida* also lose their *d* (e.g. *ná* for *nada*) and also other intervocalic *d*'s disappear (e.g. *esnío* for *desnudo*), while *g* is lost not only before *u* (*awa* for *agua*) but generally (*maja* for *migaja*).

The medieval language was distinguished by its wealth of palatal and dental sibilants, which have been reduced in number and dispersed in space by the modern. As well as *ch*, the value of which has remained constant, medieval Spanish had *s -ss- [s] -s- [z]*, *ç [s̈ s] z [z̈ z]*, *x [š] j ġ [j z̈]*: so *passar* [s] but *rosa casa* [z]; *garça çebada* but *hazer*; *dixo* but *fijo hijo gente*. Two changes were carried out in the Golden Age; the first reduced these voiced and voiceless sibilants to the single order of voiceless sibilants [s̈ s̈ s̈]; the second change dispersed the voiceless sibilants [s̈ s̈] to the interdental and velar positions [θ χ]. A good deal of information exists as to the nature of these sounds at varying dates in the sixteenth and early seventeenth centuries—sufficient to locate the second movement in the second or third decade of the latter—but the testimony of our authors is complicated by their want of precise phonetic symbols and doubtless also by the circumstance that for a considerable time both sets of values must have run concurrently in different parts of Spain or with different classes of speakers. The evidence of archaizing modern dialects is also relevant here (Énguera, Malpartida de Plasencia, Bragança in Portugal, Jewish Spanish, American-Indian borrowings), but they, too, show evolution from the medieval position.

The medieval values of these letters may be inferred to

some extent from their etyma. When these are Latin they indicate a probable line of development from the Latin to the modern Spanish sound; when they are French, Germanic or Arabic they allow of comparison with the phonetic systems of other languages. Thus *s ss* were cacuminal, i.e. were produced (as in modern standard Spanish, but not as in Andalusian) by raising the tip of the tongue to the alveoli [s z]. Arabic authors transcribing Spanish place-names recognize in this [s] the equivalent not of their *sīn* or *sād* but of *śīn* [š], which is articulated just slightly further back in the palate than [s]: *Isbiliya Al-Āshbūna Ṣaqunda* for *Sevilla Lisboa Secunda*. So, thanks to Arabic mediation, SAPONE gives *xabón* 'soap'. A distinction between [s z] and [s z] is still maintained in the Portuguese of Bragança. Nahuatl borrowed Sp. *señora* as *xenola*, and Mapuche has *chumpiru* Sp. *sombrero*. The cacuminal pronunciation of *s* (and of *z* where this persists) is found in the whole tract from northern Portugal to Catalonia. In southern Portuguese (including the standard language of Lisbon), extreme southern Spanish, Jewish Spanish and most of Spanish America the cacuminal has come to coincide with the dorsoalveolar [s], which is current in French and English. As for the distinction between the voiced and the voiceless sound, Nebrija distinguishes *s* from *ss* between vowels in the same way as *r* from *rr*, and recommends 'si suenan apretadas doblar se han en medio de la palabra'. Jewish Spanish discriminates *pasar gyesu asar* from *Roza Firmoza mozotrus* (Sp. *nosotros*) *kaza*, using *zayin* for the latter in Hebrew transcriptions. But only one *s* travelled to the New World on the testimony of the Mapuche borrowings: *curtisia coltesia* (*cortesía* 'a hat (wherewith one shows courtesy)'), *casun* (*hacer caso* 'pay attention'). Juan de Valdés in 1535 offers only arbitrary rules for writing *s* and *ss*, as that he prefers *ss* in the endings *-issimo -esso -essa*, but he adds 'generalmente pongo dos eses quando la pronunciación ha de ser espessa, y donde no lo es pongo una sola'. To the middle of the century *-s-* and *-ss-* did not rhyme together, and in 1582 the unvoicing of the *-s-* is explicitly noted. Herrera (1582) writes *-ss-* between

vowels, whatever its origin, with the exceptions only of *peso* and *-oso*.

It is more difficult to ascertain the medieval pronunciation of *g z*. In modern standard Spanish they have the value [θ], and in the Extremeñan dialect of Malpartida de Plasencia they are [θ ð]: *crecel* [kreθél] *jadel* [haðél] for *crecer hacer*. In Andalusia, among the Spanish Jews, in most of Spanish America, and in Portuguese and Catalan they have coincided with dorsoalveolar *s* (and *z*, where the voiced sound exists). The Latin *ć* (before *e i*) was pronounced [k] and must have evolved to the modern Sp. [θ] along the line

	Velar	Prevelar	Palatal	Dental	Interdental
Occlusive	[k].....	[c]			
Affricate			[c]	[s]	[θ]?
Fricative				[s]	[θ]

An affricate interdental is not a stable sound, but may be supposed as the source of the Spanish interdental fricative, so as to connect the latter rather with [s] than with [θ]. Latin *tx* also gives *g z* (according to circumstances), and indicates a pronunciation analogous to [t], i.e. [s]. In Aragonese *-ç* corresponds to Cat. *-ts* in the second person plural of verbs: *cantaç* OCat. *cantats* MCat. *canteu*. In Mozarabic Lat. *st* gave *ç*: *Çaragoça* Ar. *Saraquṣṭa* CAESARAUGUSTA *Écija* ISTIGI, doubtless by metathesis. On the other hand *ç* corresponds to Ar. *sin* and *sâd*, i.e. to [s]: *aqucar* Ar. *as-sukr* 'sugar', *çaga* Ar. *sâka* 'rear', *aqâlâ* Ar. *as-ṣâlâ* 'prayer'; and *z* is the regular equivalent of Ar. *z*. Thus it would appear that *g z* had the affricate values [s ɬ] and also, whether regionally or in weak positions, the fricative values [s z]. In either case the consonants were dental, as they were not recognized as akin to the Arabic interdental *thâ*.

Between Nebrija (1492) and Minsheu (1623) another alphabet is frequently used to fix the Spanish pronunciation, viz. the Italian. We have also the verbal definitions of foreign grammarians, and correspondences with English and German. Nebrija does not define *z*, but considers *ç* 'propria de los judíos e moros', and equivalent to Heb. *samekh* [s]

or to *samekh* and *tzade* [s §]. Juan de Valdés (1535), writing in Italy, says that *g* has the value of *z* (i.e. of Italian *z* [§]). The Italian equation is made by Christóval de las Casas (1570), Juan de Miranda (1595), Richard Percyuall (1591, who also cited Hebrew *tzade*) and Doergank (1614); and Minsheu (1617) gives the value *ts*. Don Luis de Ávila y Zúñiga gives some German transcriptions: *Landshut* > *Lanquet*, *Zwickau* > *Quibica*, *Unser Vater* > *Uncerfater* (*ns* giving *nts*), but also *Schäfermesser* > *Xefermecer* (where *g* = *ss*). Oudin (1610) equates the sound with French *g* *s*, Doergank (Cologne, 1614) with *ss*, Lewis Owen (1605) with *s*. It is probable that these correspond with a tenser sound than simple voiceless [s], but they do indicate the fricative value. In 1623 John Minsheu transliterates *ths*: ‘*caraguelles...gogobra...gufre*: pronounce *thsaraguelles, thsosobra, thsufre*’. This indicates a sound intermediate between the medieval dental and the modern interdental, perhaps pronounced immediately behind the tips of the teeth. *Z* resembled *g*, save insomuch as it was voiced. The unvoicing of *z* is announced by Antonio de Torquemada (before 1574), who says of *g z* that ‘muchas personas no saben diferenciarlas’, and by Miguel Sebastián (1619): ‘la consonante *zeta* componen unos de las *t y s*, los más de las *d y s*; pronúnciase en el mismo lugar que la *g* algo más blando’. Nicolás Dávila (1631) still distinguishes the voiced from the voiceless sound. By an orthographic custom the letter *z* only was used at the end of a syllable or of a word. In the latter case, medieval Castilian required that it should be voiceless; in the former it was unvoiced before voiceless consonants, and voiced before voiced, by a principle of assimilation that still operates in the three Peninsular languages. Thus there were many cases in which *z* must have represented the voiceless consonant, as *rafez mezquino alcanz estonz pez Badajoz*. Initially, before a voiced consonant, or between vowels *z* was a voiced sibilant, which began to be unvoiced in the last quarter of the sixteenth century, and at the close of the first third of the seventeenth century was voiced only in the speech of a minority. Meanwhile both

*g* and *z* had moved forward in the mouth until from post-dental they had become almost interdental in the Castiles by 1623. It is possible that Minsheu's *ts* (1617) is due to copying from some older grammarian; and it is also possible that his *ths* may represent an affricate (or apparently compound) sound. If so, this affricate cannot long have survived.

The third pair of sibilants (*x* and *j* or *g*) were palatal in medieval Spanish. The value of *x* was [š], as it has remained in Portuguese, Galician, Asturian, Aragonese and Catalan, and in the Spanish system of transcription from the Arabic. The value of *j* is open to more doubt. Its descent from Lat. *j- ġ-*, Ar. *jim* and initial *yā*, OFr. Prov. *j ġ*, points to an affricate [j], being the voiced consonant corresponding to voiceless *ch* [č]. In weak positions, however, Ar. *jim* may have been pronounced as a fricative [ž], and the fricative is indicated by the evolution of Lat. *lī c'l g'l* through *i y* [j] to [ž]. Nebrija (1492) says the sound is peculiar to Spanish and Arabic, and not to be found in Hebrew, Greek or Latin; but Valdés holds it equivalent to Italian *gi* (1535). Testimony to the same effect is given throughout the century, while others identify the sound also with Fr. *j* which had been [ž] since the thirteenth century. In Portuguese, Catalan and Jewish Spanish the value of this pair of consonants is [š ž]. Evidence of the unvoicing of *j* occurs only towards the close of the century, as in Percyuall (1591), who indicates Andalusia as the conservative area using *zh*. Minsheu (1623) deems the sound equivalent to Lat. *gero* It. *giorno* Eng. *Geoffrey* *Giles* Fr. *gisant* and *sh* (*jarro* 'a pot', *sharro*) and 'in Seville and thereabout they pronounce it not so much in the teeth, but more in the throat as *cshardin csharro ozho*'. Nevertheless the unvoicing had commenced earlier in the sixteenth century, for only [š] passed to the New World in the mid-century: Nahuatl *xalo* <*jarro*, Mapuche *charu* (*kazu* is a later borrowing), Map. *ovicha ovisa ovida* <*oveja*. This stage is found in modern Asturian dialects: *xente* for *gente*. The further passage of the palatal [š] to the velar [χ] is not met with in Jewish Spanish dialects, which were

severed from the home country, but it is universal in the Spanish of America, doubtless thanks to fresh waves of immigration. This [χ] has no equivalent in Mapuche, which marks the velar element and ignores the fricative by using *k* in later loan-words: *Koan* < *Juan*. A celebrated word launched on Europe in 1605, *Quixote*, was accepted by Frenchmen and Italians as including the palatal [š]: *Quichotte*, *Quisciotto*, but Minsheu indicates the velar [χ] as emanating from Seville in 1623. It would appear that the early years of the seventeenth century had witnessed a gradual retraction of the tongue and that we have had reported to us only the end of the process.

Consult J. D. M. Ford, *The Old Spanish Sibilants* (Harvard, 1900) and A. M. Espinosa, *Arcaísmos dialectales* (Madrid, 1935).

#### THE ENNOBLEMENT OF THE LANGUAGE: LATIN INFLUENCE

Under the influence of humanism and speaking to Italian hearers Juan de Valdés remarked that 'all men are obliged to *illustrate and enrich* the language that is native to us and which we imbibe at our mothers' breasts'. The sentiment is frequently repeated by his contemporaries, who had taken up the Italian demand for a *volgare illustre*, fit for the expression of lofty thoughts. A controversy arose, indeed, as to the respective merits of the principal civilized tongues, but the standard of measurement and the means of improvement were admittedly one: the Latin language which was the second tongue of every educated man. In this spirit Camões says that Portuguese is virtually identical with Latin: *com pouca corrupção é a latina*. The Latin tongue was one acquired by art and by books, but the vernacular by common use in speech. This circumstance made it difficult for so enlightened a person as Queen Isabel and for Juan de Valdés to understand the need for a Castilian grammar as composed by Nebrija, which was, as the author avers, an *Art of Castilian*. Given these ideas, it was inevitable that the Castilian grammar should be stretched on the bed of the existing Latin

text-books, 'contraponiendo línea por línea el romance al latín', revealing in some cases the sufficiency of the vernacular, in others its want of the resources of Latin. Poets and stylists also, like Juan de Mena (in the fifteenth century) and Herrera (in the sixteenth), comparing the lexical and syntactical resources of the two languages, became aware of defects in the vernacular which could be remedied by drawing on the learned tongue for new words and moulds of speech. It was the object of those who would 'ennoble and illustrate' their native tongue to acquire for it the fullness and freedom of Latin, in so far as the genius of the vernacular permitted. The *caveat* was differently interpreted by different innovators, and even by different ages. A prudent policy of neologism was followed by Alfonso X in the thirteenth century, by the humanists of the sixteenth, and by the rationalists of the eighteenth century; bold and striking innovations were affected by the aureate poets of Juan de Mena's school, by the gongorists, and by the 'modernists' of our own day. Both classes of writers tended to add more to the written than to the spoken wealth of the language; but a detritus of their innovations sank into the bed of the vernacular, and many others remained available for the special uses of poetry and rhetoric.

The ennoblement of Romance, as a programme, is explicitly stated by the humanists, and in them has already an evidently Italianate appearance; but as a cultural necessity it became evident with the beginnings of the literature. The works of Alfonso X involved translation from the Latin of highly rhetorical writers, such as Lucan and Geoffrey of Monmouth, which threw into high relief the different resources of the languages. As an example we may cite the rendering of Lucan's *Pharsalia*, iv, 373 ff., in the *Primera Crónica General*, cap. 100:

O prodiga rerum  
luxuries, nunquam parvo contenta paratu,  
et quæsitorum terra pelagoque ciborum  
ambitiosa fames, et lautæ gloria mensæ. . . .

O desmesura gastadora de las cosas, et que en comer not abondas de pocas uiandas; e tu, fambre glotona, que not cumple lo que puedes fallar por mar et por tierra; et tu mesa deliciosa, llena de quantas cosas el comedor demanda...,

in which we note the avoidance of *pródigo*, *lujuria* or *lujo*, *piñago*, *ambicioso*, *gloria*, which the language now possesses; and similarly in *Ph.* iii, 297 *felix* (MSp. *feliz*) is rendered cautiously as *cuemo princep bienandant*. These and other passages could be cited to show how scrupulously the founder of Spanish prose adhered to the usages established in the vernacular; but none the less, he was of necessity an innovator. He could not but give names to things for which the vernacular had no name: '*tirano* quiere decir *señor cruel*', '*estudio* es ayuntamiento de maestros e escolares', '*zodiaco*, que quiere tanto decir en griego cuemo lengua que esta presto para dar alma a cada cosa que convenga et que seia apareiada para rescebirla'. These words were already familiar in the Latin of the schools, and were ripe for acceptance in the vernacular, provided they were given a suitable form. A table of phonetic equivalences facilitated this transfer of words.

The need for vernacular verisimilitude was felt more strongly in the earlier period, and progressively fewer precautions had to be taken in redressing latinisms, until in our day it is sufficient to see that the word ends in a Romance fashion, and does not commence with an 'impure' *s*; e.g. *ATU* = *ado*, *ABILE* = *able*, *ITATE* = *idad*, *SCEPTICU* = *esceptico*, *SPIRITU* = *espiritu*, etc. In the thirteenth century various additional precautions were taken by neologizers. The unaccented vowels were limited to the *a e o* of Romance: *principe* *monesterio* *presyon* *heñir* < *FINGERE*. Intervocalic consonants were voiced: *paladino* *PALATINU*. Terminations were remodelled: -ICULU: -ejo :: ARTICULU: *artejo*. The group -CT- was modified no longer in a palatal but in a velar sense: ACTU *auto*, TRACTU *trauto*. Notable in this era is the verbal suffix -iguar -IFICARE: *santiguar* *averiguar*. In some cases these words were brought closer to the Latin in accordance with the taste of later neologizers: *príncipe* *prisión* *homicidio* (for *omezio*) *verificar*. In

other instances the opportunity was presented for the fabrication of doublets, leaving the more concrete sense to the older word: *artejo* 'knuckle' *articulo* 'article', *santiguar* 'to bless or cross oneself' *santificar* 'to hallow', *heñir* 'to knead' *fingir* 'to pretend', *auto* 'a playlet, performance, writ' *acto* 'an act, act of a play', etc. Particularly notable was the influence of the Church, where the habitual public use of the two languages involved the perpetual comparison of certain important terms. *Auto* is within this category by virtue of the medieval performance of plays in churches (the strictly vernacular form should have been *\*echo*). So *SAECULU* has not given *\*sejo* but *sieglo siglo*, *DIABOLU* not *\*jablo* but *diablo*, *FIDE fe* and *FESTA fiesta* retain their *f* which is lost in the exclamation *a la he* 'i'faith' and the lay term *INFESTU enhiesto* 'steep'. It was the Church which retained the use of the nominative *DEUS Dios*, for which Spanish Jews preferred the normal accusative *El Dio*; and to the Church must be ascribed *cruz mártir virgen sacerdote espíritu*, etc. The administration was responsible for a lesser share of latinisms, such as *treudo* (later *tributo*) *justicia censo precio homicidio notario*, as well as for maintaining archaic forms in place-names like *Córdoba* *Mérida Segovia* (not *\*Segueva*) *Cértigos Gállego*.

The fifteenth century witnessed a considerable influx of new latinisms. The *Divina Commedia* of Dante and the Latin works of Boccaccio and Petrarcha, together with numerous translations from Classical authors either directly or through the French, created a demand for a type of Spanish not merely more worthy of its Latin source, but even more on a par with the *illustre volgare* of Italy. At the same time, there was still wanting the sense of measure and simplicity of the true humanists. The experiments conducted by the Marquis of Santillana, Villena, Juan de Mena and their well-wishers are characterized by more boldness than discretion, and much that they have proposed has been rejected, e.g. Villena's *presuposición* 'preamble'. The diction of this age resembles the 'aureate' style of Lydgate in its striving after an artificial dignity, together with vernacular lapses. The

suffixes *-al* and *-ífico* rise into favour at this time: *humanal* *divinal* *mundanal* *poetal* *marcial* *triunfal* *magnífico*. The trisyllabic ending is used for its dignity, contrary to Hispanic tradition: *gálico* *ídlico* *délplico* *íncrito*; and a free use is made of *-ción*: *destrucción* *restitución* *defunción*. Santillana, the most prudent of the group, apologizes for his novelties by attaching the more familiar term: '*familiar e servidor*', '*andan e concurren*', '*cenizas e defunciones*', '*difícil inquisición e trabajosa pesquisa*', '*mensajero o embaxador*', and even '*sciencia de poesía e gaya sciencia*'. By recurring to the Latin he creates doublets; e.g. beside *cibu cebo* 'fodder', he proposes '*cibo del alma*', which the language has not admitted. His principal novelty of syntax is his attempt to hold back the verb to the close of the sentence. In Juan de Mena there is a systematic attempt to acquire all the resources of Latin style by a single effort. He was so far successful that Nebrija was able to draw from him Spanish examples of most of the traditional figures of speech: including the reprehensible ones, like the caco-syntheton *A la moderna bolviendo me rueda* for *bolviendo me a la rueda moderna*. For this measure of success in capturing Latin resources, Nebrija deems that Mena deserves the title of '*the poet*' among Castilians, as Vergil among the Romans. In vocabulary his intemperate neologisms stand out in sharp contrast with the humble medieval vernacular with which they are mixed, so that even those which have later been adopted by the language appear strange in the *Laberinto*: for instance

Toda la otra vezina *planura*  
estaua cercada de *nítido* muro,  
assi *trasparente*, *clarífico*, puro,  
que mármol de Paro pareçe en *albura*;  
tanto que el *viso* de la criatura,  
por la *diáfana* *claror* de los cantos,  
pudiera traer *objetos* atantos  
quantos celaua so sí la *clausura*.

In this period there was a considerable reduction in the gap between the Latin and the Spanish forms. Unaccented *i* and *u*

appear, and even the 'impure' *s* (*spiritu sciencia*); unvoiced consonants remain between vowels; trisyllabic endings are encouraged. Lat. -GN- gives -*n*- in *DIGNU dino*, x gives *s* in *esaminar*, and Lat. -PT- -CR- give -*t*- in *cativo objeto*; which are equivalences allowed during the whole Golden Age and not questioned until the establishment of the Academy. In some cases this has led to duplicates or to the retention of the older spelling for a more serviceable form: *auto acto fruto fructifero luto luctuoso*.

The sixteenth century—an age of great physical and mental activity for Spain—subjected the language to many varying stresses. The connection with Italy was drawn close by the conquests of the Great Captain in Naples and by the international policy of Charles V. Castile thus entered on a relationship which had, in the Middle Ages, been peculiar to Aragón. The Italian literature of Ariosto, Bembo, Tasso, Castiglione and Machiavelli, with its layman's outlook and sense of decorum, superseded as a model the medievalism of the *trecento*. The Italian humanists and Erasmus popularized in Spain the notion of Nature's perfection, and of popular speech, proverbs, etc., as the spontaneous products of Nature; while at the same time they established a new canon of graceful perfection in the use of Latin. The character of the 'gentleman' or *cortesano*, involving an apparently effortless perfection in all the arts of life, prescribed the ideal *simplex munditiis* for language also, while elaborating forms of courteous address and intercourse to make up the so-called *estilo cortesano*. A powerful thrust towards the raciest and most widely intelligible terms and syntax was delivered by the prose of St Teresa and the verse of S. Juan de la Cruz, who eschewed all forms of affectation as conducive to falsehood and sin. On the other hand, there was a more conscious determination to raise Spanish to an intellectual rank commensurate with its vast power in the world, to challenge the supremacy of Italian in art, and to acquire from Latin whatever additional resources the language required. An earnest attention to style in Herrera becomes in the age of Góngora

an obsession with style, and leads to extravagances in the Baroque era curiously similar to those of Juan de Mena.

Nebrija's *Gramática* (1492) sums up the medieval achievement as a basis for further advance. He explicitly asserts the connection between language and empire. In the *Celestina* (1499) we see a racy language heard in the streets jostling with the new courtly and humanistic manner of the protagonists. But the thrilling events of the first third of the century did not allow of sophistication, and the numerous reports from the New World are normally colloquial in their diction. In the poems of Garcilaso de la Vega (published in 1543), in Boscán's *Cortesano* (1534) and in Juan de Valdés' *Didólogo de la Lengua* (1535) we find the first manner of this century. They eschew invention; and propose only to select out of the existing language the noblest and sincerest expressions. They are not afraid of colloquialisms (e.g. *ganar por la mano* 'to anticipate or get the better of anyone'); and Valdés makes a cult of proverbs, which he uses as the standard of reference for purism. Garcilaso praises Boscán in that he 'avoided affectation without falling into harshness; his style is pure and employs courtly terms (*términos muy cortesanos*) allowed by good judges, neither novel nor apparently unused by the people'. In the same spirit, Valdés applies the criterion of his Toledan upbringing to prefer *enemistad* to *omezillo*, *subir* to *puyar*, *un cotal* to *quillotro*, *fácil* to *raez* or *rece*, *triste* to *lóbrego* (which has since been reintroduced as peculiarly suited to poetry); and at the same time he censures as Andalusian many of the idioms offered by Nebrija. Yet a cautious policy of innovation was made necessary by the existence of new ideas. Valdés recommends the adoption of *paradoja* *tiranizar idiota ortografía ambición e(x)cepción objeto decoro* and others; and while Nebrija knows of no morphological superlative, Garcilaso (1536) has 'ilustre y hermosísima María'. Luis de León (1583) is of this way of thinking, adding that purity of language consists in a sense of rhythm, weight and proportion.

The attempt of the greatest of the mystics to avoid all

affectation, including that measure of artifice which is implied by the humanistic scrutiny of words, transferred the emphasis on the language to its traditional content. Colloquialisms like *naide* for *nadie*, *anque* for *aunque*, *relisión* for *religión*, appear in Santa Teresa, who also (a feminine trait) makes full use of the affective diminutives offered by Spanish, allows the verb a predominant rôle in the sentence, and practises ellipsis with the freedom of actual speech. The need for precise psychological distinctions in matters of religious experience causes her to enrich the language with subtle distinctions, as between *contento* and *gusto*, often in the form of oxymora: *gozosa pena*, *borrachez divina*, etc. The prestige acquired by her writings in the raciest Castilian may have helped to spread the phonetic preferences of Castilian, despite the opposition of the earlier Toledan writers, notably in the matter of silencing the *h*.

Meanwhile, in the south, at Sevilla, Fernando de Herrera adopted a more formal attitude to the language. That he proposed to repeat in Spain the literary triumphs of Italy made his content less important to him than his manner. The thought belonged to the Petrarchian tradition, but the style had still to be created in Spain. His policy was therefore to discover in Latin or Italian such additional words and forms as Spanish could be induced to absorb; it was the policy of a neologizer, limited by a wish for actual rather than spectacular success. The lyrics of Garcilaso gave him the highest measure of achievement in artistic Castilian, and his famous *Comento* was planned to display Garcilaso's merits, correct some blemishes, and point out where further ennoblement was possible. *Tamaño* 'so great', for instance, he considers vulgar, though it has survived his criticism. He favours new adjectives in *-oso*, the doubling of epithets, and their careful choice. In his latinisms he keeps in mind those which have already found a lodgment in Italian. The result is a language quite removed from the colloquial, which it systematically eschews, discreetly latinized, rich in adjectives and nouns of quality, which have mostly been adopted for

poetical rather than for general use. Such are those complained of by Barahona de Soto:

Esplendores, celajes, rigoroso,  
selvaje, llama, líquido, candores,  
vagueza, faz, purpúrea, Cintia, ardores,  
otra vez esplendores, caluroso,

though the complaint is, in some cases, against the undue frequency of a common word.

In Herrera the equilibrium between Latin and Spanish tilts slightly towards Latin. The great writers who cultivated the drama and the novel in Madrid—Cervantes, Lope de Vega, Tirso de Molina, Alarcón—drew inspiration from all sides, being as racy as Castile and as erudite as the Sevillian according to their mood and subject. Appealing to the widest possible public, they demanded a language not ignoble, but also not liable to be misunderstood. But to Góngora, at Córdoba, popular appeal was antipathetic. He stressed the importance of art, and of artifice in language, and he took up more defiantly the experiments of Herrera, wresting from Latin its last secrets. Thus arose the *culta latiniparla* which Quevedo burlesqued, but could not avoid practising. New vocables arose like (according to Quevedo)

Fulgores, arrogar, joven, presiente,  
candor, construye, métrica harmonía;

which recall those attributed to Herrera, and have generally been adopted at least by the language of poetry. More novel was the attempt to construe clauses in the Latin manner. Sufficient resources of declension and conjugation remained in Spanish to allow the adjective to be separated from the noun without ambiguity to the eye, though perplexing for the ear, and the verb to be removed from its subject by intervening parentheses, subordinate clause and absolute constructions. There is no difficulty in recognizing the groups *pasos perdidos, peregrino errante, cuantos versos* in

Pasos de un peregrino son errante  
cuantos me dictó versos dulce musa:  
en soledad confusa  
perdidos unos, otros inspirados,

though the association of *versos inspirados* is perhaps less evident. The reader's suspension of mind as he looks forward or backward for the reference of the words introduces into Spanish verse a more complex music than that of Garcilaso or Lope de Vega. Thirdly, the new style sought to convert the ordinary stuff of poetry into metaphor, by the systematic use of terms in their transferred senses, while achieving extraordinary effects by unusually happy metaphors or similes. The Duke of Béjar's hunting spears are 'spruce walls with diamond battlements', i.e. wooden shafts tipped with steel. Later the same spear is called 'the ash'. In this way a vocabulary of transposed terms arises which afflicts the prose and poetry of the seventeenth century, subordinating the sense, where there is any, to a perpetual juggle of dead metaphors. *Nieve* 'snow' and *plata* 'silver' signify not these things, but 'white'; *crystal* takes the place of *agua* 'water', *tálamo* that of *casamiento* and *matrimonio*, a blood-stained stream is *espumoso coral*, a bird is a 'feathered flower' or 'wingèd nosegay'.

The consequences for speech and style of the alternative æsthetic of the seventeenth century are not far different. Properly speaking the 'conceptist' should make it his business to squeeze out the utmost refinements of style by way of associating ideas and ordering the phrase, but leaving untouched the grammar and vocabulary. He aimed at *agudeza*, not *culturismo*. He cultivated the 'conceit' which was, according to Gracián, a 'beautiful correlation between two cognizable extremes, expressed by an act of the understanding', and the latter he identified with 'the decorum of the words'. Novelty in the latter was reached through a certain amount of redefinition of words apparently familiar, by means of unusual contexts, antitheses, etymological precision and puns. This toying with language was by no means new, and had indeed marked the whole Golden Age. Lope de Vega, who is rarely gongoristic, is often a conceptist before the word arose; and Castiglione, no mean judge, deemed the court-lyrics of Garcilaso's youth too subtle for translation into Italian. What is

new in Quevedo and Gracián is the insistence on the 'conceit', seeking in the warping of the ideas, or at least the language, a sole, or at least a main, literary virtue. Strange 'conceits' could not be carried out without the occasional use of strange language or figures, and thus the frontiers of gongorism and conceptism are blurred. Góngora, as a great wit, used many a 'conceit', and Quevedo's verse is scarcely less gongoristic than Calderón's. Between the two movements, the language appropriated once again all the figures and devices allowed by the textbooks of classical rhetoric—oxymoron, antithesis, meiosis, paronomasia, etc.—and suffered from cultural indigestion.

The eighteenth century worked off much of the surfeit, proclaiming the rights of reason and *buen gusto*. To this end the younger Moratín wrote his *Derrota de los pedantes* and Forner his *Exequias de la lengua castellana*. Simplicity, in the Horatian sense, was proclaimed the criterion of language; the style of Luis de León was revived so far as his descendants at Salamanca were capable; and a resolute resistance was offered to neologism. The new Latin formations which appeared at this time were generally in the debt of France, as those of the previous period had been in the debt of Italy. They are utilitarian, and tend to be abstractions, often with a cosmopolitan air: *el Ser Supremo* (as a serious rival to *Dios*), *infundamentabilidad incontestabilidad coacción radiación superficialidad*. The repression of fancy was excessive, and the language became infertile; but at least the eighteenth century came nearer than any other to endowing Spain with a prose style capable of all uses.

Romantic authors launched few interesting innovations into language, though their general attitude was favourable to novelty. Their immediate successors devoted themselves to stereotyping the epithet and enforcing binary rhythm. Words of international circulation found a lodgment in Spanish as elsewhere: *teléfono* *telégrafo* *cine* *radio* *cazadorpedero* *krausismo*, etc. But there was no policy of innovation until the closing years of last century, when the 'Modernist' writers (chiefly

of American origin at first) sought for proof of genius in novelty and the exotic. Only a residue of their effort has any permanent significance for the language, and we are still too close to discriminate. The dactylic rhythm was again exalted, and trisyllabic endings were obtained by borrowing from Greek (real or imaginary), as in Darío's address to Verlaine:

Padre y maestro mágico *liróforo* celeste.

Latin served in

*Inclitas razas ubérrimas, sangre de Hispania fecunda,*

though *íclito* was not new, but only inserted in a novel rhythm. New doctrines and doctrinaires were recruited by the suffixes *-ismo* *-ista*, as *rubeniano rubenianismo rubendarismo modernista*. Typical terms are *psiquis biforme homérida panida dionisiaco dulico*. Insistence on shades of colour (as with the gongorists) and on musical terms are typical of this increment of the language. Native words also, fallen into desuetude or of rare or local occurrence, are revived, especially if they have some technical nuance, as in Azorín's

*aquí están los tundidores, perchadores, cargadores, arcadores perailes; allá, en la otra, los correcheros, guarnicioneros, boteros, chicarreros,*

At its best, the new manner implies a refusal to employ trite phrases, even at the risk of being bizarre, and it implies close attention to the music of the phrase. The language has become more cosmopolitan, but also richer, subtler, more athletic and more graceful.

Consult the article in *España* (Madrid, 1925), and R. Menéndez Pidal's 'El lenguaje del siglo XVI', *Cruz y Raya* (Madrid, 1933). Toro Gisbert's *Nuevos derroteros del idioma* (Paris, 1918) is polemical, but contains interesting *obiter dicta* on terms launched by various 'Modernists'.

VARIOUS CHANGES IN MORPHOLOGY,  
SYNTAX AND LOAN-WORDS AFTER 1140

## (a) MEDIEVAL PERIOD

In the medieval period, as we have seen, the lines are marked out by the great prose compilations of Alfonso the Sage, the plenitude of Juan Ruiz, and the 'aureate' manner of Juan de Mena, who, with his contemporaries, shows both a striving towards a new humanism and the bankruptcy of medieval methods. Literature begins in the thirteenth century to be something written, and therefore something open to grammatical scrutiny as never before. Unrestricted spoken development treats each expression as a unit, and gives each such unit the form most convenient for speech. In this way the language of the *Poema de mio Cid* shows many syncretions of the types *con ellos' cojo* (*ellos se*), *coio' Salon aiuso* (*cojóse*), *cabadelant*, *hyáuengaluon*, *nimbla* (*ni me la*), etc., while admitting *nuef* beside *nueve*, *rees* as the plural of *rey*, etc. The language of the thirteenth century proceeded to iron out these incongruities, which are rather visual than phonetic. It restored the final *-e* to many words which ended in a consonant in the singular, using the analogy of the plural: so *cort cortes* gave *corte*, *noch noches* gave *noche*, and similarly *siete nueve* quite displaced *siet nuef*, and *rey ley* took plurals *reyes leyes*. Only a limited number of consonants were left as finals: *l r n s z x d*. The nett result of these modifications was to arrest a tendency which would have left Spanish an iambic language like French or Catalan rather than trochaic like Italian, by weakening final vowels. A particular case of colloquial syncretions was presented by the enclitic pronouns attached to verbs, which, having no stress accent of their own, are liable to be absorbed by the neighbouring word. The restoration of full forms to enclitic pronouns can be watched in the *Primera Crónica General*. The first and second persons were first restored from *m t* to *me te*, while the third still lingered as *l*. During the whole medieval period these

pronouns were regarded as leaning on the preceding word, which was not necessarily a verb, as in *Cid: quandol vieron, muchol tengo por torpe*, but they are also strongly attracted by the verb; in Spanish of the Golden and Modern Periods these pronouns are regarded as supported by the verb only.

The Spanish noun is simple and stable with respect to number, but allows of alteration with regard to gender, which has no self-evident basis in ideas. In particular, there was room for an extension of the suffix *-a* where it was convenient to indicate sex, so that medieval *la señor la yffant* have come to be modern *la señora la infanta*. Medieval Spanish possessed (especially in Riojan) a pronominal nominative case exemplified in *qui elli otri nadi(e)*, which has since disappeared. But the chief area of liveliness was the verbal conjugation, towards the rationalization of which more effort has been expended in Spanish than in Italian or French. The number of irregular verbs was reduced, or they were passed into regular categories. Thus *exir* (pret. *ixe*) appears in the *Cid*, but not in Juan Ruiz who has preferred *salir*, and knows only the noun *exido* 'common land, land at the outgoing of a town' (MSp. *ejido*). The past participle was another point of attack, and the twelfth-century *Auto de los Reyes Magos*, in proposing *veido* from *ver*, has gone beyond even modern usage (*visto*, but *proveer proveido*). Very few 'strong' past participles survive: *dicho hecho visto puesto*. In the regular or 'weak' conjugations the *Cid* shows that the form of the participle in *-udo* (corresponding to verbs in *-er*) is already menaced by rival forms in *-ido*: *vençudo vençido metudo metido*. Juan Ruiz still has *entendudo sabudo*; but at the end of the fifteenth century Nebrija admits only *-ido* beside the *-ado* of verbs in *-ar*: *amado leido oido*. The termination *-udo* and the relics of former 'strong' participles have become adjectives: *velludo barbudo bienquisto provisto*. The preterite tense has shown more resistance. In 'weak' or regular verbs the terminations have a definite semantic value inasmuch as they represent the idea of past time which the stem alone no longer indicates, and only some minor analogical changes took place, as 2 Pl.

*hablasteis* from *hablastes* through the influence of *hablásis habléis*. In the 'strong' verbs the preterite stem was preserved by familiarity, since only the most common verbs have been able to resist assimilation to regular conjugations. Characteristic of ballad syntax is a periphrastic preterite in *fué a*, as *tal respuesta le fué a dar* 'such was the reply he gave him', which may be compared with Cat. *vaig anar* 'I have gone, I went'. The form proved ephemeral.

Care was taken to restore some of the damage wrought to the conjugation by phonetic change. In such a series as *amo amas ama* and most of the verbal forms the presence of a vowel before the personal ending made *toviés toviesses toviés* and *pudier pudieres pudier* appear anomalous. In these cases the loss of final *-e* after *s r* remained normal in nouns and persisted during the fourteenth century for verbs; but at the close of the fifteenth Nebrija records only *amasse dixiere*, etc. He still has the apocopated *amardes leyederdes oirdes* in the second person of the plural, and S. Juan de la Cruz has *pastores los que fuerdes*. The loss of final *-e* is still notable in Juan Ruiz, not only in the two subjunctive tenses, but generally: *diz plaz yaz faz fiz mantien pud pus quier trax val*, etc. for which Nebrija has *tiene dize*, etc. On the other hand, final *-e* is frequent in the *Poema de mio Cid*, so that the conflict between phonetic tendency and the analogy of the paradigm lasted throughout the medieval period. The thirteenth century knew *fallare* (or *fallar*) and *fallaro* as 1 S. to *fallares fallar(e)*, etc. The former was due to Latin perfect subjunctive in *-RIM*, the latter to the future perfect indicative in *-RO*, and the two Latin tenses were identical in the rest of the persons. The ending *-ro* is unknown to Per Abbat who copied the *Poema de mio Cid* in 1307. Another set of anomalies existed in the imperfect indicative of second and third conjugation verbs which ran *tenía tenies tenie tenímos tenímedes teniedes tenien*. The reason for this change of vowel is obscure, and it conflicts with the imperfect of the first conjugation which preserves the *a* throughout: *amava amavas amava*, etc. Even in the *Cid* alternative analogical forms appear: 3 S. *aya*, 3 Pl. *fazian*; on the other

hand diplomas also record a 1 S. in *e*: *aiue proponie*. In Juan Ruiz forms in *e* and *a* exist in evident conflict, but the former go out of polite usage during the fourteenth century, though they are still found as vulgarisms as late as in the sixteenth-century farces.

Broadly speaking, then, the activity of the medieval period with regard to the verbal paradigm was such as to reduce anomalies, and to leave to the Golden Age a simple and precise notation to indicate both person and tense. At the same time the verb was not stripped of any of its essential forms.

In the sphere of vocabulary no less activity is discernible. The steady enrichment of the idiom by fresh borrowings from its Latin source has already been discussed. Apart from Latin, the principal influence exerted on medieval Spanish is that of French. It was an epoch of undisputed French hegemony in Europe. Many words entered the language through being borne by pilgrims along the Pilgrims' Way to Compostela or by the minstrels who entertained the pilgrims. Cluniac monks reorganized conventional discipline; Norman crusaders and soldiers in the French and English service saw fighting in the Peninsula, and carried with them the seeds of innovations in chivalry, good society, organization, arts and industries, commerce and cookery. A mark of age in a loan-word of this class is the use of *j g* to represent a French *j g*: *jardin monje paje Sergente*. The French aspirate *h* was to be encountered in Germanic words passed on by the French to Spain, and it resulted in Sp. *f* or *h*, and was also occasionally ignored: 'Tristram's harp' was the *farpa de don Tristán*, but also *arpa*, *fonta* Fr. *honte* Ger. *haunitha* 'shame', *una fardida lança* Fr. *hardie* 'a bold lance', the latter both to be found in the *Cid*. The pilgrims are specifically to be credited with the Galician *cizallas* 'clippers' and *baleo* 'mat', the occurrence of which in Compostela bears witness to the denser agglomeration of strangers in that shrine. The organization of the Church brought *fraile* (Provençal) *monje chantre* and (in Berceo) *enclín* 'bow' *baylia* 'subordinate office'. Chivalrous

terms appear in the *Cid* and elsewhere as *batalla* 'line of battle' *coraje homenaje usaje mensaje mensajero* (compare the native *portero*) *ardiment doncel garzón linaje palafrén gañán*. According to Fernão Lopes it was the Earl of Cambridge's expedition to Portugal in 1381 which caused *avanguarda* and *retaguarda*, both gallicisms, to replace *delantero* and *zaga*. Organization and society employed the terms *chancillería sumiller ugier paje doncel dama*; literature introduced *troba trobar trobador* (of society verse-making) *balada son* 'tune' *jayán* 'monstrous fellow' Fr. *géant*. The industries and commerce adopted terms like *cofre chapitel chimenea jaula* (Fr. *geôle*) *cordel merchante bajel virar manjar anís*. Not all of these terms have survived: *fonta* has yielded to the more general term *vergüenza*; *fontaina* *sojornar maletía habillado*, current in the fifteenth century, have yielded to *fuente demorar enfermedad vestido*. Through French penetrated a few northern words connected with seafaring, of which the most important were the points of the compass: *norte sur este oeste*. The general directions are given by the Latin *septentrión mediodía oriente* or *levante occidente* or *poniente*.

One notes, in the last place, the circulation of some common particles in the medieval period which either perished with it or did not survive the Golden Age. Thus *UBI* gave *o*, which was the homonym of *AUT o*; and *UNDE* gave *onde* 'whence'. Poetry retains *do* (DE *UBI*), but prose has given *donde* (DE *UNDE*) the sense 'where', and created *adonde* 'whither' *de donde* 'whence'. *Otrosí* 'also' has yielded to *también*; *ca to que* and *porque*; *alguandré* 'somewhere' *otri* 'someone else' have disappeared for centuries; *cras* and *otro día* have yielded to *mañana* in the sense of 'morrow', and *mane* to *mañana* in the sense of 'morning'; while the attempts to use *om(n)e* as an indefinite pronoun like Fr. *on* and to develop the partitive (*delllos dezien* 'some of them said') have been checked. *Ansi* and *agora* linger into the Golden Age and then yield to *así ahora*; *tornar a hacer* 'to do again' yields to *volver a hacer*, *catar* 'look' to *mirar*, *cuidar* 'think' to *pensar*, etc.

## (b) THE GOLDEN AGE

The curiosity of foreigners, which Nebrija had anticipated, was attracted by the empire to the language. Exiled Jews, as at Bordeaux or Amsterdam, helped to satisfy this interest, and Spanish masterpieces were rendered into French by Des Essarts or into English by Mabbe and Shelton. Spanish did not attain the circulation of French or Italian, but it did become one of the languages in which an author might address the world, for which cause Melo employed it rather than Portuguese in his history of the Catalan rebellion. Shakespeare, who does not appear to have known Spanish, presents Italianate sketches of Spaniards in 'Don Adriano de Armado, a fantastical Spaniard', and the contrasted Don Pedro and Don John of *Much Ado about Nothing*. Spanish began to be taught as part of a gentleman's education, and conversation-grammars or 'arts' were composed, such as those of Percivall and Minsheu in England and Oudin in France, which have great importance as contemporary witnesses to Spanish phonetic changes. Under these circumstances Spain re-exported the names of American plants and animals and of the essential possessions and grades of Indian society, so that words like *canoe* *cacique* *barbecue* *quinine* *puma*, etc. have an international range. *Quixotry* is a tribute by English to the genius of Cervantes; *colonel* we pronounce with the *r* of Sp. *coronel* as a sort of witness to the efficiency of the Spanish infantry *tercios*; *picaro* and *picaroon* represent one aspect of Spanish life, at the opposite pole from *grandee*; *pundonor* is connected with the Spanish code of honour; *inquisition* and *inquisitor* are latinisms which received a new lease of life from Spain, connected with the *autos-da-fé* (the form is Portuguese, Sp. *de fe*). *Desenvoltura* 'ease and dignity of manner' gives It. *disinvoltura*, Sp. *desembuelto* gives Fr. *desinvolte*; Sp. *esforzado* 'brave' attaches that meaning to Castiglione's *sforzato* (It. 'violent'), Sp. *sosiego* 'calm deportment' becomes Filippo Sassetti's *sussiego*; Sp. *grandioso* (a derivative of OSp. *grandía* = MSp. *grandeza*) spreads, perhaps

via Italy, to France, England and Germany. Some words express contemporary admiration for the dignity and gravity of the Spanish *caballero*; but more frequently the loan-words express contemporary (and especially French) fear or dislike, either by their low origin (*pícaro matamoros* Fr. *matamore* 'swashbuckler') or through semantic depreciation (*bravo* in the sense of 'bully', *bizarre* from 'gallant' to 'freakish').

The early part of the period marks a national preoccupation with behaviour, *cortesanía*. Much of the wit of Spanish plays turns on the inability of the boor and the lackey to appreciate courtly refinements of speech. Forms of address are important. Between men and women they take the form of a perpetual courtship; between man and man they consist of giving or exacting respect. It is doubtful whether courtesy or self-esteem is the more effective lever: the starveling squire in *Lazarillo de Tormes* lays down the terms in which he is to be addressed. When a tradesman used the formula *Mantenga Dios a vuestra merced* he retorted *Vos, don villano ruin, por qué no sois bien criado?* and explained to Lazarillo that superiors should be addressed *Beso las manos de vuestra merced* or *Bésoos, señor, las manos* (the latter only from a gentleman). The second personal pronoun suffers rapid changes in this period. The former era left *tú* and *vos*. *Vos*, the plural of dignity, was more formal, *tú* was intimate and also poetical. To change from *tú* to *vos* implied an access of formality, of stiffness, and therefore was suited to angry or insulting language: among the Spanish-Jews *vos* is an insult, but to a Spanish beggar *tú* is so informal as to convey a slight. In Spanish America these forms in *tú* and *vos* have developed into a state of confusion which will be described in the next chapter. Above them there developed new forms of courtesy involving an abstract substantive and the third person of the verb. Most of these were based on *vuestra merced*, abbreviated *v.m.*, which took such forms as *vuesarcé vuesasté ucé océ usted*. Of all these forms the modern period has selected *usted*, which, however, is simply a second personal pronoun, without a definite connotation of respect. It is not, in contem-

porary Spanish, a mark of courtesy. In the Cortes, for instance, deferential address requires *Vuestra Señoría* (which is rather an Italian than a Spanish formula in the Golden Age, and may be abbreviated *Usía*). In Chile *usted* is familiar, *vos* either insulting or condescending, *usía* (pronounced *su señoría*) formal, and respect tends to employ titles: *el patrón*, *la señora*, *el señor ministro*. Forms in *vos(otros)* are, however, in poetry and oratory the plurals of *tú*, which retains its archaic value in the higher literary style.

In this period was fixed the construction known as the 'personal *a*'. As early as the *Cid* it was optional to indicate an animate object of the verb by prefixing the preposition *a*, otherwise the sign of the dative (indirect object). Thus we find both *veremos vuestra mugier* and *veran a sus esposas a don Elvira e a doña Sol*. The distinction between the direct and indirect objects is often tenuous, and depends on the construction of the verb one happens to use, as 'to address anyone', 'to speak to anyone', which are identical in meaning though different in case. One may note, however, that for the purposes of a particular verb the direct object (the 'patient' in Basque) is deemed inert, but the indirect object (the dative, or 'recipient' in Basque) reacts at least to the extent of receiving. There is no logical difficulty in supposing animate beings and particularly persons as inert in any given circumstances, such as 'the man beat the child'; but there is a considerable psychological difficulty, since it is impossible to visualize living beings without reactions; the child, for instance, will certainly react in some way (by shrinking, crying, kicking, etc.) to a beating. Consequently several languages, like the whole Slavonic group, make a grammatical distinction between the animate and the inanimate accusative cases. They do so by means of declensional suffixes; but in Spanish and Rumanian the distinction is made by preposition, in Spanish by *a* and in Rumanian by *p(r)e* Lat. *PRAE*. The animate or personal object is not deemed inert with respect to the verbal idea, but the recipient or person interested or affected by the action. This usage be-

comes absolute in the Golden Age. Classes of persons, of course, are not living *qua* class: one says, therefore, *busco un médico* 'I am looking for a doctor', i.e. any member of the profession. On the other hand a town may be considered as the sum of its inhabitants, so that one says *quiero visitar a Toledo* 'I want to visit Toledo'. As we have seen the direct and indirect constructions are to some extent interchangeable, so that *a* may be prefixed to neuter objects for reasons of grammatical convenience: *el invierno sigue al otoño* 'winter follows autumn'; or it may be omitted from a personal object for the same reason: *antepongo el Ariosto al Tasso* 'I prefer Ariosto to Tasso'. In both these cases possible ambiguities are avoided by relaxing the rigour of the construction. The preposition and its omission serve to personalize or depersonalize objects: *llamar a la muerte* 'to summon Death', *la escuela de la guerra forma los grandes capitanes* 'the school of war forms great captains (as a class)'. The use of this construction has been deemed a mark of Spanish realism; we may accept the word provided that we do not regard either the Middle Ages, when the usage was still fluid, or the modern period, when it is petrified, as less realistic than the Golden Age in which it came to fruition.

With regard to the verb, the Golden Age showed itself highly conservative. It maintained the metathesis of *-dl-* to *-ld-* in the 2 Pl. imperative followed by a 3rd personal pronoun (*dalde* for *dadle*) and the assimilation *-ll-* from *-rl-* in the infinitive (*dalle* for *darle*). St John of the Cross has the archaic, and doubtless colloquial, apocope of *e* in *fuerdes* for *fuéredes*; and the language as a whole still recognized as a compound the future and conditional tenses, inserting between the infinitive and the auxiliary personal pronouns: *daros he*, where modern Spanish uses *os daré*. As early as the *Cid* we find both *direvos* and *dezirvos he*. The most striking innovation in the paradigm was the disuse of *-ra* in the indicative sense. *HABUERAM hubiera* is, by its origin, a pluperfect indicative, and has in Spanish a pluperfect or preterite sense in *salto diera de la cama que parece gavilán* 'he leapt from bed like a

sparrow-hawk', in which *diera* = *dió*. But the use of HABUERAM in both the protasis and apodosis of hypothetical sentences caused *hubiera* to acquire also the value of a conditional (*habría*) and of a pluperfect or imperfect subjunctive (HABUISSEM *hubiese*). The indicative use occurs freely in the Medieval Period, and in the Modern Period it is also admitted (especially as a pluperfect) by men of letters, and notably by those of Galician birth. In Galician and in Portuguese *-ra* has its historic value of pluperfect indicative. In the Golden Age of Spanish, however, this indicative sense suffered eclipse. The verbal auxiliaries were developed. *Haber* was limited to service as an auxiliary or an impersonal verb, so that the medieval *tres hijuelos había el rey* 'the king had three sons' became impossible. As a true auxiliary *haber* takes an invariable participle, which no longer agrees with the direct object as in medieval Spanish. Medieval usage was to some extent fluid, as the *Cid* has both *la lanza a quebrada* 'he has broken his lance' and *dexado a heredades* 'he has left his inheritance'. In the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries agreement with the direct object becomes more general; but in the Golden Age this concord ceases. At the same time new semi-auxiliaries developed, such as *tener llevar*, etc., with which there is concord of participle and direct object. As HABERE is a transitive verb, ESSE is the more logical auxiliary for use with intransitives, and so we have the medieval *es nacido, es muerto*, transformed in the Golden Age to *ha muerto, ha nacido*; while at the same time the distinction between *ser* and *estar* became sharper through the restriction of the freer medieval practices, and fresh equivalents were developed from *quedar resultar*, etc.

Among conservative indications outside the verb one notes the use of *quien* as both singular and plural (*amigos a quien llamo* 'friends whom I summon'), the greater wealth of demonstratives (*aqueste aquese estotro esotro*), and the persistence of such words as *ansi agora mesmo escuro do vido vía* (*veía*), etc.

In its relations with foreigners the Spanish of this epoch

shows a much diminished dependence on French. Constant wars in France caused French words to enter the language through soldiers' slang: *trinchea* (now *trinchera*) *marchar sorpresa* *alojar rindibú* (Tirso), together with some other immigrants: *tusón gage jarrete claraboya*, etc. On the other hand, the Italian influence was of the highest importance and influenced art, commerce and war. In a general way the Italian of the humanists served as a precedent for the latinisms of Herrera and others; Valdés proposed to take over from Italy *facilitar fantasía cómodo incómodo entretener discurrir discurso servitud novela pedante asasinar* as well as other terms which have not been adopted. Direct indebtedness appears in Garcilaso's *selvaticuez* 'savagery' and Herrera's *vagueza* It. *vaghezza* 'charm, beauty'; but confessed italianisms belong rather to the technicalities of war, commerce and the arts. In commerce the Genoese bankers had such a prestige that *genovés* means 'banker, usurer' since the Middle Ages; and in this line we have *banco banca millón estafar* 'swindle' *tráfico*. Soldiers, sailors and travellers brought back many terms like *bisón* 'recruit' *infantería escopeta* 'musket' *parapeto*, together with others that were less needed: *centinela* for *vela* 'sentinel', *emboscada* for *celada*, *fosfo* for *cava*. Among useful naval terms are *piloto proa fragata galeaza góndola brújula* 'compass'. Torres Naharro mingled Italian and Spanish to amuse his polyglot audience in Rome, and another soldier, Cervantes, cultivates italianisms (*quistar fracasar testa*), but is little touched by French. The technical terms of architecture, music, painting, sculpture and literature are Italian in Spain as in the rest of the world: *fachada friso grotesco pianoforte claroscuro esdríjulo terceto soneto novela pedante*, etc.

Apart from its Latin sisters, Spanish of that age had important creditors only in the New World, where a large vocabulary of Arawak, Nahuatl, Quechua and Guarani words was, and still is being, absorbed into the current language. It will be more convenient to discuss these when treating of the Spanish of America. A few Far Eastern words also filtered into Spanish, as *champán* 'sampan' and *té* 'tea'

from China (Fukienese; the Mandarin *cha* appears in Portuguese), and *pao* from Malaya. Holland supplied *holanda* 'holland', but also several nautical terms came from England: *estribor* 'starboard', *babor* 'larboard, back-board'. From Germany there was also an import-trade of soldiers' slang: *sacanete* Ger. *Landsknecht* 'lansquenet', *trinquis* 'drink' (verb *trincar*).

### (c) THE MODERN PERIOD

The modern period may be more succinctly discussed as many of its features have been implicitly considered in the previous sections. It opens with the sentiment of exhaustion left in the best minds by the failure of the later Hapsburgs. The linguistic habits of the seventeenth century were not indeed forgotten. They persisted in the theatre and elsewhere to express a much depleted content of thought. The best minds of the age, however, found such expression to be at variance with the circumstances of intellectual life, and they waged war against gongorism as a force which corrupts the language. We find the attitude of censure in Feijóo, Forner, Luján, Cadalso, and the two Moratíns. Their criticism is directed not only against the words but also against the things to be expressed; on the one hand they ridicule the inflated diction of poetasters, on the other they call attention to the philosophic and cultural achievements of Europe. Europe, in that age, was essentially France, its brightest luminary: and French becomes paramount among the foreign influences which have moulded modern Spanish. Not only the leaders of the Age of Reason, but the principal Romantics in the early nineteenth century, and the principal Modernists at its close, brought from French sources their novelties of doctrine and language. The eighteenth century borrowed social terms: *etiqueta sortí laqué* (*lacayo*) *petimetre* *burgués equipaje*; and it favoured an abstract vocabulary: *Ser Supremo* for *Dios*, *infundamentabilidad* *superficialidad* *infalibilidad*, which, though drawn from Latin or native sources, bear witness to the influence of the 'philosophes'. Cadalso has

*jefe de obra* 'masterpiece'; and *remarcable* appears in the eighteenth century in Spain, whence it has disappeared only to reappear in Buenos Aires. During almost the entire period there has been a strong opposition offered to gallicisms, which has succeeded in removing several while delaying recognition of others. The successive editions of the Academy's dictionary fall short of the vocabulary of even refined speakers by several thousands of common expressions, not all of which are used with a sense of their strangeness, e.g. *burocracia* and *silueta* first appear in 1914. This resistance has been strengthened by the campaigns for purism in American Spanish, and especially by the Venezuelan Baralt's pillory, *Diccionario de galicismos*. On the other hand, the prestige of French culture has stood higher in some American republics than in Spain, and a considerable half-absorbed vocabulary is to be found on the Plate and elsewhere. As the continued unity of the language demands not only correctness, but compromise, it is to be expected that some of these American gallicisms will ultimately receive official sanction in Spain. In the meanwhile a lively, but perishable, lexicon serves social life, politics, fashion, etc., which are all departments deep in the debt of France.

A mark of the gallicisms of the modern epoch is the failure of the equation between the French and the Spanish *j*. The former remains [ʒ], the latter has passed to [χ]. The nearest equivalents possessed by modern Spanish for the French sound are *ch* [tʃ] and *s* [s]. Thus we get *charretera* Fr. *jarretière* 'garter', *pichón* Fr. *pigeon* 'pigeon', *bisutería* Fr. *bijouterie* 'jewelry'.

The decline of Italy is marked in the loan-words of the modern period, and also the rise of Anglo-Saxon prestige. In the latter case, the lexicon is largely unauthorized and perishable. It deals with forms of sport, social life in its expensive aspects, and industrial practices: *club fiveclock* (tea at 6 p.m.) *futbol(ista)* *récord* *repórter* *espiche* *mitin* *túnel* *vagón* *tranvía* (with -way hispanized) *biftecs* *rosbif*. Some of these terms appear in Spain by virtue of their previous appearance

in French. The conflict of the languages is more marked in Mexico and the Plate region, and I propose to discuss these elements more fully in the next chapter.

### THE SOUTHERN DIALECTS AND ANDALUZ

The history of Spanish bears witness to the paramount importance of the two Castiles both as innovators and as conservators, but a very great influence has been exerted by the cities of the Guadalquivir valley upon the colloquial speech in Spain and Spanish America. The most important of these cities is Sevilla. Pedro the Cruel used Sevilla as his capital during the greater part of his reign, following a practice which had been growing among his predecessors. The city was recommended by its wealth and beauty, and by its proximity to the debated frontier of Granada. Under the Trastamara dynasty this importance remained with the Andalusian capital. It was from Sevilla that Juan I organized his war against Portugal in 1383 and the years following, and from the Guadalquivir both Juan II and the Catholic Monarchs conducted their campaigns against Granada. Sevilla and Córdoba again figured prominently in the suppression of the Morisco rising of 1568-70, and it was to Sevilla that the victorious fleet returned from Lepanto. Sevilla was the centre of colonial administration and trade, and the effectual capital of the ultramarine empire. It enjoyed a vigorous literary life, and saw the rise and most of the masterpieces of the Spanish school of painting before Velázquez. It continues to be an influential centre for art, music and literature, while it has acquired some other claims for popularity as the capital of bullfighting and native sportsmanship and the seat of the gypsy convention. It enjoys from these sources a reputation for swagger that makes conventional Andalusian the tongue of all jolly roysterers.

The south of Spain forms, in consequence, an area of resistance to Castilian novelties, and a focus whence southern

innovations irradiate. Its extent is not easy to define, because of the suspicion which must still wrap the concept of *andaluz*; for, on the one hand, the region has not yet been systematically investigated, and on the other, stage conventions and popular opinion have included in this dialect the greater number of vulgarisms common to all Spain. Its differential features are, in strict accuracy, still unknown. We may take, however, two criteria which will serve roughly to fix the boundaries of these southern varieties of Spanish. The one criterion is negative: the persistence of aspirate *h*; the other positive: the diffusion of two varieties of *s*. The persistence of the aspirate is not peculiar to southern Spanish, as it occurs also in eastern Asturian dialects; but in either case it is a symptom of resistance to a change focussed on Old Castile. Unlike the Asturian dialects those of southern Spain are not variants of the common tradition of Spanish Romance, but of its particular Castilian variety, from which they differ partly by the slowness with which certain changes have been effected. Hence the criterion of the aspirate, though not singularly Andalusian or southern, has value as a means of delimiting vaguely the line of conflict between the two varieties of Castilian-Spanish.

The silencing of the aspirate took place earlier on the east of the Castilian domain than in its centre and west. Descending along the Aragonese border by Cuenca to Albacete, silent and aspirate *h* were already concurrent in the sixteenth century; but in the centre, at Toledo and at Ciudad Real, on the middle sections of the Tagus and Guadiana, only the aspirate was heard until the closing years of the century. Another area of dispute was centred on Salamanca in southern León. Since the sixteenth century these regions have silenced their *h*; but the aspirate continues to be heard in all Extremadura, Andalusia and Granada. To the east of these provinces lies that of Murcia, which has had a somewhat chequered history. Conquered and occupied by James I of Aragón-Catalonia for a brief period between 1263 and 1266 owing to a revolt of Moslems against

Castile, Murcia, though returned to Castile, did not cease to be an objective of Aragonese policy. In respect of the transformation of Lat. *f*, Murcian has a history linked with that of the Aragonese and Valencian frontier dialects, viz. that *f* passed directly into silence, without an intervening aspirate. The southern dialects are thus *extremeño*, *andaluz* and *murciano*.

Varieties of *s* form a precise means of determining the limits within this area of Andalusian dialects. To the layman they seem characterized by the reduction of the sibilants *s* *g* *z* to a single sound, which is normally [s] —*seseo*—but occasionally [θ] —*ceceo*. Recent investigations show that this account is not strictly accurate. The prime cause of the two confusions was a change in the value assigned to *s*, which is cacuminal in Castile, in all the north, in Extremadura and Murcia, but coronal on the Andalusian border. The cacuminal *s* is produced by raising the tongue-tip to a point behind the alveoli, with a concavity in its upper surface; the coronal *s* is that produced by raising the point of the tongue against the meeting-place of the upper teeth and gums, with less concavity. The cacuminal *s* differs from the coronal *s* in the direction of the palatal sibilant *x* [ʃ], and for this reason Gil Vicente represents his Moorish in the *Cortes de Júpiter* (1519) as making her *esses* into *exxes*. Coronal *s* coincides with [ʃ] in every respect save only that the one is a fricative, the other an affricate. When, therefore, *g* *z* had attained the stage [ʃ] they were liable to fall into coronal *s* on losing their affrication. This has actually occurred within a territory less extensive than that of coronal *s*, which is itself less extended than the political area of Andalusia. The Castilian *s* covers all the central Meseta, and descends its broken edge, the Sierra Morena, until it meets the plain of the Guadalquivir. This line between hill and plain corresponds roughly with the frontier of coronal *s*. The *seseo* lies within this frontier, and is wanting in the province of Jaén, where *s* and *g* are successfully distinguished, as also in part of the province of Huelva. It occurs outside these limits in a linguistic islet

near Cartagena, perhaps thanks to shipmen in part, and on the frontier near Badajoz, in a district long disputed between Spain and Portugal. As the *seseo* is the older sound it is deemed the more correct, and so is predominant in Sevilla, where the *ceceo* is frequent among the vulgar. But we actually find that the greater part of Andalusia prefers the *ceceo*—the entire coast-line from Huelva, via Cádiz, Gibraltar and Málaga, to Almería, the country round Sevilla, most of Granada, and islets at Guadix, Baza and near Cartagena. It is perhaps to be attributed to local Morisco peculiarities in pronouncing Ar. *śin*. The area agrees somewhat imperfectly with a second value given to *s*, a predorsal *s* with the tongue-tip on the lower teeth. This *s* is, according to present information, the *s* of almost all Spanish America. As these changes run concentrically round Sevilla, where the less cultured are addicted to the provincial *ceceo*, we may take them as examples of the diffusive power of this centre. Firstly, the coronal pronunciation of *s*; secondly and in dependence on the first, *seseo*; third and fourthly, *ceceo* and the predorsal value of *s*, with the co-operation of Granada in the former case. We note that from Sevilla *seseo* and predorsal *s* spread over Spanish America, to which the conquerors had taken cacuminal *s* only; and if Minsheu means by his spellings *czh* for *j* that the velar [χ] spread from Sevilla against the older [š], it is the less remarkable that Castile and Spanish America should have effected the same change, in apparent independence of each other.

Consciousness of the existence of *andaluz* is shown by the hostility of the Castilians Valdés (1536) and 'Prete Jacopín' to the authority of the Andalusians Nebrija (1492) and Herrera (1580), but the first explicit indication is given in 1570 for both *ceceo* and *seseo* at Sevilla by Arias Montano, and the Granadine Núñez Muley (1567) is an evident *ceceante* (he writes *çuzedió neççiedad vaçallos*, etc. for *sucedío necesidad vasallos*). How much earlier we can go is doubtful. The lisp attributed by Ayala to Pedro the Cruel was doubtless a personal defect of this otherwise typical Andalusian king. The dialect cannot

go back directly to the Mozarabic of the region, since it has evidently been brought from New and Old Castile by the Christian settlers and agrees with Castilian in all its points of divergence from Mozarabic. But there may have been from the first some commingling of indigenous speech-habits with Castilian, such as might produce the opposition to cacuminal *s*. The playwrights of Lope de Vega's school established the hegemony of Madrid in standard Spanish, and it was at Madrid that even an Andalusian like Góngora sought to propagate his innovations. Since 1600, therefore, there has been no 'correct' Andalusian, and the dialect has gathered to itself all current vulgarisms and has even affected a gypsy jargon, that of the *cantes flamencos*, on the ground that it is the language of wit (*el lenguaje de la gracia*).

*Ceceo* and *seseo* are terms applicable to the pronunciation of *s* *ʃ* *z* at the beginning of syllables, which includes in Spanish cases where they occur between vowels. At the end of the syllable these consonants are normally aspirated, and the aspirate may take on the characteristics of a following consonant, either partially or entirely. Thus *mismo* may become *mihmo* or *mimmo* (where *m* represents an unvoiced *m*, as a reminder of the voiceless *h*), and *usted* may go so far as to become *uté*. When an *s* occurs within the breath-group at the end of a word and between vowels, it may be treated intervocally or as final of the syllable: in the former case it remains, forming liaison with the following vowel (*lo sojoj* or *lo zojoj* are conventional representations of the intervocal *seseo* and *ceceo* in *los ojos*, with final aspirate); in the latter, and more usual, case it is aspirated, and may not even prevent synalæpha (*lo jamigo, vamo jayá, e jesó* for *los amigos, vamos allá, es eso*, and *tú entrará en, mientras en*). This *h* is represented conventionally by *j*, but is not the velar vibrant [χ] but the true aspirate [h]. The same aspirate, also represented in modern times by *j* though Herrera used *h*, is found as the descendant of Lat. *f*, both initially and medially, as well as in those cases where Castilian-Spanish has retained *f* (i.e. before *r* and *u*, and in many learned words). This

aspirate is found in some words contributed by the dialect to standard Spanish, as *juerga* 'jollification' alongside *huelga* 'rest, strike' from *holgar folgar* FOLLICARE, and *jamelgo* 'sorry nag', FAMELIGU *famélico* 'hungry', *jaca haca* 'nag, pony'. The aspirate may be misplaced in words that had no *f* originally, as in the loan-word *jándalo* 'huckster', which is merely the regional name. These two circumstances give the aspirate an important rôle in *andaluz*, a rôle that is somewhat unsettled and liable to change. A further main characteristic is *yeísmo*, i.e. the pronunciation of *ll* as *y* or the derivatives of *y* (which are [ž] and [j]): *cabayero* and its variants for *caballero*. *Yeísmo* is not universal in the province (it is not used in parts of the Huelva district), and it is not at all restricted to Andalusia and the south. On the contrary it occurs everywhere in vulgar Spanish, is normal in Spanish America, and existed in the past history of most of the Peninsula. A stage of *yeísmo* is implied in the passage of -CL- -LI- to [ž] in Old Castilian *ojo fijo hijo OCULU FILIU*. In the case of *LL* Old Castilian must have retained the pronunciation as a lengthened [l:] during the period in which CL LI had become [λ]. Thus the Andalusian *yeísmo* is merely a change in keeping with the general tendency of the Spanish language. It appears that the poet of the *Cid*, a Mozarab of Medinaceli, had not mastered the *yeísmo* of twelfth-century Castilian when he was betrayed into spelling *Cullera* as *Gujera* and *Castellón* as *Castejón*. Mozarabic had *y* for *ll* representing initial *L*- in *yengua* LINGUA. The passage from *ll* to *y* is found outside the Peninsula, and notably in French: *fille* is pronounced [fiy:], and *Bastille* is an ultra-correction for *Bastie*.

Other features of *andaluz* are also common to all vulgar Spanish, and are due to the interchange of certain sounds and the tendency to lose others. Among the more notable equations are *gue* = *hue* = *gue* and *bu* = *gu*, together with *l* = *r* = *n* = *d*; the principal losses are intervocalic *d* *g* *r*. Thanks to the first equation we find *güeno* for *bueno* 'good', *güevo* or *buevo* for *huevo* 'egg', *güérzano* for *huérzano* 'orphan', *güey* for

*buey* 'ox', as well as *abuja* for *aguja* 'needle', *guñuelo* for *buñuelo* 'bun', etc. The profit goes mostly to *g* and this *g* may then be applied analogically where no justification exists in the standard sounds: e.g. *huele* 'it smells' gives *giuele*, and hence *goler* for the infinitive *oler*. The second set of equivalences causes a number of interchanges between *l r n d*. In this series the *r* is not the vibrant of standard Spanish, but a relaxed fricative as in English [ɹ], and the four sounds are thus all dental fricatives with the same point of articulation. So we find *l* for *r d* in *picaldía alvertío perfilia jacel* for *picardía advertido perfidia hacer*; *r* for *l* in *artura gorpe er tar* for *altura golpe el tal*; *r* for *d* in *seguiriya soleares* for *seguidilla soledades*; *n* for *r* in *mejón* for *mejor*. A special case is that of *l* combined with an occlusive or fricative initially, which passes to *r* as in Leonese and Portuguese: *branco prata* for *blanco plata*. The disappearance of fricatives between vowels is illustrated for *g* by *miaja* for *migaja* 'crumb'; for *d* by *soleares esnío* for *soledades desnudo*; for *r* by *paeres* for *paredes* and *paese* for *parece*. Final *-d -r* normally disappear, when not converted to other sounds, and initial *d-* is also liable to be lost either by confusion between the prefixes *des- es-* as in *esnío*, or as a result of syntactical phonetics where an initial *d* may fall between vowels, as *ice eja* for *dice deja*. This is especially probable for *e* as the remains of *de*. On the other hand *d-* may be intruded into *dir dentrar* for *ir entrar*. These substitutions occur in all vulgar Spanish, and are not peculiar to Andalusian varieties. They are as frequently to be encountered in Madrid.

Not much is known as to the peculiarities of *andaluz* vocabulary. It contains what may be archaisms due to the survival of words imported by the original settlers, and the probability is increased when we find the same word in Aragonese or Asturo-Leonese: *babero* 'bib' (in Aragonese 'pinafore'), *ansias* for *ñuseas*, *fimo* (cf. Cat. *fem*) for *estiércol*, *dengún* for *ningún*, etc. There is no marked correspondence with Arabic reported from Andalusia, but a notable feature of some forms of the dialect is their indebtedness to Romany.

The Spanish gypsies were tolerated by the Church authorities who, if we may judge by Calderón, have considered want of religion remediable but difference of religion perilous. On the other hand their irregular life and reputation for theft led the civil powers to class them with malefactors. For their own purposes it was convenient to substitute in essentially Spanish sentences Romany words for certain special terms. On the other hand their freedom, tribal habits and knowledge of horses attracted admiration, which their conflict with authority made romantic. They receive the attentions of amateurs (*aficionados*), who cultivate the gypsy pose more thoroughly than the Romanies. The gypsy songs (*cantes flamencos*) are not the inventions of Romanies or relics of a tribal tradition; they are basically Spanish, and the Romanies are executants. They include a number of common words from Romany (*caló*), as *parné* 'money' *gachí* 'girl' *abelar* or *abillar* 'have' *chai* 'girl' *penar* 'tell' *plaloró* 'brother' *querelar* 'make', etc.; but songs which attempt a thoroughgoing Romany are often later than more Spanish versions, and betray the hand of the non-Romany *aficionado*.

The *andaluz* dialect has a considerable literature and theatre, including collections of popular songs and traditions, regional novels and essays of an Andalusian tint like those of 'Fernán Caballero' and Estébanez Calderón, while the Quintero brothers in their dramas are held to be the best representatives of the wit of the region. Specimens of *murciano* are offered by Vicente Medina's *Aires murcianos* (1899) and of *extremeño* by J. M. Gabriel y Galán's *Extremenñas* (1902). These contain the elements we have already noted as 'Andalusian', though they distinguish the sibilants as in Castilian. *Extremeño* possesses a marked aspiration for *f h*, and employs *i u* for *e o* as finals; while modifying variously medial unaccented vowels as *andaluz* also does. The region is sparsely populated for various reasons: it was much thinned by the emigration to America, it depends much on live-stock which require space, and parts are malarious. In consequence, the province is one of retarded development, and the language

also shows remarkable archaisms. To the north of Cáceres in Plasencia, Coria and Garrovillas, the medieval distinction between voiced *z* and voiceless *g* remains perceptible. Each sound had evolved to the interdental position without coalescing into one, and the distinction is represented as between *c* or *z* [θ] and *d* [ð]: *jadel idil podu adeite* for *hacer decir pozo aceite*, OSp. *hacer dezir pozo azeite*. By virtue of *ceceo* this *d* appears for OSp. voiced *-s*: *Pladencia codah* for *Plasencia cosas*. *Extremeño* is in other respects a dialect of transition between *andaluz* and the patois of southern León.

On *andaluz* consult T. Navarro Tomás, A. M. Espinosa (hijo) y L. Rodríguez-Castellano, 'La frontera del andaluz', *Rev. Fil. Esp.* xx, A. Castro, 'El habla andaluza' in *Lengua, Enseñanza y Literatura* (Madrid, 1924), and the admirable article by H. Schuchardt, 'Die Cantes flamencos', *Zeitschrift für rom. Phil.* v. See also A. M. Espinosa (hijo), *Arcaísmos dialectales* (Madrid, 1935).

### ARAGONESE AND ASTURO-LEONESE

It remains for me to mention the fact of the continued existence of the ancient dialects of Spanish Romance in a thin arc from the Galician frontier to the Catalan. They are an essential source for knowledge of medieval Leonese and Aragonese, and their archaic forms constitute for Spanish a sort of contemporary antiquity. It is possible to hear and use language long lost in the evolution of the standard speech. Moreover, as their point of cleavage from Castilian-Spanish goes back to Spanish Romance itself, they have more distinguishing marks, and maintain them more consistently, than dialects of recent growth like *andaluz*. Their minor internal differences of usage are also numerous, so that in comparison with them the rest of the Spanish-speaking area seems homogeneous and scarcely differentiated. Reasons of this kind have attracted to them, and especially to Leonese, the interested attention of several distinguished researchers. For our purpose, which is historical, the place in exposition of Aragonese and Leonese has been earlier in the book, where we discussed the conflict of dialects which ended in

the supremacy of Castilian. At this point a brief summary may suffice.

The area of the non-Castilian Spanish dialects has been modified since the Middle Ages by the steady expansive pressure of Castilian. Expanding fanwise to the south, Castilian severed the ancient link constituted by Mozarabic between Leonese and Aragonese. Its north-eastward thrust widened the northern gap, as almost all the Basque border is occupied by the standard language. On the Spanish side Basque merges abruptly into Castilian-Spanish, whereas on the north it shades off more easily into Gascon *parlers* of French. Driving east and west Castilian has occupied the great towns and all the level country—the environs of León and Salamanca, and the upper Ebro Valley. The dialects have retreated into or across the hills, to places remote from Madrid where communications are difficult and society simple and traditional. West Leonese lies about the Montañas de León and has the backing of Galician, towards which it effects the transition from Spanish; the Asturian (*bable*) dialects lie in the confined valleys behind the Cantabrian range; and the shy survivals of Aragonese lurk in the valleys leading to the Pyrenees.

As in medieval times, Asturo-Leonese and Aragonese agree to differ from Castilian in certain broad respects. They extract diphthongs from ē õ even before a palatal: Arag. *viengo tiengo*, NOCTE Leon. *nueite* Arag. *nueite nuet*, FOLIA Leon. Arag. *fueya*, where Spanish has *vengo tengo noche hoja*. They make use of *y* between vowels to prevent a crasis: *seyer*, Sp. *ser*. Among the consonants the most important are initial *f* and *j* ǵ, together with medial -c'l- -g'l- -li- -ct- -ult-. In Castilian-Spanish *f* has become silent. The dialects preserve either their native *f* (in western León, Asturias de Oviedo and Aragón) or the primitive innovation *h*: FOLIA *fueya*. The aspirate occupies the eastern Asturian region, of which Santander is the capital. The Montaña, as it is called, is more accessible from the central Meseta. Initial *j* was early lost in Castilian but was preserved in Leonese and Aragonese,

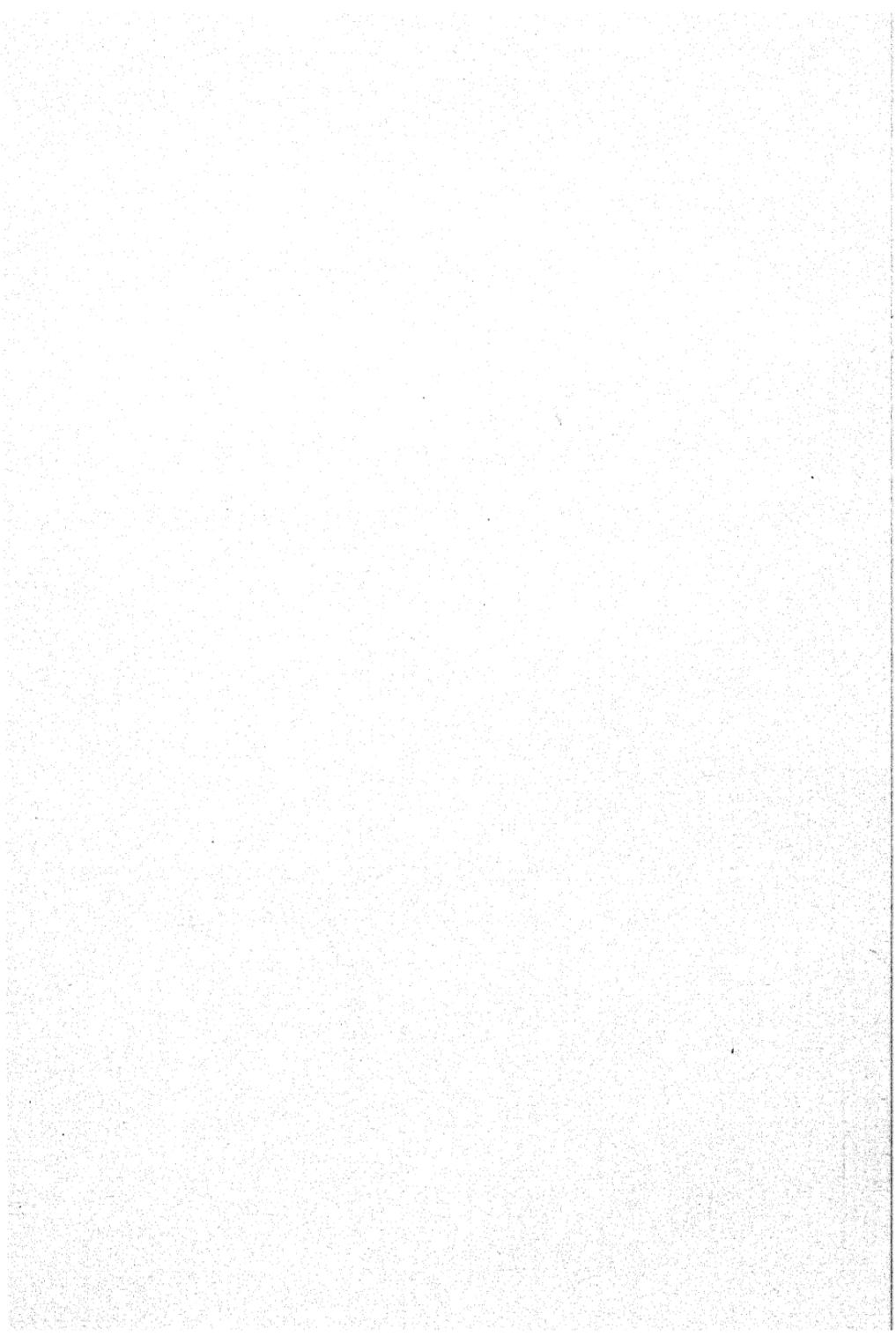
where it had the value of [ž j] according to circumstances. Both Leonese and Aragonese have unvoiced this palatal, doubtless in the course of the sixteenth century: Asturo-Leonese has unvoiced the fricative [ž] and so gets *x* [š] in *xineru xelar* Sp. *enero helar* JANUARIU GELARE, while Aragonese has unvoiced the affricate [j] and so gets *ch* [č] in *chimebro chirmán* Sp. *enebro hermano* JUNIPERU GERMANU. These changes affect all *j*'s: Asturo-Leonese *xente xudíu* Arag. *choben* Sp. *gente judío* *joven*. The medial groups -c'l- -li- give *ll* or *y* in both dialects: Leon. *muyer* Arag. *mullé* Sp. *mujer*, Leon. *oreya* Arag. *aguilla* Sp. *oreja aguja* from *MULIERE AURICULA ACUCULA*. Medial -cr- gives in each dialect -it-, which may be further reduced to *t* in Aragonese: FACTU Leon. Arag. *feito* (Arag. *feit fet feto*) Sp. *hecho*; and the same conclusion is reached in Leon. Arag. *muito* Sp. *mucho* MULTU. They agree also in using accented forms of the verb 'to be', leading to diphthongs in *yes ye yera*, etc., and in using -oron as 3 Pl. preterite, on the analogy of the 3 S. -ó.

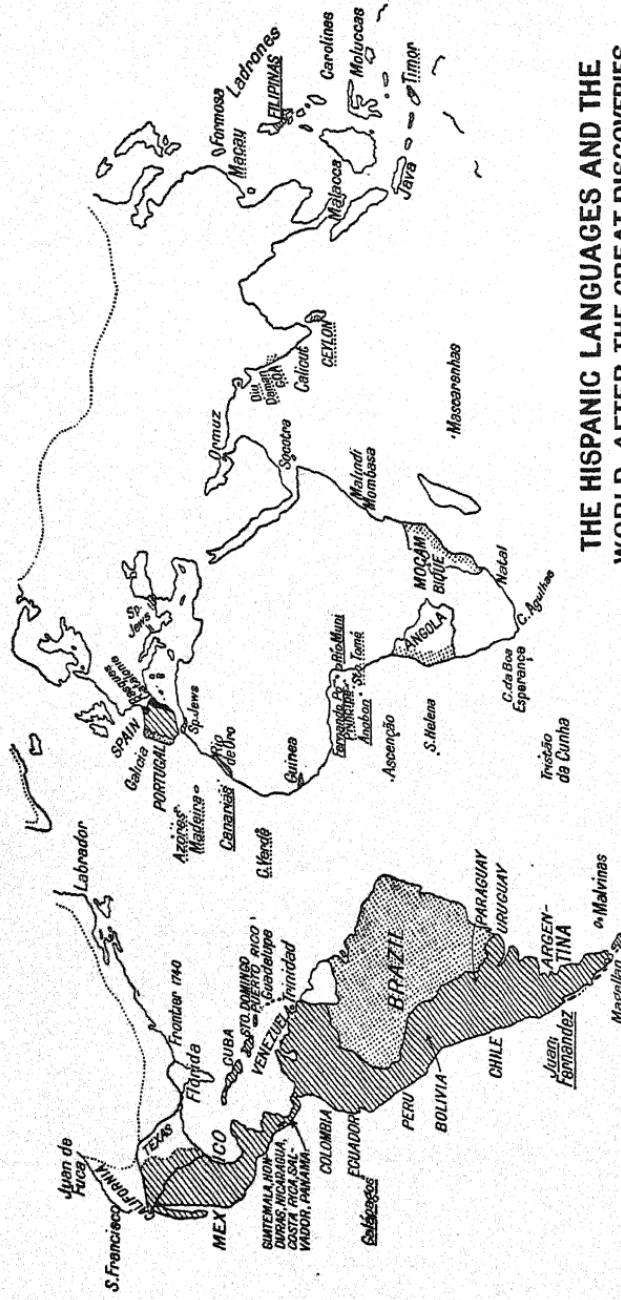
A few traits are peculiarly Aragonese. As to vowels this dialect shows readiness to discard final -e and does so invariably in adverbs in -ment; it tends also to discard -o: *breu* (Sp. *breve*) *finalment estan* (Sp. *estando*). As a result of this change the plural sign *s* is directly attached to a consonant, as *biens* Sp. *bienes*, and the verb has *tiens tenez* (from *tenets*) for Sp. *tienes tenéis*. As final -r is not pronounced we have *mullé mullés lugá lugás* for *mujer(es) lugar(es)*. As for the consonants, apart from the *ch*- in *choben* and its likes, the leading peculiarity of Aragonese is its conservation of PL- CL-: *¿cómo te clamas?* 'what is your name?' In the eastern end of the area, in Ribagorza, there is a strong tendency to palatalize *l* when it occurs either singly or in combination at the head of the syllable, thus giving not only *pll- cll-* but also *bll-*. There is a characteristically Aragonese use of gender, a tendency to convert adjectives in -e into -o -a, to express sex: *tristo -a, cuało cuala, grando -a*. The pronouns contain several novelties: the disjunctive is *yo tú* not *mí ti*; *le(s)* dative is distinguished consistently from *lo(s)*; there is a masculine article in *lo*

and locally *o*, and a 3 Pl. possessive in *lur(es)*. The archaic pronominal adverbs *y en* still survive. The verb tends to form its gerunds and past participles from the preterite stem rather than the present: *supiendo supido* from *saber*. By compensation, Aragonese makes many efforts to regularize irregular verbs: *sabiese dase decié facié* for *supiese diese dije hice* from *saber dar decir hacer*. In most of these particulars and in its vocabulary Aragonese marks the transition from Castilian to Catalan. A special interest attaches to the district of Ribagorza, in which the transition actually takes place, as the local speech is ambiguously either Spanish or Catalan. At Énguera in Valencia an archaic dialect still preserves the medieval distinction between voiced and voiceless sibilants *s f z* as [θ ð s z]; and near Viella in the Vall d'Aran we have the only fragment of a French dialect on Spanish soil.

The Asturo-Leonese dialects are in a better state of conservation than the Aragonese, and they show more variety. There are three main divisions. In the east, the Montaña de Santander is the source of the local idioms in Pereda's famous novels. They give him racy words to amplify his Spanish, but he does not seem to have esteemed the dialect as such. In this region the aspirate stands for *r*. The central region, the Asturias de Oviedo, provides the typical *bable* of dialect authors. Apart from the features already cited as held in common with Aragonese, we find that initial *l*-palatalizes (*lluna llana llamber llingua*), *-ORIU* becomes *-oiru* (*retortoiru cobertoira*), final *-o* becomes *-u*, the preposition *con* is assimilated to the article (*cola piedra* or *cuna piedra* for *con la, con una*), *DEDIT-ILLI* is *dio-lle dioye dioi*, *-ra* forms are still pluperfect indicative, and *-ín* is a favourite suffix (*vecín sobrín molín*). Near Oviedo, as a local peculiarity, *-as -an* become *-es -en*, as *casa cases canta canten*. Western Leonese accentuates the common Asturian features with a greater admixture of forms approximating to Galician. The most important of these are the retention of the diphthongs *ei ou*, as in *cantey matey caldeiro cousa pouca cantou*. Similarly *muito* as in Galician, *feito*. There is considerable variation in the treatment of *cl-*

PL- FL-. In medieval times these gave already [ʃ] in *Xainiz xosa*. WLeon. solutions are [č] as in Galician (*cheiro chombo chanicu* from FLAGRU PLUMBU PLANU) and [ʂ] as in *tsabe CLAVE*. The *ts-* may also arise from palatalized initial L- in *tsuna tseite* for *luna leche*, where central Asturian has *ll*. These forms co-exist with invaders from Castilian which establish themselves first in single words that are commonly used, such as FLAMMA *llama* in S. Ciprián de Sanabria and *llena*, while they also give rise to inconsistencies like CLAVES *chaves* but *ez llaves* Sp. *las llaves*. The Leonese dialects enjoy a popular literature of folk-tales and songs which some attempt has been made to erect into a regional art-form; but for such purposes the most important variety has been the *sayagués* which was the conventional rustic dialect of the classical Spanish stage. Juan del Encina imitated for the delectation of the Duke of Alba the dialect of the peasants in the neighbourhood of Salamanca and Alba de Tormes, which is properly termed *charruno*; an incorrect identification with Sayago, near Zamora, gave it the misnomer *sayagués*. At Miranda on the Duero, a town in Portugal which was once a portion of the Astorgan bishopric, an extreme dialect of Leonese is spoken on Portuguese soil.





## THE HISPANIC LANGUAGES AND THE WORLD AFTER THE GREAT DISCOVERIES

[Note how closely the distribution of Spanish and Portuguese corresponds with the outline of the world as known before 1740]

## CHAPTER VII

### THE EXTENSION OF SPANISH TO SPANISH AMERICA

The extension of Spanish overseas is the legacy of Spain's great age of discovery and conquest, and its distribution follows the contours of the world as known before the rise of the second British Empire. Roughly speaking, the year of Anson's circumnavigation of South America (1740) may serve to mark the conclusion of the expansive efforts of the sailors, conquerors and missionaries who carried the language over so vast a portion of the globe. The treaty of Tordesillas (1494) reserved for the Portuguese the African littoral and the southern coasts of Asia, where factories and a fringe of coast-line were in their possession; to the Portuguese also it gave a segment of the Brazilian coast which lay a little to the west of the sailing route round Africa, and which has since been aggrandized to cover the sub-continent of Brazil. The remainder of the world was the legitimate *conquista* of Castile, and covered not only the Americas, but also the Pacific Ocean. Spain was established in the Philippines, Portugal at Macau, and the Moluccas were debated territory. The initial stages of discovery and conquest were rapid. In 1492 Columbus sighted the New World and established the first Spanish fort. In twenty years Cuba and Hispaniola were firmly occupied, a factory had been set up at Darien, the isthmus of Panama crossed, and the Pacific discovered. In the next decades Magellan circumnavigated the globe and set up the Castilian banners in the Far East, while Cortés and Pizarro overthrew the barbaric empires of Moctezuma and Atahualpa. The coasts, populous centres and great rivers were rapidly occupied or at least traversed, but the work of internal colonization was slow until, in the nineteenth century, it was speeded up by the stimulus of independence,

the influx of capital and the call for European immigrants. Up to the year adopted as typifying the maximum expansion of the Spanish tongue (1740), penetration into the interior was the work primarily of Catholic missionaries, such as the Jesuits of Paraguay or Fray Junípero Serra of California, whose desire it was, in other than religious matters, to build up communities of the natives by preserving their customs, language and economy. In this way Spanish came to cover an enormous extent of territory—from north of the Río Grande to the Horn, and including the Philippine Islands—as the language of administration, of the organized Church and (owing to the failure of the Maya-Aztek and Incaic civilizations) of culture; but at the same time millions of Mexicans, Central Americans, Peruvians and Guaranes continued, and continue, to employ in their market-places their historic tongues, and to practise their ancient customs, both socially and, with some slight modifications, in their religious ordinances. The northward political frontier is now fixed by the limits of Mexico and Lower California, but beyond that boundary Spanish dialects are spoken in the south-western states of the United States, and the place-names are Spanish within a parabolic curve that descends from San Juan de Fuca Strait to Florida, including notably southern California, Arizona, New Mexico and Texas.

Thanks to this vast territorial expansion which makes them unique among neo-Latin tongues and comparable only to English and Russian, Spanish and Portuguese have stored experience which is of the highest value to students of language. Just as the language of a minute portion of Italy has been taught to Germans, Celts, Ligurians, Etruscans, Iberians and Berbers, so what was once the dialect of Burgos has been acquired by Azteks, Mixteks, Zapoteks, Aimarás, Quechuas, Araucanians, Guaranes and Tagalogs. The problem of ethnic substrata arises in each case, but with the difference that speech-habits which are merely conjectured for Celts or Iberians, can be precisely known for Azteks or Quechuas. Both Latin and Spanish have been diffused over vast areas

but the circumstances of the Spanish diffusion are recorded in chronicles, lists of emigrants, and missionary circulars. There have been forces in operation, and there still are, which tend to make Spanish no longer one speech but a family of languages in America, similar to the Romance family: isolation, illiteracy, novel surroundings, the pressure of other languages. But there are other factors which forge again the broken links: education, pride in a common literature, more and more rapid communications. Doubtless some of these introduce considerations that are foreign to the history of Latin in its decomposition, and not all the conclusions valid for the Spanish of America can be adopted by the Romance philologist. But the scientific student of language will not debate in the abstract problems of the extension and evolution of language which can be settled, with Spanish-American evidence, on a basis of fact.

Apart from the theoretical interest of the Spanish of America, there is its strong social and historical appeal. In it is recorded a traffic with an enormous variety of tribes and nations of whom the ancient world knew nothing, and from it has filtered into European tongues such knowledge as we possess of their implements, houses, customs, organizations and beliefs. It stores up, too, the experience of exploiters and colonists who struggled against unprecedented difficulties and on a gigantic scale of achievement. It possesses great variety in itself, and has entered into a remarkable series of compromises with speakers of other tongues. It has expanded and modified the Spanish of Spain, and has even, in recent times, altered its prose rhythms; but it has also resisted the process of change, being resolved to maintain its Spanish identity.

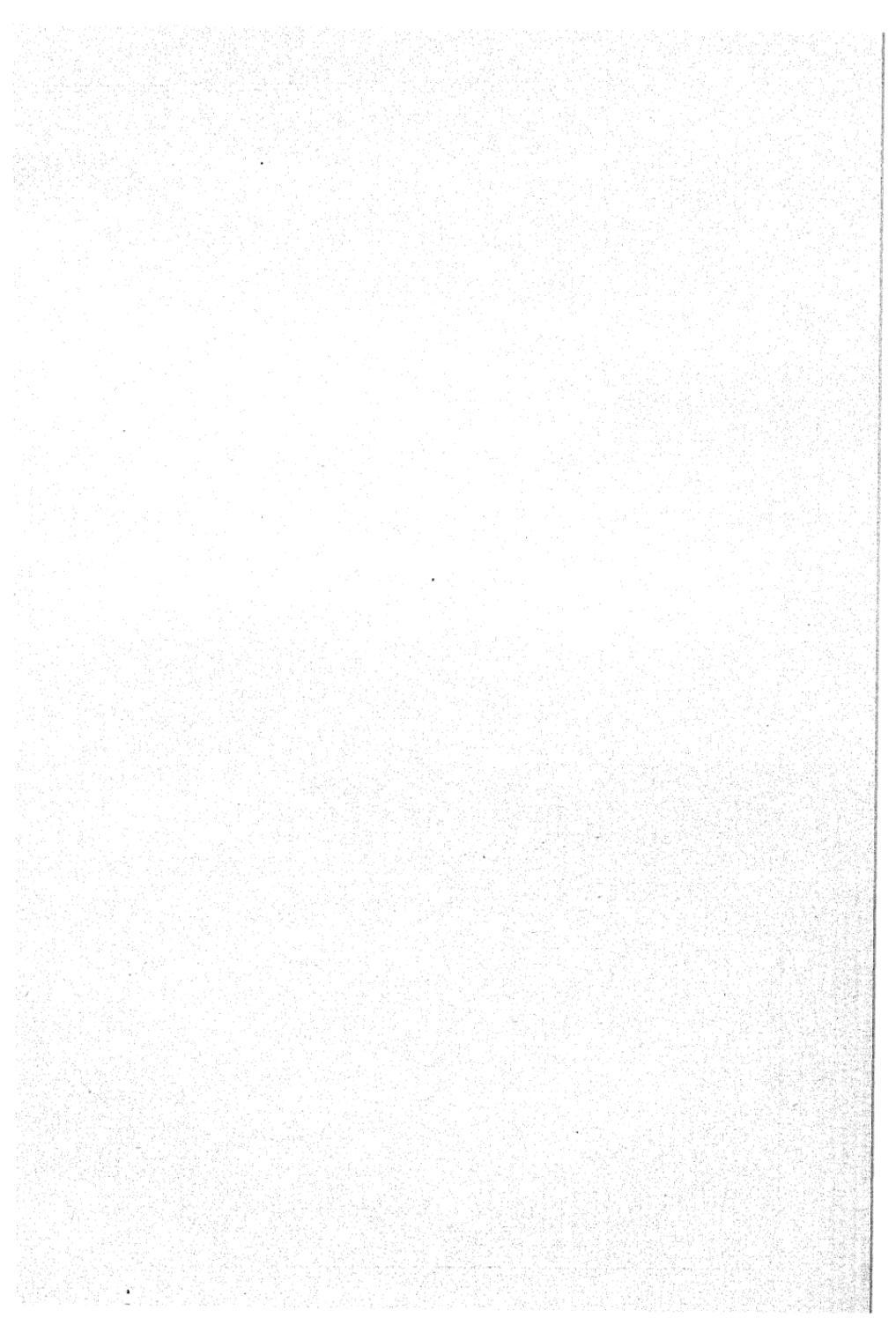
On the Spanish of America see principally R. J. Cuervo, *Apuntes críticos sobre el lenguaje bogotano* (Paris, 1914), M. de Toro, *L'Évolution de la langue espagnole en Argentine* (Paris, s.a.), R. Lenz, 'Beiträge zur Kenntnis des Amerikanospanischen', *Zeits. für rom. Phil.* xvii, M. L. Wagner, 'Amerikanisch-spanisch und Vulgärlatein', *Zeits. für rom. Phil.* xi, R. Grossmann, *Das ausländische Sprachgut im Spanischen des Río de la Plata* (Hamburg, 1926), E. F. Tiscornia, *La Lengua de Martín Fierro* (Buenos Aires,

1930), C. C. Marden, *The Phonology of the Spanish dialect of Mexico City* (Baltimore, 1896), A. M. Espinosa's studies of New Mexican Spanish in various publications, P. Henríquez Ureña's essays in *Rev. Fil. Esp.* xvii and elsewhere, A. Alonso, *El problema de la lengua en América* (Madrid, 1935). For the native tongues consult P. Rivet's article in Meillet et Cohen, *Les Langues du Monde* (Paris, 1924), and G. Friederici, *Hilfs-wörterbuch für den Amerikanisten* (Halle, 1926).

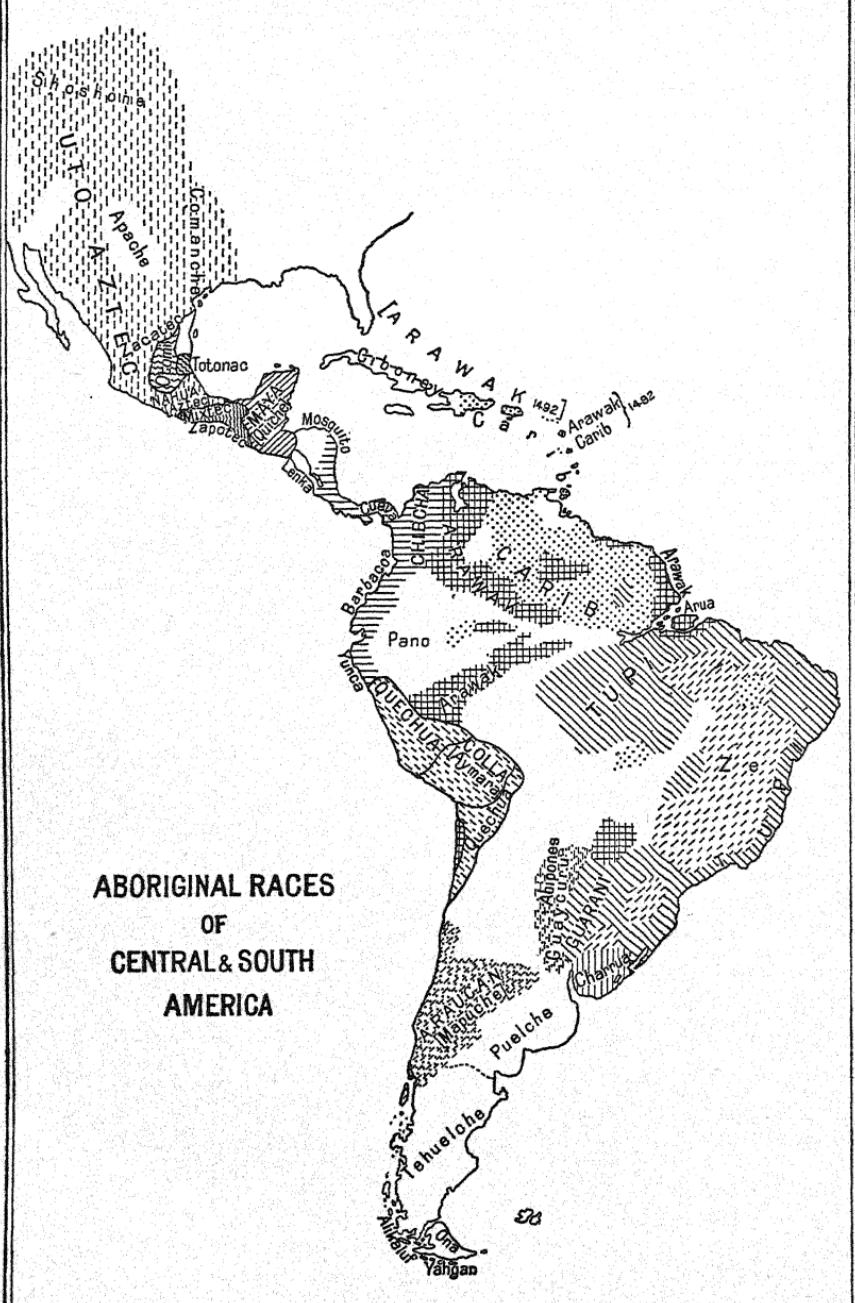
### THE ABORIGINAL LANGUAGES

Man arrived in the New World at a comparatively recent date, when some of the great primitive inventions had been made, but before the discovery of the wheel or the domestication of animals. This may have been about 10,000 B.C. His high cheekbones and other physical characteristics argue for kinship with the Mongolian race, doubtless using the Aleutian bridge and descending the mountainous spine of the two Americas; and this derivation is supported by some myths of migration, and by the evidence of diffusion of archaic utensils. There may also have been infiltrations from Polynesia, which, at Easter Island, approaches within a thousand miles of the South American shore. There is a widely distributed archaic culture, essentially the same north and south of the isthmus of Panama, but the semi-civilizations of the Mayas and Aztecs in the one continent and of the Incas in the other are independent of each other, though each unique and unrivalled in its own sphere.

In disconcerting contrast with this uniformity and youthfulness of the aboriginal cultures is the linguistic diversity of the Americas. In Eurasia and Africa great language-families like the Indo-European, Semitic, Sino-Thibetan and Bantu cover the greater portion of the land, and everywhere great national and international tongues have been fashioned and spread. All such movements in the New World have been feeble and restricted, and 123 speech-families, apparently each independent of the others, have been calculated for the two Americas: 26 north of the Río Grande, 20 in Central America and 77 in the southern continent. Against this



ABORIGINAL RACES  
OF  
CENTRAL & SOUTH  
AMERICA



diversity there has been but little reaction. The Mayas were the only begetters of such civilization as existed in North America, but their language, Quiche, remained purely local. The Tolteks and Azteks who succeeded in establishing a loose warlike confederation in central Mexico were content to employ any one of four recognized languages: Nahuatl, Mixtek, Zapotek, and Hia-Hiu or Otomí. These tongues still divide the market-places. In the south the Peruvian monarchs insisted on Quechua as part of the curriculum for vassal princes, with the result that its official use extended along the spine of the Andes from Quito to Tucumán. Its influence on the Spanish of America is thus widely exerted, but it did not oust or subdue the local languages, and even in Bolivia had to share the ground with the Aimará language of the Colla tribes. As for the *koiné* which arose from the Tupi-Guaraní speech-group, the Lingoa Geral, it was the work of missionaries after the conquest.

The causes of this diversity included, no doubt, political weakness and scarcity of population. Exaggerated estimates of the destruction committed by the Spaniards in the Greater Antilles, and of the pomp of Moctezuma and Atahuallpa, have tended to conceal the fact that the two continents were vast, empty spaces. If we assume that the repressive action of the conquerors was sufficient to counteract the natural rate of increase (and the assumption is probably unjust), if we add the figures adduced for the Antilles and make a liberal allowance for the ruin of the Prairie Indians in the United States and Canada, it would still be doubtful whether the pre-Columban population of the two continents exceeded that of modern France. The greater number were concentrated in Mexico and Guatemala on the one side, and in the Bolivian plateau and Peruvian valleys on the other, amounting to almost half the total number. Here the want of handwriting and of education based on literature left mainly unchecked the tendency to local variation. The Incas proceeded in the direction of writing no further than their celebrated *quipus*, or knotted strings which might serve as

numerical mnemonics for a narrative; the Mayas had stone hieroglyphs, which have been deciphered in so far as they indicate dates; and the Aztecs used highly ambiguous hieroglyphs in the form of an almost incomprehensible rebus. There was no absolute want of spoken literature. In Mexico the melancholy genius of King Nezahualcoyotl gave rise to lyrics in which J. J. Pesado has sought inspiration in more recent times; the Peruvian sun-cult inspired noble hymns, and there is a corpus of proverbs by the Inca Pachacutec. But all this amounts to less than we find in the empires of the Old World at the dawn of historic time.

These languages have been important for the development of American Spanish either because of their date of discovery or their importance in administration. The first voyage of Columbus brought him into contact with the gentle Arawaks only, with the result that the names for the principal American novelties are of Arawak origin. The headquarters of this family of languages was probably a region to the north of the Amazon, between the Japura and the Negro. A considerable body is found to the south of the great river on the upper course of the Madeira and Ucayali, which may be due to the advance of a wedge of Katukinas up the Amazon valley. An offshoot has crossed the Bolivian Desaguadero into northern Chile; another body migrated northwards across the plains of the Orinoco, and thence by sea to the Greater Antilles. It was this last fragment of the Arawak nation which the Spaniards first met, and which supplied the first American loan-words. In the second voyage Columbus saw his first Carib. They were cannibals, fierce warriors and bold sailors, and their search for Arawak brides gave rise to a curious symbiosis of the two speeches, the one for men, the other for women. Originally concentrated on the Xingú, about  $10^{\circ}$  South, they formed a secondary mass on the Negro from which they radiated fanwise into the Guyanas, Orinoco basin and Lesser Antilles.

In his fourth voyage Columbus encountered the complex linguistic conditions of Honduras. Here every village had its

own speech which the explorer declared to be as unlike those of the others as Arabic to Spanish. Such languages could not contribute much that was serviceable to the invaders, who borrowed freely again only when they encountered the high culture and simplified linguistic conditions of central Mexico. Here the semi-civilization of the Azteks offered many new objects which had not been known in the Antilles, and the circumstance that Mexico belongs to a distinct floral and faunal region caused the Spaniards to learn here many new names of animals and plants. Four principal languages were employed in the market-places of the plateau: Nahuatl, Zapotek, Mixtek, and Hia-Hiu. Each has contributed to Spanish vocabulary, but none so much as Nahuatl, the language of the Azteks. The language and the nation were immigrants from the north. The Shoshon Indians of Montana and Idaho, the Pueblos of Colorado, the Tolteks and Azteks of Mexico and offshoots in Guatemala indicate the line followed by the Uto-Azteks in their march towards the great Mayan focus of civilization. It was from Mexico that the conquest of Yucatan and Guatemala was effected, with the consequence that borrowed names for objects common to the whole region are of Mexican origin.

The first stage in the reduction of the southern continent, apart from Balboa's unquiet colony at Darién, was the overthrow of the great Inca empire by Pizarro. By this time it was not necessary to learn new names for many objects peculiar to America, but there were novelties in the flora, fauna and administration of Peru which called for fresh contributions to Spanish vocabulary. At the same time the administrative prestige of Quechua enabled these loan-words to remain valid over a vast extent of territory. Most Southern American borrowings are thus Quechua, even beyond the frontiers of that tongue; and, in fact, Spanish conquerors and missionaries helped to give it a wider diffusion than it had under the Incas, as they also diffused Arawak and Carib words with such rapidity that they were later reported as indigenous in many different parts. Associated with Quechua

is Aimará. The name was originally that of a Quechua tribe living on the border of the Colla nation, and was wrongly given to the latter. The language served perhaps more speakers than Quechua in Inca times and is now predominant among the Indians of Bolivia.

Other South American language-families have made less notable contributions to the speech of the colonists. In Colombia a few words were picked up from the Chibchas who had attained to some degree of civilization; and in Chile the long war against the Araucanian Indians brought into prominence their language, Mapuche. This contact has been made the more interesting to philologists by the fact that the language itself has been described with unusual competence and its relations with that of the invaders scientifically investigated by Lenz. Its rôle, however, is strictly supplementary to Quechua. In the east, between the Paraguay and Paraná Rivers, we find the primitive mass of the Tupi-Guaraní people, the 'Phoenicians' of America. They supply the language of the Paraguayan markets and the vocabulary of the great river flats. Offshoots from this stock penetrated partly along the Paraguay and Tupí into the basin of the Amazon, partly along the Brazilian coast, where they left many settlers, so as to advance up the Amazon from its mouth. In so doing the invading waves flowed round the block of Ze tribes established on middle ground between the S. Francisco and Xingú around the Araguaya and Tocantins, tributaries of the Amazon. These northerly extensions, known by the name of Tupí, have contributed the greater number of Indian words required by Brazilian Portuguese, which have to be further borrowed by Spanish when the topic is Brazil, and their general agreement formed the basis for the Lingoa Geral formed and fomented by Portuguese missionaries to serve as the *koiné* of the Amazon basin. In the extreme south of the continent Alakaluf, Choni and Yahgan offer no special interest for the hispanist, though the general linguist may take notice of them on account of their remarkably primitive development.

It is not possible, as we have seen, to speak of American

languages save in a geographical sense; but there are American phenomena of language which tend to repeat themselves in different speech-groups. Older philologists divided languages into polysynthetic, incorporating, agglutinative and isolating. These terms are not valid for the classification of languages; examples of them all occur in the two Americas. The number of polysynthetic languages, however, is notably high, that is, of languages which include with the verbal element most or many of the other parts that go to make up the discourse, with the result that words do not exist as units but only in combinations. An extreme example is the Esquimaux: *Takusariartorumagaluarnerpá?* 'Do you think he really intends to go and bother about that?' composed of significant-elements rather than words. One cannot say, for instance, *iartor-* by itself, but only (with the aid of a prop) *iartorpoq* 'he is going to'. In Nahuatl we have the standard instance of an incorporating language, in which not only pronouns but also noun-objects are included in the verb: *ka* 'eat', *ni-ka-ka* 'I eat it', *ni-naka-ka* 'I eat meat' (*nakatl* 'meat'), *nipetlačiwa* 'I make mats' (*petlatl* 'mat' Sp. *petate*). Quechua has many agglutinative peculiarities; in forming the plural, for instance, it makes use of suffixes which are semi-independent with regard to the noun they modify. The Hia-Hiu tongue of the Otomí Indians in Mexico is a surprising example of an isolating language, as unlike all its neighbours and as inexplicable as Basque is in Europe. Among all this vast number of linguistic experiments we find oddities like the presence of a fourth person in connection with Mapuche verbs and its device of pro-verbs, the failure of Quechua to achieve the notion of a plural as 'more than one', etc. Not one of all these speech peculiarities has passed into the Spanish of America. Far from conserving their own mental habits while adopting a new vocabulary, the American Mestizos have abandoned their ancient speech-habits but passed on a number of words needed to describe new things and customs. There is not even any syntactical influence of any of these tongues on Spanish, apart from the dubious instance of the Quechua suffix *-y* in the Argentine district

of Tucumán. In the language of the nursery, where the nurses are Indian women, one hears in Tucumán such words as *mamay* (*mamitay*) for *mamá mía* (*mamita mía*) in which the suffix indicates in Quechua the possessive 'my'. The words, however, have no general range outside the nursery, and within it they may be rather terms of endearment (cf. our *dearie* for *dear*) than of possession. No indigenous sounds have passed over to Spanish, such as the Nahuatl lateral click *tl* or the emphatic Quechua *cc*; and at most the phonetic influence has not gone farther than to exercise an option where the evolution of Spanish offered a choice. The influence of the American substrata, in short, has done no more than provide the names for exotic things, not all of which have a wide circulation, and many of which stand liable to replacement by newer European terms.

On the other side it should not be forgotten that the impact of Spanish upon these languages has been tremendous. A large European vocabulary has had to be adopted for things unseen theretofore in America: *caballo señora jarro sombrero* and other everyday terms. These are, in the Indian tongues, irreplaceable necessities. Spanish has commingled the languages, carrying the Arawak *canoa* and the Quechua *quinina* or *quina* into all the American languages as well as over the rest of the world. It has forced some languages to acquire new sounds, as *r* in the Nahuatl of New Mexico, where only *l* is indigenous. So the old loan-word *señora* gave *xenola*, but the later *manera* remains as *manera*. There has been interference with the intimate structure of the language, by which verbs, nouns, adjectives, particles and phrases are used as though they were true Nahuatl stems: *ti-desar-oa* 'you wish', *oqui-formar-oque* 'they transformed him', *tehua tipobre* 'thou art poor'.<sup>1</sup> Above all, Spanish has eclipsed the prestige

<sup>1</sup> Some idea of this interference may be obtained from F. Boaz's article, 'Spanish elements in modern Nahuatl' in *Todd Memorial Volumes*, i, Columbia Univ. Press, 1930. Borrowings include:

Sounds unknown to Nahuatl: *r ñ* (*libro compañero pobre*, but older loan-words *xenola xalo* for *señora jarro*).

Vocabulary: Terms of relationship (*tió sobrino hermano papá mamá familia*, etc.).

of every aboriginal language and dialect, not one of which serves any more to express an elevated or commanding idea. 'The state of Quechua', says J. J. von Tschudi, 'is so ruinous on account of the many strange words it has incorporated, on account of its mixture with other Indian tongues, and on account of its advanced stage of phonetic decomposition (due to Spanish), that if it be not immediately recovered by scholars, it has only a black outlook before it.'

### AMERICAN INDIAN LOAN-WORDS IN SPANISH

The interpreter of Christopher Columbus, Lucayo, was a native of Guanahani in the Bahamas, and thus an Arawak. His language was that of peaceable communities who traded in their long canoes, without interruption, among the Bahama Islands and along the shores of Cuba (save the extreme west) and Hispaniola, until in the vicinity of Martinique they gave way to the warlike Caribs. Their country formed part of a natural floral and faunal region which included the northern coast of South America, but was quite distinct from Mexico, and in consequence the new objects encountered by the early settlers received, in the main, Arawak names, eking out by Carib and the language of the Cueva Indians in Tierra Firme. The principal lenders were the Tayno tribe in Haiti, who were thoughtlessly exterminated as a result of the colonists' exactions. They perished too soon to experience

of religion (*dios santo ángelis cristiano misa campana alma*, etc.), political organization (*rey reina pueblo carcel preso justicia* and even *compañero amigo*), society (*haciendo rico pobre asesino lazarino*), ranching (*hacienda rancho corral puerta cuarto letrero*), horse (*cahuayo jácima cordel*), weights and measures, money and numerals (*semána peso secentos*), clothing (*vestido pantalón*), implements (*acoha* for *aguja*, *cuchillo* *machete* *máquina xalo* for *jarro*), games, food (*pan*), animals (*cahuayo león gallo pato*), plants (*arroz membrillo*).

Adjectives: *bueno flaco flojo mal mayor pobre primero solo tonto*, etc.

Verbs: *admirar cantar desear estar formar lograr mandar negar pasar sentir vestir*, etc.

Particles: including almost all the common ones in Spanish.

Suffixes: *tsitsiquito* 'the youngest one', *quahuilero* 'woodchopper'.

Together with an unlimited facility for treating Spanish words as though they were genuine Nahuatl stems.

the influence on their speech of Nahuatl and Quechua, but our early authorities sometimes confuse Arawak with Carib, so that it is best to group all Caribbean loan-words together. The earliest among them, recorded by Nebrija, is *canoa*, a Carib word already adopted by the Arawaks, and meaning a 'dug-out'. It makes its first appearances in forms that suggest dialectal variation, and proportionately guarantee the faithfulness of the borrowers: *canoa canaoa canaua canahua canagua*, etc. The word scattered immediately over both continents, from the Chapote-Utah Indians in the north to the Fuegians in the south, and is discussed by Marcoy (1869) once as if Quechua and once as Chontaquiran. Modified by a few planks, the more perfect canoe was called the *piragua* 'pettiauger', which is probably Carib of Tierra Firme, but may be Arawak. The bark canoe is known to Brazilians as *ubá*, a Tupí term. The simple polity of the natives yielded the word *cacique* 'chief of a tribe', which later displaced in Peru the Quechua *curaca*, and has yielded the Spanish derivative *caciquismo* 'political bossism'. Indian corn, the staple food of all New World communities, received the Arawak name *maíz*, derivative *maizal*, without taking into account the prior interest of the Mayas in that article. Within thirty years Pigafetta is found reporting it as an indigenous word from Brazil; and in Peru, thanks to the Spanish conquerors, *maíz* displaced the Quechua *zara*. The Arawak hut erected on the ground, *bohio* (also *botó boyo bochio buhio buío bujío buhiyo buhio boa*), was accepted as suitable for all native huts; a round hut was named by the Arawak *caney*. *Huracán* 'hurricane' is a Caribbean word, probably taken from the Arawaks of the Antilles, and so are *sabana* 'savannah', *ceiba* 'cotton-tree', *maguey* 'agave americana', *henequén* 'agave thread' (unless this comes from Yucatan), *guacamayo* 'parrot', *nigua* 'jigger flea', *batata* 'sweet potato', *barbacoa* 'barbecue', *iguana*, *tabaco*. The spread of these words was gradual. While Nebrija accepted *canoa*, Las Casas tells us that *ají* (Guinea pepper), *cazabí* (manioc bread) and *yuca* (manioc), though current in the islands, were unknown to Spain about 1512.

Among these words there intruded a few of Oriental origin, brought to America by the sailors and there given a new attachment: *azagaya* (Arabic and Medieval Spanish), *almadia* (Arabic and Portuguese) 'boat, canoe', *prao* (Polynesian), *ñame* or *iñame* 'yam' (from Africa), *anta* or *danta* (Ar. *lamt*) meaning some sort of antelope in Zurara, but applied to the tapir (*tigres tantas*, also *vaca* and *vaca montés*) and also to the elk, moose or wapiti. Orellana, the discoverer of the Amazon, saw a *vaca danta*, which was either a tapir or a manatee. The word *tapir* is Tupi-Guaraní (*tapiruçu tapireté tapihire*). These words became lodged in the Antilles and are often included among the primitive americanisms of Spanish. Together with those borrowed from Arawak and Carib they form the most assuredly established group of loan-words.

The conquest of Mexico occurred when this primitive insular vocabulary was already established in Spanish use. New words were required, however, to name the plants and animals unknown to the islands: the *tomate* 'tomato' (Nah. *tomatl*), *aguacate* 'alligator-pear', *cacahuete* 'pea-nut', *camote* for the insular *batata* 'sweet potato' (also *camote apicho* Quechua *apichu*), *hule* 'rubber', *nopal* 'prickly pear', etc., together with the *ocelote*, the *zopilote* 'vulture' (Nah. *tzopilotl*), *sinsonte* 'mocking-bird', and *quetzale*. New foodstuffs included in this region *cacao* 'cocoa' (Nah. *cacahuatl*), *chocolate* and the *jícara* (*xícara*, Nah. *xicalli*) from which it is drunk, *tamale* 'maize cake', *mezcal* a spirituous liquor, etc. The better known word *pulque* (whence *pulquería*) is of uncertain origin and probably insular. The higher civilization of the Mexican plateau gave to Spanish a number of cultural terms, among which the most striking is *teocalli*, the name of the stepped pyramid temples where human sacrifices took place. Mexico was a great centre for commerce, whence the interest of such a loan-word as *tiangué* 'market-place' with its derivative *india tianguera* 'Indian market woman', and the associated *tameme* 'porter'. The large floating gardens on the central lakes were called *chinampas*, and the name was extended to the pile-villages found among them. The Indian barrack (*galpón*,

Nah. *calpulli*, in Nicaragua *galpon*), the native mat (*petate*, Nah. *petlatl*), the pestle and grindstone for Indian corn (*metlapil*, *metate*), were also first named in this region; and in *nagual* we have a rare instance of indebtedness in the intellectual sphere. Based on Nah. *naualli* 'witch', *nauallotl* 'the black art', the word names a man's *dæmon* or other self, through the proper control of which he is enabled to carry out feats of sorcery; whence German *Nagualismus*, to denote the superstition which connects the souls of men with certain beasts.

It is a tribute to the genius of Garcilaso de la Vega el Inca that Spain and the world have felt such keen interest in the social and political organization of ancient Peru. Without attaining the command of mathematics, architecture, hieroglyphic writing or other arts which was reached by the Mayas and Aztecs of Central America, the Inca despotism was free from the most revolting barbarities, especially from wholesale human sacrifice; and in other respects it was capable of presentation as a sort of primitive utopia, in which private property was rendered unnecessary through the wisdom of a paternal government. Such is the brilliant picture offered, in good faith at least, in Garcilaso's *Comentarios Reales*, and reproduced with reluctant reservations by Prescott. The system centred on the *Inca* or *Inga* (adj. *incásico*) and his *coya* 'queen'. The royal family descended from and worshipped the Sun, in whose honour were dedicated the vestal virgins called *mamacona* (the word is merely the plural 'women'). The traditions of the state were guarded by the sages or poets called *amautas*, and great posting-roads carried the Inca's orders from stage to stage (*tambo*) by his messengers (*chasqui*). The free people were organized in tribes (*ayllu*) under *curacas*, though this word is only used technically and yields in general use to the insular *cacique*. Military colonies (*mitimaes*) were employed to hold down and civilize subdued lands; those of the ruling class were worked by serfs (*yanaconas*). The characteristic Peruvian burial mound has given archæology the word *huaca*; and *chacra* *chácara* *charca*, etc.

serve to denote a cultivated place or a farm. Apart from this special vocabulary, Quechua has served to name the more important novelties in South American flora and fauna. The language had much intercourse with the so-called Aimará of the Colla tribes in Bolivia, and their respective shares in offering loan-words cannot be clearly distinguished (*chinchilla* is attributed specifically to Aimará). The official speech of the Inca empire was valid as far north as the Presidency of Quito, whence access was obtained into the inner parts of Colombia; and on the south it extended into the Atacama desert so as to reach the Araucanian tribes of Chile. In a south-easterly direction Quechua served as a second language for the inhabitants of north-western Argentina, at Tucumán, Salta, Jujuy, etc.; and these were among the earliest settlements in that republic. Hence the pervasive influence of Quechua words among those which Spanish owes to aboriginal tongues. They are at least universal in South America, while their Tupi-Guaraní rivals are strictly local. Hence the *pampa* is named from Quechua as much as the *puna* (Andean desert plateau) or the *pongo* (Andean river gorge); and the calabash (*mate*) from which Paraguay tea is drunk (Guar. *caá*) is used for the drink itself (*mate* or *yerba mate*). Quechua had the further advantage over its rival of the rivers that it contained little in its phonetics unsuited to Spanish taste. Among the principal animals named from this language are the *cóndor* *puma* *llama* *alpaca* *vicuña* *viscacha*, and among plants the invaluable *quina* and *coca*. It has supplied also the most general term for a native woman (*china*), a pet name for the baby (*guagua*), the name for jerked beef (*charqui*), and that for a native song (*yaraví*), as well as *guano* and *guaso* (the Chilean peon or *roto*).

The Tupi-Guaraní language occupied the great river-basins of South America where it has acquired an intertribal value. It has served to name the beasts and plants of Brazil, and has exerted an immense influence on Brazilian Portuguese. In the Spanish-speaking area, it is still the normal language of Paraguay, where the first settlements were made

by Cabeza de Vaca, Irala and others. These were frankly polygamous, and a large mixed population arose familiar with both tongues. It was from Asunción that Garay descended in 1580 to found Buenos Aires, and so to occupy eastern Argentina for Spain. The Charrúa Indians of this region, however, were intractable, and a truceless war ended in their entire destruction. The Araucanian tribes bestrode the Andes to the west. In this way the principal loan-words adopted in Argentina, like those of the river states, are of Guarani origin, though they take precedence after Quechua terms. They serve to name animals (*ái capibara coati tamanduá tucano paca ñandú tapir* or *tapireté jaguar* or *yaguareté agutí urubú* 'vulture', *urutau* a bird of night, *quincayú*, etc.) or plants (*mandioca tapioca ipecacuana ananas caá* 'Paraguay tea' *curare*). *Bagual* 'untamed horse', and *catinga* 'Brazilian scrub' complete the list of common words.

Other American languages have offered little to Spanish which has found general acceptance. Some specialized words have been adopted from the Chibchas of Colombia, and the Mapuche tongue of the Araucanian Indians has furnished a few supplementary terms, such as *gaucho* 'cowboy', *poncho* 'cloak-blanket', *maloca* or *malón* 'Indian raid'. The language does, of course, serve to name such articles in southern Chile as have not received names from Arawak, Nahuatl, Quechua or Guarani.

The above are a selection of the most generally acceptable words of Indian origin. How many are to be deemed 'Spanish' is a question that cannot be answered so long as Spanish dictionaries record admittedly so much less than even the Spanish of Spain. The Spanish of America undoubtedly makes use of more than are current in Europe, seeing it has more cause to name the objects peculiar to itself; but even in America there are considerable differences of usage which menace the continued existence of many such words. Arawak, Quechua and Nahuatl were propagated, along with the Lingoa Geral, by missionaries beyond the historic frontiers of these languages, making all their rivals

strictly local; but Mexico, Peru and the Plate region employ many terms from the local Indian tongues which might not be understood elsewhere. The vulture, for instance, is *zopilote* in Mexico, *zamuro* in Venezuela, *urubú* on the Plate, but *gallinazo* (regularly derived from *gallo*, *gallina*) in Colombia, and it is doubtful whether any of these can compete with Sp. *buitre* for general utility. Similarly *maíz* contends with Quechua *zara* and Tupi-Guaraní *abatí*, *canoa* with Tupí *ubá*, *bohío* with *oca*, etc. Anchored to things, such names perish with the thing, and are incapable of increase. Thus the word *tambo* or *tambillo* is used in the Argentine Republic for a dairy, but only one of a primitive sort; electric dairies have gone back to European sources for *lechería*. The growth of a town population unfamiliar with animals and plants threatens to restrict severely the circulation of their names, while favouring substitution where common forms are available.

On the other hand, the number and accuracy of these borrowings is remarkable. It is true that we have early complaints that the native tongues are misrepresented. There is a wide difference between *Ahuilzapan* and *Orizaba*; and the *Collas* have been miscalled by the name of a Quechua tribe, the *Aimará*. Words have undoubtedly been hispanized in their structure and by means of suffixes; but they nowhere become monstrously perverse like the English (and North American) *wigwam* *mugwump* *chipmunk*, etc., so as to leave their originals beyond possibility of identification. For this we have to thank several circumstances of the colonizing effort of Spain. Royal patronage caused governors like Fernández de Oviedo accurately to investigate the resources of their governments, and scholars like Peter Martyr to record the facts with all the philological science of the day. Missionaries like Las Casas learned and practised native languages to convert and protect the Indian tribes, and were not slow to offer linguistic as well as other criticisms of the civil officials. Soldiers, coming to fight and settle without their wives, mated with Indian women in open polygamy and produced bilingual

descendants, most notably in Portuguese territory; and while the supremacy of the whites was maintained, especially after the coming of European women, there was no colour bar comparable to that in English-speaking areas. Above all, in Spanish and Portuguese America as distinct from Canada and the United States, the Indian survived, and still speaks his ancestral languages in large communities where there is no more than an official recognition of Spanish and Portuguese.

#### AMERICAN INDIAN EVIDENCE FOR THE EVOLUTION OF SPANISH

An important service which is rendered to philology by the contact of Spanish with the various American languages is that of dating certain linguistic changes by comparative tests. It is clear that when the Spaniards entered Chile in the second third of the sixteenth century they still possessed an occlusive *b* derived from Lat. *p*. The Araucanian Indians possessed occlusives only of the voiceless series, and so rendered this occlusive by *p*, while the fricative *b* they rendered by the fricatives *f*, [ɸ] (bilabial voiceless fricative), *hu ghu* [w]: *napur capra etipu* or *irtipu* for *nabos cabra estribo*, but *huaca aghuas llahuy cahuallu* for *vaca habas llave caballo*. The latter is confirmed by the Nahuatl *cahuayo*. Similarly it is evident that the *s* brought by the conquerors was cacuminal, as in Castile, not dorsal as in Andalusia: Nah. *xenola* for *señora*, Map. *chumpiru* for *sombrero* and *chiñura* for *señora*. Both [ʃ] and [ç] are palatals. On the other hand, *g* and *z* were already identical before the conquest of Peru, and *x* and *j* had coalesced into *x* [ʃ]: Nah. *xalo* for *jarro*. The passage of this *x* [ʃ] to the modern *j* [χ] is seen in comparing Nah. *xalo* with the later loan-word *jáquima*. In Mapuche the former sound is rendered by a palatal *ch* [ç] as the nearest equivalent, the latter by a velar *k*: *ovicha* (also *ovisa ovida*) for *oveja*, *achur* for *ajos*, *chalma* for *enjalma* 'packsaddle', but *Koan* for *Juan*. Already in Nebrija's time *f* had become an aspirate with a

tendency to disappear: Map. *aghucas* or *ahuas* for *habas* FABAS. It remained only when supported by *u* or *r*; and in Spanish America, as in Andalusia, the aspirate has generally persisted.

### AMERICAN VARIATIONS ON STANDARD SPANISH

There is a perceptible difference between Spanish as spoken by a Spanish-American and that spoken by a European, just as there is with us always a consciousness of the difference between our English and that of the United States: but there is the same difficulty in defining this difference. It is more deeply rooted in popular sentiment than in scientific fact. The music-hall artist has less difficulty in reproducing the 'American accent', whether of North or of South America, than the philologist has in proving that the alleged 'accent' really exists. Two favourite assumptions of the popular mind have no right to exist: the notion of uniformity in America, and the comparison with the standard language in Europe. Standard Spanish (*español correcto*) is admittedly the language of a minority even in Spain—an influential, educated minority, speaking with intentional accuracy. The same persons speaking colloquially already diverge from the prescribed standard (e.g. by reducing *-ado* to *-ao* or *-au*, or omitting final *-d*), and they may even adopt vulgarisms for comic or sociable effects (e.g. the common *¿pa qué?* for *¿para qué?*). Even at that they use a language from which somewhat more than half their fellow-countrymen dissent. Apart from those whose native idiom is Leonese, Aragonese or Galician, there are the seven or eight millions who speak Castilian in its Southern forms. The pronunciation of *c z* as *s* and of *ll* as *y* is that of the majority of persons in the Spanish Peninsula, and the former is allowed to be correct by force of numbers. When, therefore, Spanish spoken by an American is compared with Spanish as a whole, it is found to be in constant agreement with the practices of the Peninsula. Compared

with this measure of agreement, which amounts almost to identity if we allow vulgarisms to enter into the count, the want of uniformity in America itself becomes the more evident. The Peruvian or Colombian stands closer to Spanish, and even to *español correcto*, than the Argentine or Chilean; the language of the latter varies considerably with his status and his intention at the moment. When he seeks to address a wide audience he adopts, at least in writing, a language scarcely distinguishable from the standard. There is, perhaps, this difference: *español correcto* is the actual spoken tongue of a select minority of European Spaniards, but it cannot be used by a Spanish-American without a sense of diverging from the colloquial. It is for him an acquired idiom; and for that reason, no doubt, the great preceptors of Spanish idiom have been Spanish-Americans: Bello, Baralt, Caro, Cuervo.

It is not just, either, to estimate Spanish-American by its differences from that of Spain. The Spanish language is greater than the language of Spain; every word and phrase used by the Spanish-American comes to him by birthright and is therefore part of the Spanish of America. The imperfections and exclusiveness of the dictionaries, which represent mainly the usage of men of letters in Europe, have given an impression that the Spanish language is very much poorer than it really is. They lack thousands of words of good pedigree current in Spanish America; but they also lack thousands in Spain. The 'language of Cervantes' belongs as much to the American as to the Spaniard; upon it as a foundation each has built up the modern language, generally on the same plan, and all the legitimate varieties of this speech are Spanish. As, however, we have already considered the evolution of the modern tongue with special reference to Europe, we shall look at the American variants for the sake of their divergence, but always with the proviso that such an examination is partial.

'Spanish-American' is not the name of a dialect or language, nor even of a group of dialects or languages; but it is

an abstract term covering miscellaneous tendencies exemplified in America, in a few of which there is general agreement in all parts of the Continent, and also, to some extent, in Spain. Characteristic of these are the *seseo* and *yeísmo* already referred to, which are almost universal in America as well as widespread in Spain. But the term also covers tendencies which have slight expansion in the Americas, such as borrowings from local Indian tongues or the special jargon of the Buenos Aires docks, *lunfardo*, or of Chilean peons. All these tendencies, however, fall within a strictly defined space: they are all forms of the Castilian pattern of Spanish, and do not show the more fundamental divergence of Leonese, the Asturian dialects or Aragonese. The presence of Peninsular dialectalisms is rarely indicated: such as a preference for the Catalan and Aragonese *pesebre* 'manger' over the Castilian *belén* 'Bethlehem' for the representation of the Nativity, or the Galician *saraviado* for Castilian *pintado* 'gaily-coloured' (of birds). The numerous Basque and Galician immigrants of the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries have not implanted their languages at all, but have gone to strengthen the demand for a Castilian *koiné*. Furthermore, the Castilian basis is more modern than that which serves for Jewish Spanish in the Balkans and Africa. The conquerors already brought with them some of the great sixteenth-century sound-shifts. As we have seen *ç z* have become one sound, which has generally given the modern *s*, and *x* and *j* have come together as *x* [š]. The first poetry written in the New World still followed medieval formulas, and knew nothing of Italian prosody; but the Spanish colonies felt the whole force of the great literary age of Spain, to which they contributed many of the glories. In common with its mother-tongue it has experienced enrichment of vocabulary and phrase, where Balkan-Spanish knows only impoverishment. And just as words and works crossed the Atlantic, so did speech-tendencies, particularly those which originated in southern Spain. The cacuminal *s* of the conquerors has become the dorsoalveolar current in America and Andalusia;

their *ll* has passed generally into *y*; *x* has been thrust back in the mouth from palatal [ʃ] to velar [χ], with a preference for the spelling *j*, which Bello made unique in Chile while Spain still allows *g* before *e i*; and the Academy's reintroduction of the Latin value for *x* [ks] has passed on to America, and gives rise to confusion where *x* had still survived in the orthography, e.g. *México*, Sp. *Méjico*. It is within these strict limits of a relatively modern stage of standard Spanish that all American variations occur.

A tempting hypothesis is that which would attribute the American variations to the influence of the Indian substratum or substrata. Knowledge of these languages is so rare among Romance philologists that one evident crux of the substratum-theory is not always realized, namely that the American Indian languages have nothing in common and so do not provide the fairly uniform substratum which might account for the fairly uniform features of American varieties of Spanish. We should expect wide divergences, where only slight ones are found. We should also expect to see reproduced some of the native habits of thought: some incorporation, some development of agglutinative suffixes, some peculiar phonemes. Actually nothing of the kind occurs; all variations are such as the Spanish language spontaneously offers of itself. The invariable penultimate accent of Quechua may have aided in producing the sing-song accent of Andine Spanish, but only because it agrees with the normally penultimate accent of Spanish. The oxytone vowels of Tupi-Guaraní (*yaguaré tamanduá urutauá*, etc.) resemble the accent already adopted from Arabic in the suffix *-i*. It is possible that this Guarani habit is recognizable in the Argentine fondness for accenting certain enclitics (*vamóns digaló*), but only because such enclitics bear a secondary accent in Spanish itself, and the conversion to principal had already taken place sporadically, especially in verse. In supplying the names of things (especially animals and plants), the Indian tongues have affected Spanish only in the same manner, though in a more intense degree, as they have

affected French, English or German; and such loans are accepted only on the borrower's terms. A word like *mbaracayá* 'ocelot', with its un-Spanish initial *mb*-, reported for Argentina, should be accounted a foreign term existing on sufferance; and the same is doubtless true of a great part of the unfamiliar Indian vocabulary. This element is in full retreat and cannot now look for reinforcements.

There has been no want of experiments in mixing Spanish with American languages. A hybrid jargon was required by Spanish captains of Aztek or Zapotek troops, and consisted of Spanish into which were thrust, as occasion required, native key-words; by these and the intonation the speaker conveyed his intention, but his grammatical framework (used for his own satisfaction as a speaker) remained Spanish. It was a mere substitution of terms, and essentially unstable. The intruding Indianisms could not pass on to the general speech of Spanish residents in Mexico, and were removed wherever the Spanish term had been learned by the natives. Of this nature are the hybrid Spanish-Quechua phrases used by Lugones or Rojas to indicate half-Indian communities in the western Pampa: *Dios yaya*, *Dios churi* 'God the Father, God the Son', a mere substitution for *Dios padre, Dios hijo*.

The classical investigation of this point was that of Lenz, who studied the language of the peons (*huasos, guasos*) of southern Chile together with the Mapuche language of the Araucanian Indians. It is the only case in which a complete knowledge of the two languages has gone together with philological skill. Lenz held, as a result of his investigation, that the substratum theory was proved for south Chile, in the sense that the speech of the *huasos* was Spanish modified by Mapuche; but later students have not accepted this interpretation of his results. The Mapuche vowels are *a e i o u* and *u*. The last-named, an unrounded *u*, does not pass into the language of the *huasos*, nor still less into general Chilean; and from the others all that results is vacillation as to the value of narrow vowels, such as occurs spontaneously also in Spain. Among the consonants there is a high palatal *t* [t̪]

which resembles the *tr* in 'try'. It occurs in the Chilean pronunciation of words like *otro*; but the cause is not that alleged by Lenz. In contrast with the standard tense vibrant *r rr* of Spanish, there is throughout all America a sporadic relaxed fricative [ɹ ɹ], like the English *r*, in which the tip of the tongue reaches up to the high palate. This palatal relaxed fricative palatalizes the preceding *t*, from New Mexico downwards, and also in Spanish Navarre, La Rioja and elsewhere. A voiceless labial fricative [ɸ] exists in Mapuche, in Chilean Spanish, but also very widely in all Andalusian and American variants of the language; it should not be attributed to an Araucanian substratum. There is a lateral palatal *ll* in Mapuche and in the districts of Llanquihué and Chiloé, whereas central Chile uses *y*. Here the local speech-habit may have had force enough to retain in use a Spanish sound which was liable to undergo change. The same subaltern rôle may have been played by Quechua in preserving *ll* in the Peruvian highlands; but at Atotonilco in Mexico *ll* has survived where the native tongue has no such sound, but only a lengthened *l* (as in Italian) and a click *tl*. The original list of Mapuche loan-words in Chilean Spanish included many that were Quechua in origin and international in range; Lenz's revised list is still long, but contains few words whose patent of nationalization is clear.

The comparison between the Mapuche language of the Araucanian Indians and the Spanish of their descendants, the *huasos* of southern Chile, is not valid as a basis for describing Chilean Spanish. The latter is necessarily the language of the capital, and even, in a special degree, of educated society in Santiago and Valparaíso, whereas the dialect of the *huasos* may be no more than a stage in the process of acquiring Chilean Spanish. The same difficulty has beset other investigations into popular variants of Spanish in America, such as the dialect of Mexico City or the language of Argentine *gaucho* poetry. The language of the populace offers the greatest degree of divergence from *español correcto*, indeed, but that is not uniquely an American phenomenon.

An investigation of Madrid dialects based on the language of the southern wards or on the playlets of Don Ricardo de la Vega would show equally wide divergences from the standard language, and in most instances there would be striking coincidences of idiom. Various dictionaries of 'Argentinisms', 'Cubanisms', etc., bring to light an array of archaisms, vulgarisms, new words or new senses, and foreign words (Indian or French or English), of which few are strictly local, and most would be rejected with distaste by educated speakers and still more so by writers. They are parts of a fluid and unstable vocabulary which has still to be standardized; but where standardization has been attempted on American soil, its pattern is scarcely different from that of *español correcto*. The various Spanish American countries can only agree on a basis of their common inheritance, the language of Spain, under the ægis of a common literary tradition; variants from the model must be scrutinized, and allowed only when justified by necessity or some forgotten tradition. It was in this sense that the Colombian classicists laboured: Miguel Antonio Caro as head of the school, and Rufino José Cuervo as its mouthpiece. Even the advent of 'Modernism', a movement which took novelty for a virtue, left Colombian Spanish strictly 'correct' in the work of Silva and Valencia. Similarly Montalvo in Ecuador provided patterns of Spanish more 'correct' than that of Spain; and in Chile Bello's famous grammar is a powerful instrument for disciplining speech. In fifty years, it is recorded, this text-book has stamped out in Chile the misuse of the familiar second person which some Argentine writers hold to be ineradicable from their tongue. There are thus powerful tendencies which favour the reunification of the whole Spanish language on its old European basis. Communications between Europe and America, and still more between different parts of America, are becoming ever more speedy. Airways and the motor-car will complete the work of the steamship and train by eradicating local obstacles to mutual comprehension; and a transient attitude on the part

of the Spanish Academy, by offering a ready acknowledgement of established usages, may suffice to knit up again the ravelled sleeve of the language. Undoubtedly the various 'Argentinisms', 'Chilenisms', etc. offer the possibilities of change should they be adopted as standards of the language. Either, therefore, Spanish will emerge as one language, richer and more varied than it is yet admitted to be, or a series of national landslides will break up its cohesion. What will not occur is that process of gentle and unperceived drift away from the common inheritance which is presumed, in theory, to have been the history of Romance.

The claims of nationalism have already been raised, notably in the Argentine. American things require American names; American ideas require American moulds. Attempts to express this sense of nationality in writing have, however, not given an American, but rather a technical, language. This is true of Gregorio Gutiérrez's famous poem on the cultivation of maize in the valley of Antioquía, which requires a glossary even for a Colombian. The famous verse of Guido Spano:

¡ Llora, llora, *urutau*,  
en las ramas del *yatay*;  
ya no existe el Paraguay,  
donde nací como tú!  
¡ Llora, llora, *urutau*!

is an example of technical indianism, appropriate to a Paraguayan maiden lamenting the ruin of her country *en idioma guarani*. José Hernández's *Martín Fierro*, the most celebrated of the *gaucho* poems, uses a language deliberately plebeian, the appeal of which is based on its contrast with the language of readers in the capital. It could not serve as the foundation of an Argentine national speech, not merely because it would have to be artificially acquired by most educated Argentines, but also because it is bound up with the peculiar circumstances of cowboy life on the great Pampas, which has already vanished in its traditional form. The claims of Argentine Spanish were first raised by the distinguished statesman Domingo Faustino Sarmiento during his exile in

Chile. He came into conflict there with Bello's reforms, characterized by their respect for the traditional inheritance, though Bello himself had provided excellent models of a poetry true to American experience. Sarmiento, devoid of any formal education but possessed of a racy intelligence, insisted that new experience required new language; and in this he was supported by the thinker Alberdi. The proposition was evidently true. It was developed by J. M. Gutiérrez, whose studies in Argentine literary history led to the belief in an Argentine language. But of what did this language consist? An attempt at definition was made by Lucien Abeille in 1900, calling attention to divergences from the Castilian standard. His book, instead of codifying the *idioma nacional*, produced a violent reaction. The divergences from Castilian were also lapses in taste, and Buenos Aires was horrified to find itself identified with the jargon of its docks. Critics were not slow to point out Abeille's ignorance both of good Argentine and of linguistic science; Paul Groussac and Ernesto Quesada preached a return to standard Spanish as a national duty. The present tendency is thus strongly in favour of reunion, and may triumph. The Argentine abroad is, however, conscious of a gap between his speech-habits and those which are proposed to him as patterns; he is wont to apologize for his pronunciation or idiom, and if he stays away for years, he has an uneasy feeling that a tide of new colloquialisms has overflowed the language he knew. The state of Spanish in the Argentine is fluid.

On the surface all the Spanish of America is characterized by its andalusianism. The *seseo* and *yeísmo*, the persistence of *h* as a weak aspirate (though written *j*) and the aspiration or disappearance of *s* at the end of syllables, are features so convincing that 'the Spanish ear may confuse a Spanish-American with a native of Extremadura or an Andalusian, but not with an Asturian, Castilian or Aragonese', and 'the conversation of educated persons in Spanish America is, in its salient aspects, a cultured Andalusian, mixed with an occasional vulgarity'. How does this arise? The cause must

be sought in the epoch of first settlement, since the later immigration from northern Spain (Basque and Galician in the main) has not imposed northern varieties of Spanish on the American republics: the immigrants have been assimilated to the language of their new abode. The conquest was carried out from southern Spain. Cortés and Pizarro were from Extremadura; Sevilla was the sole centre of colonial administration and trade; the sailors of Columbus' ships were recruited from Palos, etc. Various efforts have been made to determine statistically the provenance of the settlers. Those based on chronicles and chronicle-poems give a high percentage of Andalusians and Extremeñans. Barros Arana stated that almost all the sixteenth and seventeenth-century colonists of Chile were Extremeñans; but Thayer Ojeda reduced the Andalusian percentage to 35, as against 40 from the Castiles and León. Even adding Middle Spain to the South, there would only be a superiority of 1.6 p.c. For the Argentine, Miguel de Toro gives 60 Andalusians and 20 Extremeñans among the primitive nucleus of 124 settlers in the Plate region. On the other hand, elaborate computations by Henríquez Ureña on the basis of sailing-lists allow only the smallest margin of superiority to southern Spain, even when the borders of the latter are advanced far to the north. Of colonists addicted to the *seseo* there would be an actual minority in America. It is not certain whether the count should be one of heads or of influential persons. The habits of outstanding men are liable to be admired and reproduced, especially in circumstances that favour personal display of heroism. The Conquest was a warlike achievement, and in war men cultivate a swagger in language as in walk. The use of pieces of nautical slang (*amarra* 'to tie', from 'to moor', *flete* 'horse', etc.) are not attributable to the number of sailor-colonists, but to slang adopted by landsmen who had had cause to admire sailors. A 'rough and ready' pose among the settlers doubtless accounts for the vulgarisms current in American Spanish.

Whatever be the true interpretation of these early statistics,

nothing is gained by denying the self-evident similarity between American-Spanish and the language of Andalusia; but this similarity is crossed by other lines of demarcation. There is a vast difference between the language of American highlands—the Mexican plateau, Bogotá and Popayán, Quito, the plateaux of Bolivia and Peru—and that of the lowlands—Chile, Argentina, Uruguay, the Mexican coast, etc. It is in the latter that American 'andalusianism' is most pronounced, in accumulated details of conflict with Castilian. A climatic theory has been suggested to explain this division, but, though attractive, it is incapable of proof. The high ground in the Tropics reproduced conditions more congenial to European settlers, and especially to those already habituated to the Castilian Meseta; but we have no data to suggest that colonists showed regional preferences in the New World. It was the high ground also that was first occupied by the conquerors, and from thence ran out the tentacles of government. Further these regions include some of the most important Indian masses, including some 4,500,000 in Mexico and 3,500,000 in Peru and Bolivia, whereas the Charrías of the Plate were exterminated and the Araucanians of Chile driven south by incessant wars. The presence of alien masses made Spanish aristocratic and governmental, whereas that of the Argentine and Chile adopted democratic norms. In Colombia isolation has produced some tight aristocratic nuclei, which probably account for the hold of classical Spanish on that region; and Mexico City and Lima undoubtedly transmitted the influence of the Spanish capital during the whole colonial epoch, while the Chilean *pueblos* and Argentine ranches lay on the periphery of culture. Thus very varied influences have been at work to ensure that the Spanish of America, within its indubitable andalusianism, conforms to no single pattern.

## DETAILS OF THE SPANISH OF AMERICA

The following are among the peculiarities which have been reported with regard to the Spanish of America. They are neither exclusively nor universally American:

*Phonetics and Phonology.* The two leading characteristics of American Spanish are *seseo* and *yeísmo*. By *seseo* we mean the confusion of *g z s* into one sound [s]. It occurs universally in America, with the exception, perhaps, of some Indians in Peru who generalize the pronunciation [θ]. In southern Spain the *seseo* is general, but it runs parallel with the opposite fault, the lisp or *ceceo*. *Yeísmo*, the pronunciation of *ll* as *y*, is not quite so widely spread in America. The district of Atotonilco in Mexico conserves the original sound, which is also found on the high plateau in Colombia, in Peru, in northern and southern Chile, and in the Argentine province of Corrientes. In some cases the existence in Quechua and Mapuche of *ll* may have helped to preserve the Spanish sound. It was undoubtedly brought to America by the conquerors as their normal pronunciation, but was probably accompanied by *y*, which is reported as early as Mozarabic times, and has to be assumed as a stage of the development of *c' l* > OCast. *j* [ž]. This further stage has been reached in the Argentine, where *ll* has passed to *y* (province of Cuyo, Córdoba, etc.), and thence to [ž j] (Buenos Aires and generally). As the final state corresponds to the Italian *g* it may be represented conventionally as transforming *Calle Cuyo* into *Cage Cugio*. The result of these two changes is to reduce four Spanish sounds represented by five letters (*c z s; ll y*) to two in America, and thus to make a permanent rift between speech and spelling. Hence come many orthographical errors by ultracorrection, such as '*Popallán*' for *Popayán*, '*Guallaquil*' (in old documents) for *Guayaquil*, and even '*enzallando*' for *ensayando*.

The *s* brought to America was undoubtedly a cacuminal voiceless sibilant [š], which is attested by Nahuatl and Mapuche borrowings at each end of the area (Nah. *xenola*

Sp. *señora*, Map. *chumpiru* Sp. *sombrero*). This consonant was readily confused, even by Spanish speakers, with kindred palatals, and notably with *j* [ž]. Hence Sp. *tijeras* and *tiseras* 'scissors' Lat. TONSORIA (FERRAMENTA); and this process is carried further in the vulgarisms found in America of the type *frijoles* for *frisoles* 'kidney-beans'. Conversely, there are cases of *s* for *j*, as *relós* (as well as *reló*) for *reloj* 'watch', *almofrés* for *almofrej* 'mattress-bag'. But the *s* now reported as normal in America, as in Andalusia, is the dorsoalveolar *s* pronounced with the tip of the tongue resting on the lower teeth and not raised toward the palate; and it is this lowering of the tip which makes possible the fusion of *s* with *c z*, for which also the tip of the tongue rests near the lower teeth. At the end of a syllable final *-s* passes very commonly to a weak aspirate *h*, which becomes slightly voiced before a voiced consonant, and may finally disappear. It is represented conventionally by *h* or *j*: *no maj, ma (más), vamoh a quejar, loh enamorao (los enamorados)*, Chilean *le tréyamoh papah, señorita (le traíamos papas* 'we should like to bring you potatoes'). The retention of *-s* characterizes the Spanish of the American plateaux in Mexico, Colombia and Peru, whereas it has become an aspirate on the coasts of these countries and in Chile and the Argentine. When it disappears, it is not even represented by hiatus in *está escribiendo* (for *estás*), and leads to contractions like Chilean *ontá mi tío (donde está mi tío)* 'at my uncle's house'. In this connection we note instances of confusion wrought by the reintroduction of the value [ks] for *x*, for words containing this Latin value of *x* have been misconstrued as if it were the vernacular *x* [š], the source of the modern *j*: hence *plejo* 'plexus', *ortodoxo* 'orthodox', *jilogía* 'xylology'.

The Latin *f* had been universally replaced by Cast. *h* (aspirated) at the time of the Conquest, as witnessed by Nebrija's grammar. This aspirate has remained a characteristic of American Spanish as of Andalusian, whereas *español correcto* has lost the sound. It is conventionally represented by *j*, but is not a rasped velar [χ]. Hence *jarto* Sp. *harto*

FARTU 'stuffed, sufficient', *jijo* Sp. *hijo* FILIU 'son'. But this aspirate occurs even in connection with *r* and *u* (as in *ojrecer ajuera* for *ofrecer afuera*), and where there was never an *f* (*jirme* for *irme*), and where the word is a recent latinism in Spanish (*jácil* for *fácil*).

Certain interchanges and omissions of consonants also occur very generally in America, southern Spain and among speakers of the lower classes in Madrid. The equation *gue* = [we] *hue* = *gue* gives *huevo* = *guevo* = *huevo* 'egg', *guele* = *huele* 'it smells', whence *goler* 'to smell' for *oler*. The consonants *l r d* belong to the dento-alveolar region, and are vulgarly interchanged: *repué* for *después*, *ran* for *dan*, *rise* for *dice*, *eturio* for *estudio*, *culandlero* for *curandero* 'quack', *candidato* for *candidato*, *ardil* for *ardid* 'stratagem', etc. Between vowels *-d-* *-g-* *-r-* tend to be lost: *ehpeasa* for *despedaza* 'smashes', *hería* for *herida* 'wound', *maja* for *migaja* 'crumb', *pa* for *para* and *pal* for *para el*, *pasque* or *paez que* for *parece que* 'it seems', *señá* for *señora*; and final *-r* is lost in *señó*, etc. Initial *d-* is sometimes lost by confusion of the prefixes *des-* and *es-*, sometimes through its occurring within the breath-group between vowels: *ehpeasa* for *despedaza*, *etráh* for *detrás* 'behind', and *ilaten* for *dilaten*. A characteristic case for its loss through syntax is *sombrero e paja* for *sombrero de paja* 'straw hat'.

In respect of accentuation the reduction of vowels in hiatus is characteristic of Spanish in America, and no more than a prolongation of a general Romance tendency: *páis bául atáud* for *páis baúl ataúd* 'country' 'box' 'coffin'. There is vulgarly (and even in academic Spanish) some hesitation as to the accentuation of Greek words in *-ía -ia*, as *academia*, and learned words form false trisyllabic endings, as *méndigo intérvalo* for *mendigo intervalo*. The accentuation of enclitics is notable in the Spanish of the Argentine: *vamóns*, *dijolé*.

*Morphology and Syntax.* The declension of nouns is so simple in Spanish that few errors are possible. Double plurals occur vulgarly: *pieses* for *pies* 'feet', *ajises* for *ajíes* 'peppers'; or are applied to words incapable of a plural: *tomo mis onces* 'I am taking my eleven o'clock (refection')', *exclusives* and *inclusives*

(adverbs). The ideas underlying grammatical gender are confused, and American Spanish has taken advantage of variation of gender to create useful new words: from *cabra* 'nanny-goat' it has made *cabro* Sp. *cabrón*, from *oveja* 'sheep' *ovejo* Sp. *carnero*, from *testigo reo* 'witness' 'criminal' *testiga rea*, from *tigre tigra* (which is also Old Spanish), *serviciala*, *seglara*, etc. The feminine suggests smaller size or rounder shape, though these notions may lead to contradictory results. The *lora* is not only rounder, but bigger, than the *loro*. *La maunifica* for *el Magnificat* is a popular development in Bogotá.

The pronouns have suffered some modification. Owing to *me*, *nos* frequently becomes *mos* and *nosotros mosotros*. In New Mexico a further confusion gives rise to *lohotroh*, as *la casa de lohotroh* 'our house'. The reflexive *se* tends to become an impersonal pronoun (*cuando se es poeta* for *uno es*), and to be used in place of the other reflexives; while the dative *le* is made use of for vague reference in *le dice adiós a las garzas que pasan* (for *les*) 'he says adieu to the passing herons'. The relative adjective *cuyo* tends to disappear, partly under French influence. Pronouns of courtesy have suffered considerable changes. The apologetic avoidance of the first person leads to some absurdities such as that of the senator mentioned by Cuervo who said in his oration *el infrascrito dice* 'the undersigned (!) says'. The familiar second person *tú* has been lost and *vos* is the nominative singular, but the accusative and dative are *te*; the plural, even familiarly, is *ustedes*. In the verb the singular *-as -es -es* and *-a -e* (imperative) have been confused with the plurals *-ás -és* (alternatives for *-áis -éis*) *-ís* and *-á* (for *-ad*) *-é -i*. Thus we get *Dios te bendecirá y serán felices* 'God will bless you (fam. sing.) and you (fam. plur.) will be happy', *ofrecerles un porvenir a vos y a tu hijo* 'offer you and your son a future', *váyanse* 'get out' (to dogs), etc., *sentáte* 'sit down'. This confusion is believed ineradicable in the Argentine, but has been cleared up in Chile by fifty years' use of Bello's grammar. In Uruguay, thanks to the proximity of Brazil, there is a tendency to consider *usted* too familiar, and to substitute a noun, e.g. *el señor doctor viene*

'you come'. Among other curious uses of the pronoun is the misplaced verbal plural sign in *hágamen* for *háganme*, *siéntensen* for *siéntense*; the order *me se, te se*, for *se me, se te*; *lo que* used as a temporal conjunction, and *lo* before a personal name in the sense of 'at the house of'.

The verb presents numerous irregularities. Verbs which develop diphthongs under the accent (*forzar fuerzo*) may be left monophthongs, and others develop diphthongs (*yo no forzo a nadie* for *fuerzo*), while the passage from *-y-* to *-ig-* in Sp. *caiga* is extended to *haiga leiga (lea) huiga creiga*, etc. The preterite *amasteis* becomes *amaisteis* thanks to *amáis*, and *andar* gives *andáramos* for *anduviéramos*. The synthetic future tense is attacked by the periphrasis of the immediate future, and in the Argentine there is a tendency to treat this as a national shibboleth (like the pronunciation [j] of *ll*). So *daré* is threatened by *voy a dar*; and at the same time *va a llover* tends to be replaced in Bogotá by *va y llueve*, while in the continuous present there is a curious pleonastic use of *ir* in *voy ir cogiendo = voy cogiendo* 'I am gathering'. The subjunctive mood is unstable. The future in *-re* gives way to a present indicative or subjunctive according to circumstances in colloquial Spanish, but has left traces of itself in wrong uses of *-se* like *si ella obedeciese al entusiasmo que hoy domina la nación, no hay duda que decretará la República* 'if the Republic obeys the enthusiasm now dominating the nation, it will undoubtedly decree...'. The past subjunctive *-se* is less used than its rival *-ra*. The imperative is conjugated on the model *ama amá* or only *amá*; and the gerund develops, probably thanks to French, false participial uses: *la ley concediendo* (for *que concede*), *la tienda está bajando la plaza (debajo de la plaza)*. In equipping impersonal verbs with plurals (*hubieron temores de guerra* 'there were fears of war') vulgar Spanish has 'construed according to the sense' in the same fashion as standard English, with its 'there is, there are'. In *hubimos muchos heridos* 'there were many of us wounded', this impersonal *hubieron* has been crossed by the personal *tuvimos* or rather by *estuvimos*.

Under French influence there is a strong tendency to ask questions by means of the formula *es...que*, which allows the question to keep the affirmative order, and to use the same device for making emphatic assertions: *fué en el siglo XV que se descubrió América* = *descubrióse América en el siglo XV*. When introducing a sentence, *es que* means 'the fact is that' (*ello es que*); confused with *diz que* 'it is said that', this results in *i que*, introducing an anecdote. Strange ellipses have given rise to *yo fuí fué mar* or *lo soy es Pérez* or *lo hablaba era usted* 'what I was like was the sea' 'as for me I am Pérez' 'what we were discussing was you'.

Various particles have developed original uses in the New World: *cada nada recién hasta entre donde*. *Cada nada* means 'every trifle', whence *hasta cada rato* 'in a little time'; *él no viene nada* Fr. *il ne vient point*. *Recién* is found as an adverb in Spanish in *recién casados* 'newly wed', standing before an adjective or participle, but otherwise *recientemente* is required. Not so in America, where phrases like *recién que llegó* 'as soon as he arrived' correspond with Sp. *apenas, no bien*. *Hasta* implies the negative in *hasta ayer comencé a trabajar* 'I did not begin work until yesterday'; and *entre más* has the sense of *mientras más* in *entre más bebe más sed le da* 'the more he drinks the thirstier he gets'. *Donde* in Chile has the sense of 'at the house of' in *donde mi tío* 'at my uncle's'; with *está* it gives *ontá*, with a past tense *ontava*.

*Vocabulary.* By far the most important and constant differences between the speech of a Spaniard and a Spanish-American occur in the realm of vocabulary. The latter is compelled to name things which are outside the European's experience or which differ in some particular. For this task he makes use of the large vocabulary of native Indian terms which have been partially digested by the language as a whole. These have already been discussed; but they are by no means the only source of new terms. Not infrequently some slight similarity caused the colonists to give a Spanish name to a new bird or plant, with the result that *gallinaza* *gorrión jilguero nispero piña ciruela madroño* and other terms have

quite different meanings in Spain and in America. In this way the wintry season, which is not only cold but rainy in Europe, gives the name for the rainy season (*invierno*), even if this occur in summer. Diminutives have offered a way of multiplying names, with the result that the stock of affective diminutives has been seriously depleted in America.

There is only the slightest dialectal trace in American Spanish, apart from dialects of Castilian such as Extremoñan and Andalusian. There are, however, numerous archaisms: *entrar a* (MSp. *en*), *es muerto*, *es nacido* (MSp. *ha muerto*, *nacido*), *truje* (MSp. *traje*), *vido* (MSp. *vió*), *pararse* 'get up' (MSp. *levantarse*) as in *párese y camine* which is a plain contradiction in Europe, *dende* as well as *desde*, *topar* (*encontrar*), *mercar*, *duce* (*dulce*), *recordar* 'awake'. With *entierro* 'treasure' (MSp. 'burial') we have not only an archaic survival of the days before banking, when treasure was regularly buried, but also a reminiscence of the customs of the conquest, of which *desecho* *desecha* 'track' is another. On meeting a promising track the explorers must frequently have said *echemos por aquí* 'let's take this one', and when it petered out they would use the verb *desechar*. Thanks to *caminos pasos atajos* the noun became in Colombia *desecho*; but also *desecha* on account of *senda vereda trocha*. As settlers were carried by long sea-voyages, they picked up the slang of sailors: whence *amarra* 'tie' in *amarra una corbata* (properly 'moor'), *flete* 'horse', *caramanchel* 'hut' ('hatchway'), *trincar* 'to pin anyone down' 'seize', *vientos* 'strings connecting a kite with its cord' ('guys, braces'), etc. Ruts are *canjilones*, as resembling the crinkles of the sixteenth-century ruffs. The special concern of the colonists with cattle-raising has given rise to complex colour-spectra, varying in different parts of America, and serving to distinguish primarily horses, but also cows: *cisne moro*, etc.

There has been necessarily much independent semantic development, and the formation of new words. *Irreverencia* is the model serving to give *irrespeto*; *una contradicción*, *un contrasentido* causes *una contracaridad* 'an uncharitable act'; *sangrigero* *sangripesado* are a new pair signifying 'agreeable' 'dis-

agreeable'. The transference of *páramo* from the Castilian Meseta to the Andine plateaux is natural. The latter are accursed with snow and rain, so that *páramo* acquires the sense 'drizzle' (*llovizna*), whence *paramar* 'to drizzle' and *emparamarse* 'to chitter with cold' (*arrecirse*). The volcano not only belches out fire but overturns everything, whence *volcar* > *desvolcanarse*; *temperar* acquires easily the sense of to enjoy a change of air (*mudar aires*); *olear* 'to use (holy) oil' means in Spain 'to administer the supreme unction', in America 'to baptize', while *santolio* is 'extreme unction'. In the case of *barranca* and its congeners, what is a ravine to one looking down is a cliff to one looking up, as it was in Cervantes' *despeñar a uno de una barranca* 'to throw someone down from a cliff' (MSp. *en una barranca* 'into a gully'). *Montaña* and *monte* refer not only to the hills, but also the scrub on them; in Chile the mountain is *cerro*.

The application of *niño* *niña* *ña* to grown up persons is an extension of the language of the nursery by faithful retainers. As the distinction between *c s* has been lost *cocinar* 'to cook' has been created to avoid the homonymy *cocer* 'cook' *coser* 'sew', *ceba* 'fodder' against *cebo* 'fodder' *sebo* 'tallow', *cacería* 'chase' against *caza* 'hunt' *casa* 'house'. Admirable metaphors have been drawn from novel circumstances: as *echar pólvora en gallinazos* 'to waste effort', *a la pampa* 'in the open air', *ver gatos ensillados* 'to see stars', *achicar a uno* 'to kill anyone' (to make him cower into a small space and then to despatch him), *machetejar* 'to persevere' by hacking one's way through obstacles with a bowie-knife (Sp. *porfiar*). Popular etymology gives *vagamundo* as well as *vagabundo* (common also in Spain), and *arremueco* beside *arrumaco* 'caress' (*mueca* 'grimace'). *Comendante* comes from *comandante* and *comendar*. The prefixes *des-* and *es-* are liable to confusion in all vulgar Spanish; the suffixes *-ear* and *-ecer* are used without discrimination (*florear* *florecer*), and *-ear* merges into *-iar* by the same process of phonetic reduction which makes *pior* out of *peor*.

*The influence of 'Modernism'.* The basic principle of R. J.

Cuervo's *Apuntaciones sobre el lenguaje bogotano*, which remains our best general introduction to American variants of Spanish, was a conservative one: he would admit what was justified either by reliable tradition or by imminent need, but he sought to eliminate useless and slovenly departures from the common Spanish inheritance. This was the position maintained by the great literary preceptor Miguel A. Caro, who was pleased to think of Bogotá as 'the Athens of America', the seat of classical elegance. The 'Modernists' (members of a movement that had its apogee between 1896-1916), and to some extent their successors, have considered innovation a virtue: they seek novelty not from need, but as a mark of refinement. Possessed of a really great poet in Rubén Darío and other lesser lights, the 'Modernists' could not but exercise an influence on the language in a sense opposed to that of Cuervo. The colloquial language, however, they have probably left unaffected; and little change has occurred in prose apart from that small fragment which claims to be artistic. Most of their influence has fallen on the language of poetry, which they have substantially altered, for the better in most respects. The long straggling sentence has been broken up; attention has been called to rhythm even in prose, and to trisyllabic rhythms long neglected by verse; the wearily paired adjectives of classicism have departed. Preaching 'the rare' as a virtue, they employed a vocabulary drenched with exotic words, pseudo-Greek via Paris or pseudo-oriental, sometimes without any etymological sense. Hence *bulbul ronronear bandó palimpsesto* (= *literatura!*). The trisyllabic ending again appeared peculiarly poetical to Darío as to the contemporaries of Góngora:

que *púberes canéforas* te ofrenden el acanto;

and pseudo-Greek suffixes gave an easy crop of '-ists' and '-isms': *verleniano* 'in the manner of Verlaine', *poeniano* 'in Poe's style', *mirllesco*, *prerrafaelista*, *neoyorkino*, *hamlético*. The last word exemplifies the artificial and literary basis of this vocabulary, and the last but one the fact that little trouble

was taken over words which no one expected to survive the immediate occasion. This vocabulary has to be sifted, and not much will remain. Those with the best prospects are refurbished archaisms taken from Old Spanish. The exotic, indeed, was at once challenged by the doctrine of 'Americanism' which demands that American literature and language should fit the facts of American life. To do so it will eschew the exotic, and it will probably draw fewer cheques on the moribund Indian bank than on the circulating currency of racy colloquialisms, which have not been sufficiently explored since Santa Teresa. Though it is clear that the present literary tendencies favour change, the career of the 'Modernist' movement suggests that the change will come very slowly in the body of the language; and in the same way the slang of the cosmopolitan centres, though effervescent, will leave few permanent deposits, especially since it does not enjoy the prestige and fixity of literature.

### THE NORTHERN FRONTIER

The political frontier of Spanish-speaking America runs along the Río Grande, between Texas and Mexico, but the colonial empire reached vaguely out to the north and the linguistic frontier lies beyond the political. Florida was discovered before Mexico, and for ten years Álvar Núñez Cabeza de Vaca worked his way painfully through the coast of the Mexican Gulf, discovering the great Mississippi, until he fell in with Cortés' frontier garrisons and learned the news of Moctezuma's fall. A complication of nationality in this region arose out of the French occupation of Louisiana, which has left a legacy of French language and literature to New Orleans and its hinterland. North and north-west of the Mexican boundary expeditions were drawn by the lure of the 'seven cities of Cíbola', imperfectly realized by the villages of the Pueblo Indians. Lower California was early discovered and named from an island in the novel of *Amadís de Gaula*, the Colorado river was ascended a short distance

by Coronado in 1540; Juan de Oñate made a settlement in New Mexico in 1598, but his colony was obliterated by a terrible Indian revolt in 1680 and had to be repeopled in 1692. Devoted missionaries, of whom the most illustrious was Fray Junípero Serra, established stations in California, and they left behind them the mission style of architecture in the south-west, a tradition balancing the colonial style of the east. Thanks to these influences the nomenclature of the whole south-west is predominantly Spanish: *California, Nevada, Colorado, New Mexico, Texas, Florida* among States; *Sierra Nevada, San Juan, Sangre de Cristo, Sacramento, San Andreas*, etc. among mountain ranges; the words *mesa* and *canyon*; *Sacramento, San Joaquin, Colorado, Brazos, Nueces*, etc. among rivers; *San Francisco, Los Angeles, Sacramento, San Diego, Monterey, Palo Alto, Albuquerque, Amarillo, San Angelo*, etc. among towns. The travels of shipmen carried Spanish names for capes, bays, straits, etc. much further north, especially along the west coast where the *San Juan de Fuca* strait separates Washington from Vancouver and *Juan Pérez* Sound is not far short of Alaska. It is not to be supposed that these names indicate effective occupation; the greater part of the territory was attached to the empire in little more than name, and a scanty fringe of colonists in the south-west held the ground behind a still scantier fringe of mission stations. Consequently the territories fell easily to the expanding United States, when Napoleon had led the way by his Louisiana sale of 1803. Florida was transferred in 1819; Texas, nominally an independent republic, was acquired in 1845; the possession of New Mexico was the bone of contention in the war of 1845-48; Utah, Nevada, Arizona and California were carried by the gold rush of 1849-50.

The official language of all this region is now English, but tradition has handed down the use of Spanish, particularly in New Mexico. The peculiarities of this region offer a double interest: they display the delayed action of Spanish evolution since they lay so far from the heart of the Mexican vice-royalty, and they exemplify in an intense degree the conflict

of the two great American languages, English and Spanish, which occurs also with less violence elsewhere. The material and political predominance of the United States affects the colloquial vocabulary of Mexico City and Buenos Aires, where, however, it is treated as a foreign element and rejected or circumscribed. In New Mexico it pervades and decomposes the local Spanish.

New Mexican lies within the Uto-Aztek Indian region, and has the same aboriginal vocabulary as Mexican Spanish both in this respect and with regard to the numerous archaisms and vulgarisms of a plebeian speech uncontrolled by literature. Thus one may enumerate such typical words or pronunciations as: *agora ansí ansina naiden anque pus comigo escrebir mesmo dende quese (que es de) escuro traidrá lamber entensiόn vide (vi) vía (veía) muncho tráir (traer) pdis eclise indino esaito (exacto) cáusula (cápsula)*, etc. *Seseo* is universal, but *yeísmo* varies. In Mexico City and on the coast *ll* has the value of *y*; at Atotonilco it is *ll* and at Puebla [ž]. In New Mexico it has the value of [ž] or [j] when initial, as in *lluvia* [jubja or žubja], but medially it may disappear, as *allá ayá adá á*. We know that the settlers brought with them [š] as the pronunciation of *x j g*, and developed this sound into [χ]; the latter circulated out from the viceregal city and reached New Mexico. It provoked everywhere a parallel evolution of Nahuatl [š] to [χ], but this took place more slowly, and in northern New Mexico not at all. So there Nah. *xocotl* 'bunchosia' gives still *ſocoque* as against Mex. *jocote*. Similarly Nahuatl has no *r*, but has been compelled to learn this sound from Spanish and uses it in later borrowings: it possesses *l*, *ll* in the sense of a lengthened *l* [l:], and *tl* which is a sort of click. The laterals offered no support for Spanish *ll* [λ], and at first Nah. *l* did duty also for Sp. *r rr*: *xenola xalo* for *señora jarro*, *Malinche* for *Marina*. There is still some uncertainty as to the values of *l r* in native minds: *carsetín* for *calcetín*.

The conflict with invading English in New Mexico has been studied in a suggestive fashion. Of special dialectal forms totalling 1400, about 1000 are Spanish, 300 English,

75 Nahuatl, and 10 local Indian. The Spanish forms are met with elsewhere, and so prominence is given to the unusually heavy English element. As there is no literature other than ballads and a folk-song or two, it is not possible to point to a reaction against this vocabulary or to draw a distinction between those words which have been assimilated and those which remain foreign. The situation is that any English expression may be adapted to the speaker's use by simple devices of pronunciation. The English accent is free to occupy any syllable and tends to come early in the word; it is also significant as indicating the root idea. In Spanish borrowings the accentuation is Spanish in character, not important for meaning, and frequently drawn towards the end of the word by elevating a secondary into a primary accent: *firemán* gives *fayamán*, *hóld òn* gives *jolón* 'insult', *high-toned* becomes *jaitón*. The use of a Spanish suffix occasionally eases the transition: *shooter* gives *šutiador*, *switchman* becomes *suichero*. The English vowels have been simplified: *ī* is *ai*, *ū* is *a o*, neutral *e* is *a*: *fayamán* 'fireman', *flaya* 'flier', *lonchi* 'lunch', *jamachi* 'how much', *šarape* 'shut up!' *guasa* 'washer'. An *e* precedes 'impure' *s* (*escrepa* 'scraper') and follows consonants not used finally in Spanish (*estail* 'style', *esmarте* 'smart', *šope* 'shop', *cute* 'coat')—after palatals comes *i*, as *lonchi* 'lunch'). *W* is *gu*: *Guayomén Güile* (Wyoming, Willie).

The consonant system of English requires less modification to serve for New Mexican Spanish. Though [š] is not found in Spanish words, its survival in Nahuatl loan-words makes it available to render English *sh*: *šope* 'shop'. A sense of the equivalence of *f* and *hj* [χ] leads to such duplicate renderings as *ful jul* 'fool', *telefón telejón* 'telephone' (Sp. *teléfono*). As fricative *r* interchanges with *d* in the colloquial, so 'how do you do' becomes *jarirú*, 'goodbye' *gurbáii* and 'drink' *ringue*. English *g* is rendered by the corresponding voiceless palatal affricate [č]: *Chochis* 'George'. Unfamiliar consonant-groups are simplified (*parna* 'partner', *cuara* 'quarter', *sangüichi* 'sandwich'), and the final *-er* represented as a vowel *-a*.

The loans greatly exceed what is either useful or necessary, and their difference from the native Spanish stock indubitably disintegrates the idiom. *Jamachi* 'how much', *jaló* 'hello' (on the telephone), *guerop* or *guirape* 'get up', *jone felo* or *jone jelo* 'funny fellow', are disreputable members of a vocabulary which includes the whole range of English names, adopted without translation, and numerous common nouns that occur frequently: *saiguoque* 'side-walk', *bisnes* 'business', *puši* 'push', *laya* 'liar', *besbol* 'base-ball', *šotegón* 'shot-gun', *rapa* 'wrapper'. The English, of course, is that of the United States, and many of the loans are taken from slang: *broquis* 'broke', *šante* 'shanty', *guiangue* 'gang', *nicle* 'nickel', *cranque* 'cranky'. The freedom with which such words take Spanish suffixes, whether adjectival or verbal, is a sign of their intimate penetration: *cuitiar* 'to quit', *fuliar* 'to fool', *šutiador* 'shooter'. Such treatment implies a permanent lodgment in vocabulary.

### COSMOPOLIS

On the southern frontier there occurs another area of conflict between world-languages, though the situation is in many respects different from that of New Mexico. The Plate Region is in intimate contact with Europe by reason of its great ports and its copious immigration. Representatives of all nations flock to Buenos Aires to make up the future Argentina, and they bring with them their own languages. The problem of nation-building is acute, and consequently that of language-building. These are growing pains, not, as in New Mexico, the throes of dissolution. We have seen that several of the founders of this republic united to demand an *idioma nacional argentino*, though the demand proved premature. To erect colloquial peculiarities into national standards—the pronunciation [j] of *ll*, the misuse of *vos*, or the future *voy a decir*—is to call attention to vulgarisms that are not peculiarly Argentine, and also to impoverish the language by blurring useful distinctions. The Indian element offers no satisfactory basis for such a development. To exalt the Guarani word

against the Quechua is to lose the power of communicating with other Spanish Americans, and perhaps with other Argentines; but the Quechua vocabulary is in no sense national. Besides all this vocabulary is static, and must diminish before the advance of material prosperity in the great towns. These towns already use forms which are not current in Córdoba, Tucumán and the inland cities, with their more traditional mode of life. Thus there exist differences in the Spanish of Argentina which have not yet been investigated to the full.

Apart from the *idioma nacional*, however, there remains a sense of the insufficient resources of Spanish for the expression of Argentine experience. As originally voiced by Sarmiento and Alberdi, this complaint no doubt showed ignorance of the resources available in the mother-tongue, which are much greater than any Spanish-speaker, whether European or American, is aware. Still it is not possible to deny that French has fuller and more precise expressions for society and culture at the present day than has Spanish, nor that Englishmen are more versed in sport and the arts of comfort, nor that North Americans enjoy a vastly superior material development. For these reasons words are borrowed in Spain itself from French, English, German and other languages, and are slowly naturalized; in the Plate Region there is a much greater readiness to adopt neologisms of this sort, and less trouble is taken to see whether the existing funds suffice. Constant touch with foreigners—with merchants and financiers, with teachers and intellectuals, with immigrants—leads to a constant linguistic ferment in this most cosmopolitan region of America.

One may remark, in the first instance, that the proximity of Brazil has not greatly affected the language of the Plate. Its influence is felt chiefly in Uruguay, which was for a period part of the empire of Brazil; but it is slight. The variant *brasilero* for Sp. *brasileño* (Ptg. *brasileiro*), *saudade* for Sp. *añoranza* (Cat. *anyoranza*), and some terms used in prohibited trades, together with a tendency to use periphrases like *el*

*señor doctor* for *usted*, are the total contribution from this quarter; though a mixed language exists precariously as a stage in the acquisition of Spanish by Brazilians, and it is sometimes parodied in comic papers of Montevideo.

Apart from these neighbours, the principal foreign elements found in the Plate region are English and Americans, French, Italians, Germans and Poles. The last-named exert no linguistic influence, and the Germans little. There remain for discussion English, French and Italian. The English are mainly associated with the financial and technical interests of the country: they have offered loans, built railroads, despatched machinery, helped to develop the meat industry, etc. For these ends a relatively small number of immigrants suffice, about 5 p.c. of the whole, who keep themselves pretty much to themselves, speaking English to each other but Spanish in business. They have an organized club-life, and are indifferent to linguistic or cultural proselytizing. The North American exaggerates these qualities. He is a more recent investor, using up his surplus of war-gold. He has less desire to settle, but monopolizes the motor and cinematographic industries, and is the day's embodiment of material greatness. The Germans are engaged in business and commerce, and assimilate rapidly to the body of the nation, of which they constitute about 1 p.c. The French are also financiers and town-dwellers, but they supply many individuals to the professional services. Their hold on the Argentine began with Louis Napoleon's *coup d'état*, when many middle-class Liberals fled overseas and became the instructors of the Argentine youth. They held up the model of French culture and language, instilled in their pupils a desire to finish their education by a visit to Paris, established French booksellers on the Plate (Ollendorff, Garnier, etc.), and made French the necessary intermediary between any European achievement and Spanish-America. A striking evidence of this power is the circumstance that, though the Argentine army was reorganized by Germans, the terms employed were French: *abatis conscripto* (Sp. *quinto*) *edecán reclutar*. Amounting to some

2·5 p.c. of the whole body, the French element exerts a disproportionate influence through its intellectual propaganda. The Italians are of a humbler class. They total over 2,000,000, or 25 p.c. of the whole, and, apart from sellers of lottery tickets and dock-labourers, they are wont to move out on to the land, where they struggle to scrape together enough from the soil to enable them to return to a life of village prosperity in Italy. They have nothing cultural to offer, and their influence on the language is exiguous. The Italian loan-words are those terms of music, architecture, painting and sculpture which have entered all European vocabularies, together with the military and financial words adopted by Spain in the sixteenth century.

The huge number of the Italian immigrants demands some attention for the mixed Italo-Spanish dialect known as *cocoliche*. At first blush this looks like the marriage of two languages that would lead to the birth of a third; but in fact *cocoliche* contains no threat against the purity of Spanish. The jargon is frequently parodied in the popular press, and a specimen 'poem' opens as follows:

Amico Dun vieco Panchos:  
Usté, per yenar papiel,  
han hechos in gran pastel  
que nun lo come ne il canchos, etc.

The immigrant arrives completely illiterate and without any knowledge of Spanish. Spanish he must learn if he is to eat bread, and he learns it wholly by ear, misunderstanding what he hears and keeping up his prejudices for some Italian forms in a quite haphazard fashion. For instance, in the above example, having no *-s* plural, he tacks *-s* on at random to singulars; having no [χ] he substitutes [k] in *vieco*; he fails to recognize the true unaccented *o*, and he keeps a grip on his Italian particles, *per il ne*, etc. He frequently borrows verbal endings from his own tongue and uses Italian where it will pass muster, e.g. *dovia* for *debía*. But his language is in a state of flux, and he will go on augmenting the Spanish element during the whole of his stay, while the precise mix-

ture is purely personal and is not a means of communicating with other members of his class. His children, if he stay so long, will learn accurately colloquial Argentine, and will endeavour to correct their parent. *Cocoliche*, in short, is merely Spanish imperfectly learned.

The French influence is very powerful in intellectual spheres. The newspapers multiply new political and social terms, and the jargon of the Quartier Latin and Montparnasse serves to name literary and artistic novelties. These terms force their way in even when satisfactory Spanish equivalents exist. One has *apostolado* (in the political sense) *arrivista campaña* (Sp. *campo*) *clientela control etapa malentendido* (Fr. *mal entendu*) *sindicato tirada vitrallas*, etc., with adjectives of the same class like *banal alienado* (Sp. *enajenado*) *fatigante parsimonioso remarcable* (used in Spain in the eighteenth century); verbs are *admitir* (in the sense of *conceder*) *hesitar nulificar*, and prepositional phrases *excepción hecha de* (Sp. *prescindiendo de*) *lejos de* (Sp. *en vez de*). The formal relations of society are on the Parisian plan: *matiné supé té-dansant suaré* (Fr. *soirée*) *parvenú*. Fashionable shopping, and especially everything that adorns the woman of elegance, is French: *georgette reps*, *dernier cri*, *Maison Clothilde*. Intercepting the language of modern science, French has sent on to the Plate *antisepsia* for *antiseptis*, *panslavismo* for *paneslavismo*, and *psichiatría* for Sp. *psiquiatría*.

The English vocabulary is almost entirely one of nouns. Only one verb is common, *linchar*, which is fortunately not from England. Club-life, sport and commercial organization are the principal sources of supply: *club clubman* (for *socio*) *jockey highlife el flirteo fiveoclock* (fashionable tea) and *Palace Hotel* (in the English order), together with *futbol boxeo* and *lockout selfmademan pioneer snob repórter bluff* (and *bluffman*), etc. An odd reduplication has occurred in respect of horseracing, which is an old sport of the Argentine plebs and also a costly entertainment imported from Europe. The former (*carreras criollas o del país*) take place on *el día de reunión* in a *cancha*, and *apuestas* are made; the signal to start is given by the

*abanderado*, and the *corredores* urge their horses up to the *lazo de llegada o raya*. But the fashionable race in the big town takes place at *el meeting*, amid *el betting*, in the *hipódromo*; the signal is given by *el starter*, and *los jockeys* make for *el winning-post o la meta*. The more general terms are French, the technicalities English.

The whole of this vocabulary is insecure, and particularly when it descends to details and takes on strange phonetic shapes. It consists of neologisms and foreign words (*neologismos y extranjerismos*). A neologism is one which has been adapted to Spanish norms; the others remain evidently foreign. The neologism is thus the word more likely to pass unnoticed in discourse and to survive; against the unnaturalized foreign expression the national conscience revolts. Adaptation is an intelligent process and especially frequent in cultural loan-words, which are of French origin, as we have seen; French words, conversely, admit readily of adaptation to Spanish by their common Latin origin. English words neither agree with Spanish principles, nor do they occur in spheres where permanence is assumed or even desired; all but a few remain foreigners, and are menaced with expulsion. A very keen linguistic sense exists among the Argentines as among all persons of Spanish descent. Without defining what is Spanish, they are quick to note what is foreign. This quick resentment is seen in the nicknames of foreign nations: all are *gringos*, but especially the Italians; the Spaniards are *godos*, the French *franchutes* or *gabachos*, the English *yónis*. If a word is to be definitely admitted it must be reshaped, and sometimes translation takes place before this occurs: *durmiente* railway 'sleeper', *estrella* cinema 'star'. The strange word is humorously misrepresented (*sietemetogrado* for *cinematógrafo*), and it is excluded from the literary pages of the newspaper. The sporting pages are written in the outlandish jargon which disfigures them everywhere, as

El *referee* al finalizar el primer *half-time* concedió a los húngaros un *penalty-kick*. Inmediatamente se produjo un *clinch*, siguió un *upper-cut*, luego un *hook* de derecha... la

lucha prosiguió en *out-fighting*...un hombre de fuerte *punch*.

These examples from among those given by Grossmann give point to his remark that while not a single neologism or foreign word was found by him on the editorial page of *La Nación* in a count of 2500 lines, 240 neologisms and 500 foreign words occurred in an equal number of lines under the rubric 'Futbal y boxeo'. Under a surface agitation of incessant experiment, the essential language changes with almost geological slowness; and despite every temptation to differ, the language of the Argentine does not abandon its traditions, but even becomes increasingly Spanish. It has become a national principle to preserve this patrimony.

## CHAPTER VIII

### PORTUGUESE

Camões entitled his national epos 'The Lusitanians' and reckoned among the first events of national history the resistance of Viriathus to the legions; but there can be no doubt that the kingdom and the language descended from the north. The south and centre of Portugal, as far as the Douro, was occupied by a Mozarabic dialect, which owned for its centres the Roman capital of Mérida and the Moslem seat of Badajoz. Roman Lusitania extended so far into Spain as to include Ávila. This dialect was eminently conservative; no innovations are reported as originating in the south-west. The tonic vowels ē õ remained simple vowels (*Mérida EMÉRITA Caçela CASTELLA*), and proparoxytones appear to have been unusually tolerated. In these respects Badajoz and the Algarve resembled the conservative parts of Granada. Between vowels -n- was preserved in *Odiana ANAS Fontanas Al-Asbúna* (Fr. *Lisbonne* Eng. *Lisbon* OSp. *Lisbona*); and inter-vocalic -l- remained in *Mértola MYRTILIS Ròliça* and probably *Baselgas BASILICAS*. *Caçela* shows the Mozarabic evolution of -ST- to ʃ as in *Çaragoça* (*Zaragoza*) and *Écija*; and Moz. -a for -e appears in *Lisboa Mértola*. Mozarabic names appear in documents, as *Cidi Adaredici*, *Zidi presbyter*, *Torsario Daviz*, *Arias Salamoniz*. From the Douro southwards the linguistic and political frontiers do not now precisely correspond, but the more pronounced differences are due to former lines of demarcation (e.g. the Portuguese spoken at Olivenza in the Badajoz region); there is no shading off from Portuguese into Spanish such as occurs north of the river. Central and south Portugal have thus been overrun by the northern dialects, which they resembled in their conservatism (extreme

---

The principal works of reference are mentioned in the note at the end of Chapter I.

even among Mozarabic dialects), but with which they agreed in no innovation.

The Gallæco-Portuguese massif in the north-west is one of the best defined subdivisions of the Iberian Peninsula. The narrow fringe of the Cantabrian mountains splay out at its western end, and the highest line bends round in a south-westerly and southerly curve along the Montes de León to the knot of Peña Trevinca, backed by a second line formed of the Sierras de Picos, Caurel and Queixa. Spurs run down from these ranges into Portugal, where they occupy the province of Traz-os-Montes and the eastern half of Entre-Douro-e-Minho. Hills maintaining the original east-west direction of the Cantabrians run down to the sea in fingers, between which lie the Galician *rías* and their small plains; while there are two inland river-depressions, that of the upper Minho which has Lugo for its capital, and that of the Sar and Santiago de Compostela. The consequence of this mountain formation is that Galicia cannot be approached from the central Meseta or the Portuguese coastal belt save over parallel ranges of mountains. The region is thrown inward on its own centre; and at the same time its *rías* and river-valleys make it capable of sustaining a considerable population. Administrative frontiers have not coincided with these natural bastions, but tend to adopt the lines of bounding rivers. The Douro serves admirably as a frontier against central Portugal, since from the falls to the sea it runs rather through a trench than a valley. Against Spain a number of ecclesiastical and other frontiers have adopted at various moments of history the line of the Esla, which runs approximately parallel to the Montes de León. Both banks of this river, however, belong geographically and culturally to the Spanish Meseta, which extends at least to the Orbigo. Indeed the mountains themselves serve less for a barrier than as an area of transition to the Galician region which lies behind them. To a considerable extent Galicia is the product of the Minho river. Though bordering on the sea, the region is not mercantile like the lower Tagus basin; it lacks the proper hinterland,

and there is a want of unity between the centres of population, each established in a depression between ranges of hills.

Racial and political divisions have emphasized the semi-independence of the region. A frontier which goes back to remote times is that between the Astures and the Cantabri in the Asturias, and farther south the Astures held the Astur River (Esla) against the *Vaccæi*. Behind the Astures of western León lay other tribes, of whom the most influential were the *Gallæci*. The name bears a superficial resemblance to that of the *Galatæ*, a Celtic people, but this is less evident in Strabo's spelling *Kallaikoi*. Similarly the *Arotrebæ* resemble superficially the Celtic *Atrebates*, but this also may be misleading. We only know that there were *Celtici* living about the promontory of Nerium, between Coruña and Finisterre, and that Celtic names were given to fortresses and settlements in Galicia and Portugal with considerable profusion. There is no evidence sufficient to show a Celtic predominance in the north-west, and nothing definite is known concerning the circumjacent tribes. As the force of the 'Iberian' invasion, presumed to have come from Africa, appears to have expended itself on the central Meseta, it is likely that the Iberian quota in Galicia was unusually small. The tribes have been assigned to the 'Ligurian' stock, which is perhaps meaningless, and only amounts to calling them non-Iberian.

In historical times, we find Galicia, North Portugal and Western León forming an administrative block in the Roman Empire, and assigned to Hither Spain (under Augustus) or kept separate as a diocese. Under the Visigoths this line of division remained to separate the arch-diocese of Bracara (Braga) from those of Carthaginensis, Tarraconensis and Lusitania. The diocese of Astorga, the eastern bulwark of the Galician province, covers approximately the area of Western Leonese, and included originally the Leonese-speaking city of Miranda do Douro, now within the Portuguese border. At this time the thrust of the Visigothic invasion concentrated in Galicia their enemies, the west Germanic Swabians (*Suevi*), who were subdued only in the

sixth century. Early in the eighth the Visigothic monarchy itself was annihilated by Târiq and Mûsâ. The remnants of the nation fled northward to hide in the valleys of the Cantabrian mountains and the Pyrenees, in barren regions that offered little prospect of establishing new states. In the Galician river-basins, however, there were means of maintaining considerable numbers of men, who would be almost perfectly screened from invasion. Here Alfonso I organized his Christian kingdom, and even overran and laid waste the plains of León, before the Christians were forced again to concentrate behind the mountains. Indications of this period of Germanic settlement are to be found in the Germanic place-names, such as *Godos Gude Aldegode Valgode Goda Gudín Gudiña Godón* or *Sabín Sabrigo Jabariz Saboy Sabegode*, which denote Gothic or Swabian nationality, or in names based on that of some prominent chief. That the process of settlement occupied time is evidenced by the changes of syntax and vocabulary: the Latin genitive in *Vilagude* as against the Romance *de* of *Casal de Goda*, the diminutives in *-iño* and augmentatives in *-ago*, or the Arabic *alde-* 'village'.

The tenth century saw the balance of power transferred to the plains of León, but Galicia continued to make the most rapid reconquests in the valley of the Mondego. Here Alfonso III's campaigns had to be fought afresh in the eleventh century by Fernando I, who established the Mozarabic count Sisnando in Coimbra (1064). Alfonso VI divided the whole region between Raymund and Henry of Burgundy, and thus commenced the separation of Portugal from Galicia. Henry's son, Afonso, contrived to wrest the title of king from Alfonso VII in 1143; but his claim would have had little substance had he not seized the great Mozarabic city of Lisbon with the aid of a crusading army in 1147. This feat brought Portugal into veritable being, since it imprinted a wholly new direction on its policies. Its future was to be controlled not by the massif from which the conquerors had come, but from the amphitheatre of the lower Tagus, facing the ocean and cultivating the friendship and commerce of oceanic

neighbours. It was an orientation which Galicia could not share, and despite community of history and language a split occurred, which has converted the Minho from a medial line into a frontier. The land between Minho and Douro remained with Portugal, though standing close to Galicia in dialect and interests. The Portuguese monarchs did not immediately use Lisbon as their capital, but resided at Coimbra or Leiria by preference until the Moslem menace had been driven farther south. Portugal reached its full extent in 1250. In the disturbances caused by the failure of the legitimate Burgundian line in 1383, the paramount importance of Lisbon emerged as the guarantor of Portuguese independence; and the monarchs of the house of Aviz resided normally in the city or its near neighbourhood (Cintra). The various stages of the Christian advance are marked by dialectal differences in Portuguese.

#### GALLÆCO-PORTUGUESE AND SPANISH

In their earliest stages Galician and Portuguese were one language of a markedly Ibero-Romance character. The resemblance between them and Spanish leaps to the eye as they are written, especially if allowance is made for mere orthographic variants such as Ptg. *lh nh* for Gal. Sp. *ll ñ*. As spoken the resemblance is less in evidence, but an attentive listener will soon become aware that the languages employ the same general phonetic pattern. The rhythm is trochaic, owing to the conservation in both languages of final vowels, and the elimination of unaccented penultimate vowels. Portuguese preserves rather more finals than Spanish, e.g. *-e* after *d* in *parede verdade estae* for *estade*, as also in the brief *-e* often heard after infinitives (as also, to some extent, in Leonese Spanish). The language is also rather more tolerant than Spanish of trisyllabic endings: Ptg. *dúvida dívida bêbado* Sp. *duda deuda beodo* 'doubt, debt, drunk'. In the vowel-series Portuguese and Spanish have none of the mixed group so characteristic of French (*y œ ø*), though stress alters

quality as well as tension in Portuguese vowels, but only tension in Spanish. The rich series of nasal vowels in Portuguese is of comparatively recent growth; and at all events they are not akin to French nasals, which require a considerable depression of the uvula. Among the consonants, we find in both Spanish and Portuguese the peculiar transition from occlusive *b d g* to fricatives; and these are, in the same fashion, frequently due to voicing of intervocalic -p- -t- -k-. As this process was of western origin in the Peninsula, it has been carried through rather more systematically in Portuguese, e.g. Ptg. *liberdade* Sp. *libertad*. Both languages employ the same strongly vibrant *rr*, which is wont to develop before or after it, especially in Portuguese, a fugitive vowel. Ptg. *preto* *perto* 'black' 'near' are barely distinguishable [p̥rétu] [p̥r̥étu], owing to the same causes as give in OSp. *perlado* beside *prelado*. In morphology, Portuguese has, like Spanish, lost all trace of the two-case system which operated in OFr. Both languages form plurals in -(e)s and have eliminated neuter plurals in -a. Comparison is by MAGIS, not PLUS. In the verbal paradigm both languages have eliminated the conjugation in -ERE, identifying it with -ERE; and both favour -ir at the expense of -er, though Portuguese does so less than Spanish: Ptg. *dizer* Sp. *decir* DICERE. They have kept -ra in its ancient sense of pluperfect indicative, though Spanish employs it more often as a conditional or an imperfect subjunctive. The future perfect indicative and perfect subjunctive have united to give a future subjunctive, Ptg. -r Sp. -re. There has been in both an immense simplification of past tenses and past participles, which very generally conform to the present stem; and they have favoured, in common, a multiplicity of auxiliaries. Here Portuguese has gone further than Spanish by making *ter* (Sp. *tener*) its usual auxiliary, and restricting *haver* to impersonal uses (save in the literary style). Both tongues use the Latin inceptive suffix -ESCERE to form new verbs from nouns, without necessarily an inceptive sense. In the matter of vocabulary, both Portuguese and Spanish have made the same choice of alternative Latin expressions

(*querer quedar calar falar* = Sp. *hablar chegar* = Sp. *llegar dexar* = Sp. *dejar*); they show the same iberisms, but rather fewer in Portuguese; the same celticisms and germanisms; and substantially the same arabisms. In the last respect, Portuguese, like Old Leonese in Spanish, has retained words which have been lost to Castilian-Spanish: *alfageme* 'barber' *alfaiate* 'tailor' *leilão* (Arabic?) 'auction'.

The appearance of similarity to Spanish is thus very strong when we compare the literary languages, but it increases when we compare Portuguese with the Spanish *koiné*. A few of the apparent differences are due to the historical development of Galician and Portuguese, but the great majority are due to the peculiar features of Castilian among medieval Spanish dialects and to the sound-shifts which occurred in the sixteenth century. In most of its features Portuguese agrees with Leonese or Mozarabic Spanish against Castilian, and as these are archaic stages through which the Castilian changes have passed, it follows that Portuguese has the air of an archaic Spanish. Its conservatism is shown in the fact that the vowels ē õ do not result in diphthongs under any circumstances; they become [ɛ] [ɔ], and differ in timbre from the [e] [o] resulting from ē õ. There are thus seven tonic vowels in Portuguese as in Catalan, and only five in Castilian (apart from shades of variation); but to the Castilian series we should also attribute the diphthongs *ie ue*, to make up the Peninsular seven. They are indivisible diphthongs, distinct from others whose pronunciation is optional (e.g. *suave* or *su-ave*). In the Spanish-speaking area certain Mozarabic dialects also failed to produce diphthongs from ē õ, especially those of Granada and Lusitania; in León, too, the process was slow and hesitant. The exact correspondence of Lat. ē õ Ptg. [ɛ] [ɔ] is disturbed by the principle of metaphony, according to which final -a -os -as opens a previous accented *e o* in nouns, and -e does the same in verbs; but -o closes a previous accented *e o*: óvo óvos 'egg(s)' óva óvas 'fishes' egg(s)', mórtio mórtios mórtia mórtas 'dead', dévo déva déve from *dever* 'owe'. Metaphony gives rise to complex develop-

ments in Portuguese, but the principle, at least, is not exclusive to that tongue. At Mieres and Lena, in the central section of the Asturian dialects, we find *bubu bobos boba bobas* and *guetu gata* 'cat (tom and tabby)', *diniru timpu puirtu*, showing the power of final [u] to close a preceding accented *e o*. Thus, although metaphony and the absence of the diphthongs *ie ue* are circumstances which plainly distinguish Portuguese from literary Spanish, they fail to draw a sharp line between Portuguese and the whole of Spanish. The connection with regional or discarded Spanish forms is still more evident in the *ei ou* which result in Portuguese from *AI AU*, and are pronounced in NPtg. [eɪ ou], in SPtg. [rɪ ɔ], when the latter is not dissimilated to *oi*: ALTARIU CAUSA SALTU JANUARIU IBAIKA AURU *outeiro cosa coisa soto janeiro vega ouro oiro*, Sp. *otero cosa soto enero vega oro*. As Mozarabic Spanish had *ai ei au ou*, and Leonese normally *ei ou*, the Gallæco-Portuguese form is clearly related to a pan-Iberian evolution.

It is in the system of consonants that the greatest apparent difference between Spanish and Gallæco-Portuguese lies. We must first, however, deduct all those sound-shifts which have occurred within the history of literary Spanish, and restore to *-ss- -s- -ç- z- x- j-* their older values of [ʃ ʒ ʃ ʒ ʃ ʒ]. These were formerly their values in Portuguese, and as for [ʃ ʒ] it still persists in the Bragança region distinct from *ç z* [s z]; but otherwise Portuguese has reduced *-ss- -ç-* to [s] and *-s- -z-* to [z], while *x- j-* remain [ʃ ʒ]. The former simplification characterizes parts of Andalusia and most of Spanish America. We must restore also to Spanish, for purposes of comparison with Portuguese, all the innovations peculiar to Castilian, the change of *f* to *h*, loss of initial *j ġ*, the evolution of *-ct-* to *ch* and *MULTU* to *mucho*, and of *-c'l- -li-* to *j*: Ptg. *forno filho feito janeiro olho molher muito* are forms exactly parallel to Leonese, Mozarabic, Aragonese and even Catalan derivatives of *FURNU FILIU FACTU JANUARIU OCULU MULIERE MULTU*. Portuguese differs from Spanish in evolving *-ll- -nn-* to *l n*: *cavalo dano* Sp. *caballo daño* Cat. *cavall dany* CABALLU

DAMNU > DANNU. But this merely indicates that the passage of *ll nn* to [λ n] was perceptibly later than that of *LL C'L*, NIGN, and that, by archaism, Portuguese has not accompanied the other Peninsular languages. That the change from dental to palatal pronunciation was relatively late was already clear from certain cases in Spanish where *ll nn* arose from assimilation of alveolars (*conno* from *con lo*, *echallo* from *echarlo*), since these imply originally [l: n:]. One cannot exclude the possibility that they may still have been tense alveolars, with a long and large application of the tongue to the alveoli, and not palatals, in the poetry of Gonzalo de Berceo and his contemporaries. With regard to *ch*, its present SPtg. pronunciation [ʃ] dates only from the eighteenth century; previously, as in NPtg. Gal. Sp. Cat., it was [ç], for which cause Chinese *ča* gave Ptg. *cha* 'tea'.

The oldest of the three principal criteria which distinguish Galæco-Portuguese from Spanish belongs, at least in its initial stages, to a period when the Peninsular unity was still maintained, i.e. before the opening of the eighth century. It is that which has come to oppose Ptg. *ch* to Sp. *ll* < PL-CL-FL-: Ptg. *chorar chover cheio chão chaga chegar, chamar chave chousa, chama*, Sp. *llorar llover lleno llano llaga llegar, llamar llave llosa, llama* FLAMMA. This development did not take place in the Mozarabic dialects of the centre and south, nor in the Navarro-Aragonese of the east. The part affected was the north-west of the Peninsula only, and within that region the Leonese variety of Spanish was associated with Galæco-Portuguese in giving a palatal fricative x [ʃ]. The different groups have different expansive powers, and indeed the passage of FL- to *ll-* is supported only by *llama* in Spanish (and, within the word, by *hollar* \*FAFLARE AFFLARE), and scarcely amounts to establishing a rule. FLAMMULA (a personal name) gave *Llambra* and *Lambra*, but FLAVINU *Laín*, FLACCIDU *lacio*, which show a development from FL- to *l*; and there are numerous cases of initial *fl-* which can hardly all be due to erudite influence: *flaco flanco flecha fleje flojo flor flujo*. These show a wave of change which lost impetus as it attained Castilian territory.

Portuguese has a fuller series of *fl- > ch-*: *FLAGRARE cheirar* *FLAMMULA Chámoa FLORE* OPtg. *chor* \**FLORUTU chorudo*, etc., together with numerous cases where the three groups have been preserved by dissimilation of the *l* to *r*: *PLATEA praça* *PLANTA* OPtg. *pranta* and *chanta* *CLAMARE* OPtg. *cramar* and *chamar* *FLORE* OPtg. *frol* and *chor* MPtg. *flor*. These words seem less likely to be due to Latin influence than to offer an alternative possibility for the treatment of the three groups. The value of *ch* in modern Portuguese is [ʃ], but this pronunciation is first mentioned in 1671, and in 1739 is still treated as peculiar to Lisbon. The older pronunciation was [č], an affricate palatal, as in northern Portuguese and Galician. In medieval Leonese *Xainiz xosa* (FLAVINU + ICI, CLAUSA) indicate [ʃ], a fricative palatal, as normal. In modern west Leonese the representative of these groups is *ts* [š], an affricate dental, which also stands for the *ll-* derived from *L-*: *tsabe tseiti CLAVE LACTE*, Sp. *llave leche*, Ptg. *chave leite*.

It is evident, from the foregoing examples, that the north-west of the Peninsula was an area of active experimentation in respect of these initial groups, both in León and in Galicia-Portugal, while Castile lay where the waves of innovation died down. Commencing under conditions of Peninsular unity, the development had already reached its extreme limits before the opening of the twelfth century: *chamam* occurs in the first Portuguese document (1092); *CLAUSA xosa* is misspelt *flausa* and *plosa* in 1034 and 1084, and *x* [š] appears in *Xainiz* (1101, 1171) *xosa* (1123). The first steps were the lengthening and then the palatalization of the *l* after the initial *p c f*. This occurs in modern Ribagorzan, as a modern development; and perhaps Berceo's *Hllantada* preserves a dim memory of an initial consonant. These presumed groups *pll- cll- fl-* gave Sp. *ll-* through the aggrandisement of the lateral palatal at the expense of the initial consonants. It is unlikely that the western dialects passed through the stage *ll-*, since this was the result of palatalizing initial *L-* in Leon. *lloco llueram* (908) *llauore* (1082), and that does not pass farther to *x*. Mod. WLeon. *ts* for both *PL- CL- FL-* and *L-* is there-

fore a definitely modern confusion. The basis of the western experiments is thus probably *pll- cll- fl-*, and the stages may have included delateralization of the [λ] so as to give *y*, as in literary Italian *piano chiamare fiamma*; restricting the space between the back of the tongue and the middle palate so as to convert this *y* into a palatal fricative (cf. at Somana, Italy, *pšan pšega pšanta PL-*) or palatal affricate (cf. at Bellinzona, Italy, *pčü PLUS*); and so by aggrandisement of the [š] or [č] (cf. at Genoa, *čau čan CLAVE PLANU, šu FLORE*) to give OLeon. *x* Gal. Ptg. *ch*. If this explanation be correct, it would appear that Galician Leonese and Castilian developed together as far as *pll-*, etc., when Castilian diverged to *ll-*; and Galician developed with Leonese through *py-*, etc. to *pč-* or *pš-*, after which they reached their separate conclusions: *ch* and *x*. Modern standard Portuguese has lost the affricate element of *ch* in the pronunciation [š]; but modern west Leonese has developed the palatal affricate [č]—doubtless concurrent with *x*—into a dental affricate [š]. The final triumph of *ll* in literary Spanish is due to the rise to hegemony of Castilian among the Spanish dialects, eclipsing the earlier prestige of Galician and Leonese. A vigorous linguistic condition in the west led to innovations characteristic of that area, but not yet to a loss of interdialectal contact in the Peninsula, between the eighth and the tenth centuries.

The loss of *-l-* and *-n-* between vowels severed the connection between the Ibero-Romance languages in the course of the tenth century, by introducing a clear-cut line of demarcation. The former can be dated with much assurance by comparing *artigulo paadulibus auellanales* (883) *portugalense mollinarum* (907) with *Fáfia FAFILA Fiiz FELICE* (995) *Vádisco* (1092) *O Castro* for *lo* (1161). The loss of *-l-* occurred in the course of the tenth century; its mechanism is more conjectural. The suggested cause is that the *l* may have been construed in the same syllable as the preceding vowel (*Fafil-a* for *Fáfi-la*), and then have taken on the velar timbre [h] which resembles *u*, before being completely assimilated to the vowel. However this be, the *l* has not contributed a velar timbre to that vowel

as it does when indubitably final of syllable (as in *SALTU salto*, whence *souto*).

The loss of *-n-* was doubtless contemporary with that of *-l-* in so far as the nasal consonant was converted into a nasalization of the preceding vowel. In 907 we have *resona*, but in 1092 *padroadigo \*PATRONATICU eenúu IN UNU particoens PARTITIONES*. Up to the sixteenth century the vowels nasalized are frequently written double (*maão MANU*), as also those left in hiatus by the loss of *-l-*, though the usage is not rigid, and the nasal sign is placed on any constituent element and frequently on the last (*maaõ*). These spellings suggest that for a while after the loss of the consonants, such vowels were recognizably longer than others, while not more than the latter portion may have had a nasal quality [maã]. Essentially the whole process is one of denasalization. First, the nasal consonant was replaced by a nasal resonance in the vowel; then, in certain cases the nasal resonance itself disappeared. This occurred especially in the combinations *e-o e-a o-a* MPtg. *veio \*VENIUT veia VENA Lisboa OLISIPONE boa BONA*; but the nasal quality persisted to the sixteenth century (*boõa*, etc.). In other cases the nasal vowels survive either as simple vowels or as diphthongs, indicated either by ~ or by *m n* (since all nasals final of syllables are vocalized): *LANA lã BENE bem FINE fim BONU bom COMMUNE comum CANES cães ORPHANU órfão PARTITIONES partições*.

The combined effect of these two consonantal losses has been to give Portuguese and Galician their notably vocalic character, distinct from the equipoise of Spanish, and the consonantal nature of Catalan. The loss of *l* between vowels spread to the definite article and enclitic pronouns: *o a os as*, which, with other vocalic particles, cause Portuguese words to be joined through vowels, always ready to enter into liaison with others which may happen to be at the end of one word or beginning of the next. The indefinite article is also vocalic *um* [ü] *uma* [üa]. An order of nasal vowels and diphthongs has arisen beside the buccal vowels, and both exist in tonic and atonic series (in which the vowels *a e o*

are reduced to relaxed sounds [ə ə i u]). Thus we have complex vowel liaisons in Portuguese (*se o eu ouvisse, tenho visto uma ave* with sequences *e-o-eu-ou* and *o-üa-a*), and the possibility of the subtlest cadences in verse. The language has come to seem intrinsically lyrical, just as the balanced and sonorous Castilian seems intrinsically oratorical and Catalan nervous and concise. As the languages differ, so too the literary achievements of the three peoples are not interchangeable, particularly in respect of poetry. Attempts by Portuguese and Catalans to write poetry in Castilian have been numerous and sustained, but they have reached their true stature only in their own idioms, so subtly different in texture from Spanish.

Notwithstanding the circumstance that the characteristics of Galician-Portuguese thus date from the tenth century, the *l n* occasionally appear in popular lyrics until the sixteenth century. Thus we find in the fourteenth-century *Cancioneiros*: *sedia la fremosa seu sirgo torcendo; eu al rio me vou banhar; louhana; levad' amigo! que dormides as manhanas frias!*; and in Gil Vicente: *vi venir serrana gentil, graciosa; donde vindes, filha branca e colorida; um amigo que eu havia mançanas d'ouro m'envia*. Nearly six centuries seem to have been required before the resistance of conservative rustics was entirely conquered.

We should mention here also, among the primitive characteristics of the Galician-Portuguese language, the syntactical device known as the 'personal' infinitive. Where it is desirable to indicate person with an infinitive, as when there has been a change of person between the principal verb and the dependent infinitive, or where there has been no indication otherwise of any person, Spanish adds a personal pronoun in the nominative case (*a ser yo tal* 'were I such'), but Galician-Portuguese adds personal terminations to the infinitive, and, as it were, conjugates the infinitive (*1 - 2 es 3 - 4 mos 5 des 6 em*). This device dates from the period of Gallæco-Portuguese unity and is frequent in the *Cancioneiros* and in Alfonso X's *Cantigas de Santa María*: e.g. *ben per está a os reis de amaren Santa María* 'it is well for kings to love St Mary'.

THE DIVERGENCE OF PORTUGUESE  
FROM GALICIAN

Thanks to the innovations we have mentioned, but still more to the resolute consummation of Spanish evolution by Castilian and the superiority exercised by this speech over Leonese, Galician-Portuguese takes the field as a separate language by the commencement of the eleventh century. Political events of the same era confirmed its independence. The reigns of Fernando I, Sancho II and Alfonso VI witnessed the shift of the political centre eastwards to Castile, and the last-named, after confirming Castilian supremacy by making the capture of Toledo a Castilian triumph, gave a beginning to Galician localism and Portuguese independence by appointing two Burgundian brothers, Raymund and Henry, counts of Galicia and Portugal respectively, each as the husband of one of his daughters. Portugal was the less promising of the two fiefs—a fragment lying between the Minho and Mondego, open to the full fury of Moorish war; but perhaps by reason of its peril, it aspired most vigorously to independence. The struggle to avoid admission of dependence on Castile occupied the lives of Henry of Burgundy, his wife Teresa, and his son Afonso Henriquez. The third of the line wrested the title of king from Alfonso VII in 1143, but he earned it by the capture of Lisbon, one of the great Mozarabic capitals—in 1147. With this triumph the centre of Portuguese power began to shift southward, and away from Galicia. The Minho as a frontier became gradually more significant; and particularly after the commercial prosperity of Lisbon began to give a maritime outlook to Portuguese policy—e.g. friendship with England and Flanders, the nearest maritime neighbours—quite distinct from the landward interests of Galicia. The earlier kings of the Burgundian house frequently resided north of the Tagus, but the reigns of the last two (Pedro I and Fernando) witnessed the rapid economic development of Lisbon. This development had its counterpart in the language, where a rift became apparent between

Galician and Portuguese about the year 1350, more or less; after 1383 the struggle against Juan I of Castile, who claimed the Portuguese crown for his wife, Fernando's heiress, the military triumphs of the patriotic house of Aviz, its oceanic adventures ending in the voyage of Vasco da Gama, and a vigorous prose literature, all caused Portuguese to develop in a peculiarly national sense, while at the same time Galician entered into a provincial decadence. About the middle of the fourteenth century, therefore, both speeches entered their middle period of development, characterized by the dissolution of their old unity, and leading up to the humanistic settlement of the sixteenth century.

The old united language we meet in documents of various sorts, but chiefly in the form of a conventional language for use in the courtly lyric. The contributors to this poetry are not merely Galicians or Portuguese, but also Leonese, Castilians, Andalusian Castilians, and even one Italian; and its patrons Alfonso X of Castile as well as Diniz of Portugal. No doubt songs were sung in Castilian also—by sentinels, harvesters, pilgrims and other persons who were engaged in communal activities. It would be absurd to suppose Castile lyrically dumb, and given over to the epos and prose. But it is also undeniable that the Galician lyric enjoyed higher repute, courtly patronage, and alone was preserved in writing. A token thereof is the fact that the poets' names are known, from the primitive *Palla* 'Straw' at Alfonso VII's court to Count Pedro de Barcelos, the reputed collector of the Galician-Portuguese *Cancioneiros* and reputed author of the prose *Livros de Linhagens*. The *Cancioneiros* contain the secular lyric, amatory or satirical; the songs of Alfonso X's *Cantigas de Santa María* are their pious counterpart. Alfonso X, the father of Castilian prose, is the most prolific poet in Galician-Portuguese and the leading patron; his contemporary Diniz, founder of Portugal's agricultural prosperity, comes second in inspiration and patronage. The sweetest poetical inspiration is supplied by Galician singers, such as Airas Nunes of Compostela and Martin Codax of Vigo, when they use the

simple love-songs in parallel couplets (the *cossantes*, as Mr Bell calls them) considered suitable for the love-songs of women. In them we have the native fountain of song and, no doubt, the unconfessed reason for Galician lyrical prestige; but the greater number of the surviving lyrics have been pressed into forms borrowed from Provençal troubadours, and it is on their triumphs of artifice that both Alfonso X and Diniz claim to base their repute.

The unity of Galician and Portuguese did not, even in this conventional language, amount to identity. For certain Romance sounds, after the age of experiment closed, different solutions were adopted. For the palatal nasal and lateral consonants Galician, like Castilian, chose *ll mn* (later *ñ*), but Portuguese writers preferred the Provençal *lh nh*. To indicate a nasal vowel, apart from a superposed *til* (~), Galician preferred *n*, Portuguese *m*; but the *Cancioneiros* frequently employ *n* in poems by Portuguese poets (e.g. in an early lyric: *como vivo en gran cuidado*). An orthographic *h* served also to add a palatal element to *m* in *mha senhor* 'my lady', *mh'a mentido* 'he has lied to me'. In morphology, the 3 S. preterite of 'strong' verbs in Galician ends in *-o* (*fezo quiso disso tevo poso*) as in Spanish, but in Portuguese in *-e* (*fez(e) quis(e) diss(e) teve pos*). The poems of King Diniz are found to employ Portuguese forms always unless there is metrical reason to prefer the Galician; he has thus 55 cases of *fez* to 3 of *fezo*, 24 *quis* 2 *quiso*, 11 *disse* or *diss'* o *disso*, 1 *teve* o *tevo*, 7 *pos* o *poso*. The 'weak' verbs of the conjugation in *-ir* form their 3 S. preterite, Gal. *-eo* Ptg. *iu*: Gal. *ouueo* Ptg. *ouviu*. One finds also the opposition Gal. *oydes diamos* Ptg. *ouvis demos*. Characteristic of Galician is the dative second-personal pronoun *che*. It appears in Portuguese in the prose of a law by Afonso III (*estas son as palavras per que a demanda he contestada per negaçõ: non ch'o deuo, non ch'o conhosco*, where the formula of refusal may show legal archaism), and once in 1262 (*chu=ch'o*). King Diniz uses only *te*.

After the compilation of the *Cancioneiros* in Portugal, this lyrical Galician continued in vogue until the beginning of

the fifteenth century at the court of Castile, where it gave way at last to Castilian. The change was covered by the lifetime of Alfonso Álvarez de Villasandino, the last of the troubadours, and Juan Alfonso de Baena, editor of the *Cancionero de Baena* (1445). The Marquess of Santillana has one Galician song; his grandfather was a noteworthy poet in this idiom. In prose the division between Galician and Portuguese was not impeded by literary convention, and we find on the Portuguese side the *Livros de Linhagens*, *Livro de Montaria*, *Leal Conselheiro*, *Demanda do Santo Graal* and the great chronicles of Fernão López and Zurara, forming a growing mass of differences in the late fourteenth and the fifteenth centuries from Galician works like the *Crónica Troyana* and *Crónica general de 1404* (partly Castilian). The last-named has *moy*(*to*) *froyto* *gibdade gāando régeo* (MGal. *rejo*) *iglesia* (MGal. *ilesia*) *obispo* (a castilianism), *-s* in *Roys Gomes Peres*, *-eu* in *saeu departeu oyeu*, *-o* in *fezo teuo disso*, and *che*, for Ptg. *mui*(*to*) *fruito cidade* *gado rijo igreja bispo Roiz Ruiz Gomez Perez saiu departiu ouviu fez teve disse te*. Such differences are slight, but they show that Portuguese and Galician had, by the fifteenth century, finally separated.

## MODERN PORTUGUESE

The years between 1500 and 1550 witnessed, in Portugal as in Spain, the transition from the linguistic conditions of the Middle Ages to those of the adult and imperial tongue. They were years of the intensest physical and mental activity. The patient explorations undertaken by Henry the Navigator southward along the African coast came within sight of their reward when Bartolomeu Díaz rounded the Cape of Storms in 1488, and were crowned by the arrival of Gama in Calicut in 1498. In the next fifteen years a dominion was established in the Indian Ocean by Almeida and the great Albuquerque, held by the tenure of key-positions at Ormuz, Diu, Goa, Cochin and Malacca. In a general way the African coasts

formed part of this scheme, in so far as they might be needed by the armadas in transit. Beyond the Straits of Malacca, Macau was a door into China from the south, Japan was reached by St Francis Xavier and Mendes Pinto, but Ternate, Amboina, Java and the Spice archipelago proved to be the dazzling source of Portuguese wealth. The intoxication of success afflicted the homeland, but at first stirred up aspiring minds to every form of excellence. Gil Vicente, the keenest observer of the time, was not slow to speak of the *fumos da Índia*, and to complain of the impoverishment of the countryside as the court and capital grew richer. Towards the close of the sixteenth century, the Portuguese thalassocracy was challenged by the Dutch, who had conceived the idea of sailing to the Spice Islands south of the monsoon belt. The struggle lasted with them and the English throughout the first half of the seventeenth century, while Portugal was unequally yoked with Spain, and ended by England's succession to Bombay and the Indian trade. Portugal was left in possession of most of those factories which she had held in strength to support her armadas, and her vague African claims lay dormant until they expanded into the colonies of Angola and Moçambique during the nineteenth-century scramble for Africa.

The discovery of the land of the Holy Cross, called Brazil from the brazil-wood found there, was a by-product of the Indian voyages, whether accidental or deliberate. From the date of Cabral's voyage in 1500 and throughout the century the colony attracted little attention. It grew steadily, however, and showed its mettle by expelling the Dutch from Pernambuco in 1654. From that time Brazil began to compensate Portugal for the loss of India, and its importance has grown on a series of booms—mahogany, sugar, diamonds, rubber, coffee. In 1808, when Junot occupied Lisbon, the Portuguese royal family fled to the huge colony, honouring it with the status of kingdom. Both João VI and Pedro II proved reluctant to return to the less wealthy motherland, and Brazil became an empire (1822) before following at last

the example of other American states and becoming a republic (1882).

The directions and dates of the Portuguese expansions have had the effect of limiting their importance for the history of the language. The earliest achievements lay in the old world, with the plants and animals of which civilization had long been familiar, at least in a distant fashion. Gama met in Calicut a Moor from Morocco; the Portuguese traders displaced their hereditary foes who spoke Arabic; the elephant, paraded through Rome at the orders of Manuel the Fortunate, was a monster new to the eyes of Europeans, but with a very old name. The Asiatic contribution to Portuguese is thus of restricted interest: *cha* and *chavena* 'tea' and 'tea-cup' we see the language borrowing directly from Mandarin Chinese (*ča*, *ča wan*), *azagaia* 'assegai' was borrowed afresh from Arabic to describe weapons used by African tribes, and *inhame* 'yam' is another witness to these voyages; *samorim* *naire* *sabaio* are names of Indian rulers or officers, of only local import. For many of the essentials of the new commerce—*cravo* 'clove' *pimenta* 'pepper' *especiarias* 'spices' *marfim* 'ivory'—there were already well-established names. On the other side the slow development of Brazil led to a marked Spanish priority in naming the plants, animals and institutions of the New World. Arawak, Carib, Nahuatl and Quechua names were applied to those objects which excited curiosity in Europe, and the Tupí languages of Brazil served only to supplement their rivals. The Tupi-Guaraní contribution is of great importance for the vocabulary of Brazilian Portuguese, where *oca* *uba* *catinga*, etc. are more exactly apposite than any other terms; but the Portuguese of Europe is satisfied practically with the terms which Spanish also has borrowed: *jaguar* *capibara* *ai* *mandioca* *tapioca*, etc.

The intellectual activities of the period between 1500 and 1550 were connected with the humanistic renaissance and the creation of that literature which culminated in Camões (*Lusiadas* 1572, *Rimas* 1595). The general nature of this influence has been indicated when we considered the develop-

ment of Spanish in the same epoch. In place of the French and Provençal borrowings of the medieval period (French: *achatar* 'buy' *dayan* 'dean' *Denis Diniz mester* 'necessary' *rua* 'street' *jardim* 'garden', etc.; Provençal: *assaz* 'enough' *freire* 'friar' *manjar* 'eat, meal' *trobar* 'compose verses', etc.) Italian suddenly rose to importance as the source of those artistic, military and commercial terms in Portuguese which were also borrowed by Spanish, as we have already noted. Under the Braganzas, as under the Spanish Bourbons, the stream of gallicisms commenced afresh, borne along on a vast literature of translations of pachydermatous style and idiom.

As in Spanish, this epoch witnessed a renovation of the Latin element in vocabulary, and 'etymological' orthography was pushed further in Portugal. In Portugal initial *sc- sp-* (*sciencia spirto*) are frequently found in texts of this period, and the 'Greek' *ph th ch* come down to the twentieth century, having only been eradicated by quite recent reforms. Latin neologisms were introduced with caution, and a hostile critic was able to discover no more than 118 in Camões. The model achievements of Portuguese prose and poetry were made while those who sought to enrich the language professed a creed of classic sobriety. After the death of Camões, which corresponded with the fall of the Portuguese state, gongoristic extravagances poured in from Spain; but they were identified with the foreign language, as the period was one in which Portuguese writers forsook Portuguese. With the inevitable reaction, in the eighteenth century, the simpler manner of *circa* 1550-80 was again exalted to high repute, all the more so as the leading poet, Bocage, deliberately modelled his verses and himself on Camões. Portuguese is, to a unique extent, the language of one inspired man.

At the opening of the Renaissance period, the great line of medieval chronicles had come to an end, and those of Fernão López were engrossed with care by the Manueline scribes. The best manuscripts of this author, therefore, show the extent of literary ground conquered by Portuguese and

the development of the language and its orthography on the threshold of the Golden Age. Garcia de Rezende's *Cancioneiro* (1516), with its wholly medieval outlook, is a faithful mirror of the court. King Manuel the Fortunate, intent on the Spanish alliance and on a policy of intermarriages, marks the zenith of a castilianizing epoch, which threatened to reduce Portuguese to the status of a dialect. The Castilian hegemony is felt in the earlier poems of Gil Vicente, whose dramatic activity lasts from 1502-36, over some of the years most fruitful in linguistic change: in his earlier works the serious characters speak in Castilian—a Castilian of Portuguese character; in the later they employ Portuguese. Castilian is the language he employs for all his ballads, or for dramatizing literary material drawn from Castile or from his general reading. In his language, as in his technique, Gil Vicente remains medieval. He is the last to be inspired by the wistful *cossantes*; after him popular improvisations take on the new quatrain form which lasts to this day. He is singularly sensitive to the different varieties of Portuguese: he distinguishes carefully between peasant and townsman, Christian and Jew, negro and gypsy. The peasants employ the archaizing dialect of Beira province, with *er* 'now, also', *semos* for *somos*, *dixe* for *disse*, *aito* for *auto*, *som* for *sou* 'I am', *quige fige* for *quis fiz*, *catar* for *mirar*, *casuso* 'up here', *omagem* for *imagem*, 2nd person plurals in *-ade(s)* *-ede(s)* *-ide(s)* for *-ae(s)*, etc. (which are employed by personages of standing). Characteristic of the plebs also are their archaic interjections (*bofá*, *aramá*, *samicas*, *dá ó demo*), and the vulgar forms of personal names. The Jews favour *oi* for *ou* (*doitor coisa moiros poica*); Greek goddesses lisp in what João de Barros calls *o gecear çigano de Sevilha*; the negro speaks Guinea-Portuguese (*a mi falla Guiné*) with ruinous morphology and syntax; and the Moorish witch puts *x* for *s*. His younger contemporary, Sá de Miranda, looks forward to a new era of Italianate and humanistic poetry, though his best work is in traditional metres. He vindicated, however, the literary worth of Portuguese, though also cultivating Castilian. António Ferreira,

the celebrated author of *A Castro* (1567), is the only poet of high rank who consistently refused to toy with Castilian. His verses bring us to the full development of the language in Camões, Diogo Bernárdez, Agostinho da Cruz, and their compeers in verse, with Barros, Castanheda, Couto and others in prose. A description of this stage is given by Duarte Núnez do Lião in his *Orthographia da lingoa portuguesa* (1576) and his *Origem da lingoa portuguesa* (1st ed. 1606, but composed before 1601). Among post-classical authors perhaps the most interesting from the stylistic point of view is Francisco Manuel de Melo, a convinced *conceptista* and one of the best prose-writers in either Spanish or Portuguese; he represents, however, a tendency which was not carried further by the contemporaries of Bocage. Bocage brings with him afresh the influence of France, which has increased with Romanticism (Almeida Garrett, Herculano), Realism (Eça de Queiroz), Parnassianism, Symbolism and other modern literary schools.

The changes carried out in the epoch under review affect vocabulary, the sounds and forms of the language, and the combination of words in sentences. Some of the consequences to vocabulary of the new experiences of that age have been indicated. To them we must add instances of the wear and tear of the language: words which have disappeared, as *FINIRE* *fíir fir*, replaced by *acabar*, *catar*, *mãer maer* *MANERE*, replaced by *fincar*; words which are dialectal only, as *RADERE* *raer rer*, *BASILICAS* *Baselgas*; and words which remain part of the standard tongue, though much transformed, as *FENESTRA* *feestra feestra freesta fresta* 'sky-light'.

The equation *ou* = *oi* is older than the Golden Age, and still exercises its influence on spoken Portuguese. *Ou* arises from Latin *AU* (*cousa pouca CAUSA PAUCA*) and *AL* + consonant (*souto outro outeiro SALTU ALTERU ALTARIU*); *oi* from metathesis in *-ORIU* (*Doiro coiro DURIU CORIU*), or from palatalization of *-CT-* (*noite NOCTE*). But by dissimilation *ou* gives *oi* (*coisa ouro oiro AURU*), and conversely *-ORIU* *-URIU* *-iro* *-ouro* (*Douro*). Half-learned words with *-CT-* give *ut*, as in Spanish; *auto*

*doutor* (later still, *t* preceded by an open vowel: *dôtor* spelled *doctor*). Hence also in primitive words like *noite* we have the alternative *noute*. Usage varies. Generally speaking, the literary forms employ *ou* but the colloquial is *oi*; the *Rua d'Ouro* in Lisbon is normally pronounced [d'oiru]. But while *coisa* is normal, *oitro* exists only in the vulgar speech of the Saloios, near Lisbon, and Gil Vicente gives *doitor poica*, etc., to his Jews, doubtless as inveterate townsmen of low social grade. The *ou* is a diphthong in Galicia and northern Portugal [ou], but in Lisbon and standard Portuguese it is a vowel [o], as in Spanish.

The medieval language is characterized by the numerous instances of vowels in hiatus. The disappearance of *-l-* or *-n-* left in contact vowels which did not at once coalesce, and the same was true of other lost consonants: *POPULU* *poboo* MPtg. *povo*, *GENERALE* *geeral* MPtg. *geral*, *MEDIETATE* *meatade* MPtg. *metade*, *TENERE* *têer* MPtg. *tér*, *PERSONA* *pessôa* MPtg. *pessoa*. Even in the *Cancioneiros*, representing the language of the thirteenth and early fourteenth centuries, these vowels were not always held apart; so that we meet *fe ben seer* as monosyllables alongside the normal hiatus-vowels of *creede loor seer rijir veer doo têedes*, etc. The orthographic tradition doubtless survived the hiatus, and was maintained by the consciousness of length (as in modern Galician) and open quality. Thus Brit. Mus. Add. MS. 20946 of Fernão López, which dates from the end of the fifteenth century, regularly maintains the two letters where the vowel has arisen from hiatus, e.g. *beesta* and *beesteiro* 'arbalist(er)' is not confused with *besta* *BESTIA* 'animal'. In the *Cancioneiro de Rezende* (1516) *moor fee beems* are monosyllables, *alguum* a dissyllable, *geeraçam* a trisyllable. In Alvaro do Couto de Vasconcellos's copy of Fernão López, executed in 1538, duplication of vowels occurs without cause (e.g. *Braaguaa* for *Bragaa* *BRA-CARA*), showing that the copyist is not aware of any valid distinction of length. The same is true of original authors of the same date. These longer vowels tend also to be pronounced open, and resist the tendency to obscure unaccented vowels.

This pronunciation, indicated by a grave accent, is still current in a number of words: *pádeiro* 'baker' Sp. *panadero*, *cáveira* 'skull' Sp. *calavera* CALVARIA, *geração* Sp. *generación*, *crédor* 'creditor', *Câmões*, *Bêsteiros*, *Rézende*, *côrdo* Sp. *colorado*. The contractions were accompanied by denasalization, by which OPtg. *víir viinr* became *vir*, *têer* became *ter*, *boôa bôa* became *boa*, etc. In the case of *éo éa*, Gil Vicente still maintained the medieval forms *alheo meo*, and Núñez do Lião protests in 1576 that these alone are correct; but Camões normally employs the modern forms *-eio -eia* (*arreceio rodeio alheio freio cheio*), though allowing himself the licence of the older forms in rhymes, e.g. for the latinisms *Cytherea Dea* he admits *arrecea*, for *Amalthea rodea*.

The ending *-ã* represents *-ANA*, but MPtg. *-ão* is the result of several earlier suffixes, as well as its etymological *-ANU*: *LANA lã lã* 'wool', *ROMANU Romão*. *-ONE* gave OPtg. *-om*: *RATIONE razom* 'reason', for which *razoam* begins to appear as early as the fourteenth century. Scribal tradition maintained *-om* in Brit. Mus. Add. MS. 20946 (Fernão López), for which the Torre do Tômbo MS. has regularly *-ão*. King Duarte's *Leal Conselheiro* (1428–38) has *irmaõ GERMANU*, and *carvom CARBONE*; but his *orfom ORPHANU* shows that this *-om* and *-ão* were not different to the ear. *-ONU -om*, as in *BONU boom bom* was a perceptibly different sound from *-ONE -om*, doubtless less open; and it has persisted to this day. The 3 Pl. of verbs also gave *-UNT -om*, which has the same history as *-ONE -om*. The suffix *-ITUDINE* appears in OPtg. *-idüe*, but already in the oldest texts had been assimilated to *-ONE* in the forms *-õe -õ*: *MULTITUDINE multidõe multidõ multidom*, and it accompanied *-ONE* when the latter was assimilated to *-ANU -ão* in the course of the fifteenth century. Finally, *-ANE* first appears as *-ã -am*, *CANE cã can cam* 'dog' *PANE pã pam* 'bread', and in the fourteenth century is distinguished from the *-ãa* of *-ANA* and the *-ão* of *-ANU*; but in the latter part of that century it fell in with the latter: *cão pão*. In the plural the original distinctions continue to be observed: *lã lãs*; *irmão irmãos*; *coração corações*, *certidão certidões*, *pão pães*; *bom bons*; *jejum*

*jejuns*; *bem bens*. The *Cancioneiro de Rezende* shows *-om* and *-ão* rhyming together in the instances above mentioned, so that the former was by 1516 at most a dialectalism and a scribal tradition.

As in Spanish, this period saw considerable progress in the evolution of the sibilants, though Portuguese did not transfer the voiced sibilants to the unvoiced order. Portuguese possessed, when the sixteenth century commenced, seven sibilants: *s*, (-*ss*), *-s*, *ç* *z*, *x*, *j* *ȝ*, *ch*, pronounced [ʃ ʒ s z ʃ ʒ Ȣ]. *Ç z* had originally the value of affricates [ʃ ʒ], but as early as 1277 *susesores* = *successores* appears in the Algarve, and *syngy* = *cinque* in Lisbon (1296). The Arabic transcription *sīn* proves that the sounds were not affricates in weak positions; but rather dorsoalveolar [s z]. *S* is still distinguished from *ç z* in dialects of Tras-os-Montes and Entre-Douro-e-Minho; it is there cacuminal, as in Spanish, i.e. pronounced by raising the tip of the tongue to the roof of the mouth, so that the place of greatest contraction of the buccal cavity corresponds to the tongue-tip, not the forepart of its back. This [ʃ ʒ] was easily confused with [ʃ ʒ], both by Mozarabs (*ximio xarope enxofre SULPHUR*), and by northerners (OPtg. *xe xi* SIBI OPtg. *pugi quigi* POSUI QUAESI OPtg. *prijom* MPtg. *prisão*). It is evident that [ʃ ʒ] were the sounds attributed to *ss s* at King Manuel's court, since Gil Vicente makes the *Moura Taes* (1519) turn all her *esses* into *exxes*. The same fact shows that the dorsal pronunciation of *ss s* was then identified with Algarve and the south, and in fact was continuous with the dorsal *s* of Andalusian Spanish. The adoption of this vulgarism by Lisbon led to its acceptance as the standard pronunciation. No difference was perceived between *s* and *ç* by the Lisbon-born (1671) D. Luis Caetano de Lima (*Orthographia*, 1736) nor by C. A. du Bruillar in 1700; but it was noted for Bragança in 1739. *X j* still possess their ancient values of [ʃ ʒ], though the latter has quite lost the affricate [ʃ]. *Ch* was an affricate [Ȣ] in standard Portuguese until the eighteenth century (c. 1739), when it passed to [ʃ], and so became identified with *x* [ʃ]. It seems probable, therefore, that for

Camões the sibilants were still [s z s z š ž č], though the southern values for *s* were gaining ground.

In conjugation and declension changes were taking place between 1500 and 1550 which led to the modern forms employed by Camões. The 3 Pl. -UNT had already become -ão. The 2 Pl. -TIS -TE remained -des -de until the middle of the fifteenth century. King Duarte's *Leal Conselheiro* (1428-28) has *podedes diredes achades notade consiirade façades parade* but also *dizee filhay louvees queiraes ponhaaes avisaae*. The chanceries continued to employ forms in *d* (*façades* 1462, *sabede* 1483), and Gil Vicente attributes them to plebeian characters, while those of standing employ such words as *passeae andae esperae*. Forms in -des still occur in Portuguese, either when following a nasal (*vindes tendes*) or another consonant (*pôrdes puderdes*) or in the conjugation of monosyllabic verbs (*ide ides credes vede*). The past participle in -udo lasted into the fifteenth century, when it gave way to -ido, and it was made to agree with the object in number and gender until well on in the sixteenth century. *Teúdo e manteúdo conteúdo temudo* remain, but without participial value. The present participle -nte appears as late as 1563, when Garcia da Orta says *estante em Goa*, and then yields to the gerund -ndo (*estando em Goa*). Miscellaneous differences between medieval and modern conjugation are: the loss of 1 S. preterite -i (*pugi puge quige* MGal. *pujen qujen* MPtg. *pus quis*); analogical substitution of *fizeste ardo sinto quereria* for *fezeste arço senço querria*; in the verbs 'to be', *sou seja esteja* for *som sam sia esté*; the restricted use of *haver* save in impersonal senses. Barros in his early romance *Clarimundo* (1520) could still write *como todas estas cousas houverão fim*.

Numerous minor changes affected nouns and minor parts of speech. Adjectives in -es -nte -or, frequently referring to persons, continued to be used as both masculine and feminine in the Golden Age of Portuguese; and those ending in unaccented -ez -es added a further -es in the plural: *ourivezes* MPtg. *ourives*. The medieval language possessed an atonic series of possessive pronouns (as *mha, ta, sa irmāa*), which was

lost before the language reached its maturity; and both then and in the Golden Age it was possible to prefix *aqu-* to *este* *ese*, as well as in *aquele*.

## GALEGO

On the break up of Galician-Portuguese towards the middle of the fourteenth century, the Galician dialect (*Galego*) entered upon its separate provincial career. From about 1350 to 1500 the language remained that of official documents drawn up in the province, highly conservative in its general conditions, but increasingly exposed to Castilian intrusion. *Galego* remained the conventional language of the courtly lyric not only in Galicia, but also in Castile to about the year 1400, and it was employed in the redaction of a few prose works, of which the most important was a translation of the Castilian *Crónica Troyana*. They were not numerous enough to constitute a prose literature. The prestige of Castilian meanwhile was growing both as an official tongue, and as the language of a wider culture. Castilian forms invaded Galicia. In a document drawn up at Santa María de Monferro on the 12th October, 1501, we find such castilianisms as *uno lo lamamento (llamamiento) hijos nyetos camino año*. The language sank to the status of a mere dialect which, in the sixteenth, seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, was rarely deemed suitable for legal documents, and possessed no literature. It continued to serve, in more or less corrupt forms, for family and general intercourse in the province; but it was held inappropriate for serious employment, as may be illustrated by a modern practice at Fereiros in Orense, where sermons and even private prayers are made only in Spanish. Attached to the orbit of Spain, Galician lacked the cultural acquisitions of Portuguese in its Golden Age, but received, somewhat passively, the words added to Spanish, particularly the names for new things, e.g. the italianisms *centinela escopeta piloto* and the americanisms *chocolate petate cacique tabaco furacán tomate canoa*. Qualitative improvements

had less cause to be adopted in dialects which had resigned their pretension to culture. A flood of castilianisms entered them, displacing quite adequate native words: *llano* for *chao* 'plain', *conejo* for *coello* 'rabbit', *güeco* for *oco* 'hollow', *güeso* for *oso* 'bone', *cual* for *cal* 'which', *ostede* for *vostede* 'you', etc. It is characteristic of these loans that they are needless, and in some cases vulgar (*güeso güeco* Sp. *hueso hueco* in correct speech). The invasion still persists. Railways have drawn the province closer to Madrid, and increased the demand for a language of more than local usefulness. The large towns—Vigo, Coruña, Santiago, Lugo—are centres for castilianization, apart from small groups devoted to the cult of the local tongue; and education is in Spanish. Galicians look for a career in literature or politics at the capital or emigrate in search of livelihood to the Argentine Republic. Several distinguished Spanish writers have been of Galician origin: the Dóña Rosalía de Castro, Countess Pardo Bazán, D. Ramón del Valle-Inclán. They have even exerted a provincial influence on the standard language, e.g. the re-employment of *-ra* forms of the verb in an indicative sense, or of *aquillotrar* 'change'. On the other side, not merely Castilian words, but Castilian pronunciation penetrates Galicia, notably the interdental pronunciation of *z*.

In the eighteenth century there were the beginnings of a revived interest in Galician. It was an age of antiquarian investigation. Father Sarmiento made a glossary of words heard in the district of Pontevedra. A poetical contest was held in 1708 in *galego*, and the vicar of Fruíme published various dialect poems in his works (1778–81). The source of strength was the practice of poetical improvisation by women, which had apparently descended unchecked from the most early times. A difference of form has been effected; whereas the ancient *cossantes* were in couplets, the modern improvisations are characteristically in quatrains. However, not merely octosyllabic quatrains have been employed in the popular poetry of modern Galicia, but various other metres: triplets and hendecasyllables with ternary rhythm

have been the most influential. In addition to the attachment of the peasantry to their maternal language, therefore, Galician enjoyed the support of a considerable body of spontaneous poetry—sometimes sly, at others pathetic, of varying æsthetic values but always intimate. It was on the basis of this poetry that the Galician literary revival of the nineteenth century took place, partly under the influence of federal theories as to the Spanish state and the influence of the Catalan Renaissance. A poetess of spontaneous felicity—Rosalía de Castro—wrote with a freshness of style that contrasted with the academic formalism of her contemporaries in Madrid. Eduardo Pondal exploited local inspiration in some happy verses, and Curros Enríquez attempted to use the local language and technique on themes of general human concern. *Galego* poetry still continues; an academy protects regional studies; and there have been serious attempts at creating a prose literature.

The area lacks complete unity in modern as in ancient times, and one of the obstacles to a Galician revival is dialectal particularism within *Galego*. provincials speak of four dialects, corresponding with Coruña, Lugo, Orense and Pontevedra. The forms, however, are much more interwoven than such an account supposes, but at least these names indicate centres of irradiation for certain forms. Thus the opposition of *chan* to *chao* (PLANU) is mainly one between Pontevedra province and those of Coruña and Lugo, but shows exceptions on either side; *tu* is a disjunctive pronoun in Lugo and much of Orense, against *ti* in Coruña and Pontevedra; a 3 Pl. preterite *-ano* is chiefly heard in the northerly parts of Coruña; analogical forms *faguer figuen tanguer* for *facer fijen tanger* pertain chiefly to Orense; and the interdental *z* radiates outward chiefly from Pontevedra.

The system of sounds employed by Galician is, when compared with Portuguese, notably archaic, apart from a tendency to break up under Castilian pressure. The latter is exerted both by speech and by orthography. In the former respect the Castilian [θ], as we have seen, tends to be attached

to *ç z*. In the latter, the fact that the *til* is not used in Castilian with vowels, causes Galician nasal vowels to be indicated by unmodified vowels or by *n*. This influences pronunciation in two directions: either the Galician vowel is denasalized, or the nasal element may be reconsonantized. Hence Gal. *homes virges quintas patrós negús irmao(s) chao(s)* Ptg. *homens virgens quintas patrões nenhuns irmão(s) chão(s)* and Gal. *gando monllo painzo* Ptg. *gado molho* but *painço*. The Galician *l* is not velar before another consonant, as in Portuguese, but tends to acquire a nasal resonance. In plurals it is often restored from the singular, partly by Castilian influence: Gal. *iguás criminás papés aqués fusís mos azús* (by assimilation from older plurals in *-aes -das*, etc.) or *catedrals vals vales mortales papeles aqueles fusiles moles azuls*.

Galician vowels which result from contraction of vowels left in contact by loss of *-l- -n-* are still longer and more open in quality than uncontracted vowels, though the memory of this process is not preserved in all cases. This difference of quantity is no longer felt in Portuguese, where only the qualitative distinction remains in certain words. Similarly, though the final vowels are much relaxed in *Galego*, they do not completely lose their timbre as in Portuguese. To Ptg. *ui* corresponds Gal. *oi* in *moito coito fruta coitelo poiden* Ptg. *muito cuito fruta cuitelo pude*. In the consonant-system, Galician belongs to an area which includes Spanish in two important respects: *b v* are identical [b], as in northern Portuguese also, but not in standard Portuguese; the sibilants have been brought to a single voiceless order. The former affects not only Spanish, but also the greater part of the Catalan domain; the latter extends beyond Spanish into Valencian. Thus *z > c* in *decer facer viciño*, and *s* represents both the older *-ss-* (*paso*) and *-s-* (*casa*). Indications of the cacuminal pronunciation of *s* [ʃ] are those cases in which it passes to a palatal as in *NASU najo* 'nose' *registir* 'resist' *quien* *QUAESI*, etc. This *j* is pronounced as a voiceless palatal affricate and so equivalent to *ch* [č], but there are cases in which it has been identified with the fricative *x* [š]; and in some localities the voiced

pronunciation remains (as at Fereiros: *cruzes jardís janeiro jolho*). The passage of -st- to -ch- is characteristic of Galician, ancient and modern, though it was also known in the oldest Portuguese: *FECASTI fijeche figueche QUAESISTI quijeche*. Thus the 2 S. preterite is in Galician -che, but Pl. -stes. A local and relatively modern change in Galician is one which converts initial *g* (before *a o u*) into an aspirate [h], which is frequently, but not correctly, identified with Sp. *j* [χ].

The Galician verbal system includes the personal infinitive characteristic of the whole Galician-Portuguese group, and also metaphony of the tonic vowels. In the way of personal endings, Galician still has traces of -d- in the 2 Pl., uses -ch- for -st- in the preterite (2 S. and occasionally 2 Pl.), and nasalizes the final vowel of 1 S. preterite as either -in (OPtg. Gal. -i) or -en. Thus for tenses formed from the present stem the personal endings are -s - mos (*d*)es *n*, and for the preterite *en* (*i in*) *che* (*ches ste stes*) - *mos stedes* (*chedes*) *ron* (*no*). The accentuation of the 1, 2 Pl. imperfect indicative and subjunctive is as in Latin (*cantabámos falasémos*, etc.) and not withdrawn to the first syllable of the suffix as in Spanish and Portuguese (Ptg. *cantábamos falásemos*). The 2 Pl. imperative has various forms: *amade amá amai amade*. OGal. verbs in -ir formed their 3 S. preterite in -eo, Ptg. -iu. Strong verbs show many analogical forms in Galician which are not to be found in Portuguese owing to the activity of speakers unchecked by instruction. **DICERE** gives, for instance, *dicir decir dicer decer*, and **FACERE** *facer far fayer faguer*, with preterite *fijen figuen*. In the imperfect indicative *ir* has *iba ia iña*, and the preterite is *fum fuche (foche) foi*, etc. Pronouns and other small words of frequent occurrence show many forms that differ from Portuguese, as Gal. *unha duos* (as well as *dous*) *ise il miño* (as well as *meu*) *mia miña ña cal alguén ul dulo*, etc., Ptg. *uma dous ese ele meu minha qual alguem* and Sp. *en donde está él, de donde viene él*. Very notable in MGal. is the dative *che* (Sp. Ptg. *te*), because of its wide use as a dative of vague interest, to give vivacity to the conversation by continually bringing into it the auditor as an interested party: *s'un rayo*

*che fende de súpeto a barca* 'if a thunderbolt suddenly smashes the boat'. The accusative is *te*, but *che* occasionally occurs.

On Galician consult V. García de Diego, *Elementos de gramática histórica gallega* (Burgos, 1909).

### PORTUGUESE DIALECTS

A sense of the difference between the archaizing northern dialects and the standard language of the Portuguese capital appears at the beginning of the sixteenth century in the plays of Gil Vicente, whose peasants use the colloquialisms of Beira province, and receives expression from the first Portuguese grammarian, Fernão de Oliveira, author of a *Grammatica da linguagem portuguesa* (1536), from João de Barros in 1540, and from Duarte Núnez do Lião in works composed in the last quarter of the century. These three authors quote peculiarities of the *minhoto* dialect: the use of *b* for *v*, the retention of the ancient *-om*, and the insertion of *y* to prevent liaison when two *aa* come together: they cite *fizerom amarom taballiom cidadom, bida bos bossa, ay alma, ay agua*, for *fizeram amarão tabalião cidadão, vida vos vossa, a alma, a agua*. These features are held by the northern dialects in common with Galician, and represent the gradual transition from that tongue—as the parent language—to the Portuguese of Lisbon. They have occupied their present ground continuously from the early days of the Reconquest, when the Douro was established as the frontier against Islam, with the result that there is greater local diversity between village and village in this region than elsewhere in Portugal, and there is a blurring of the linguistic frontier against Spain. At Miranda, on Portuguese soil, Leonese is spoken in a form almost Portuguese, and in compensation, Portuguese is spoken at Ermisinde; while there are curious transitional dialects used at Riodonor (twin villages, the one Spanish and the other Portuguese), at Guadramil and at Sendim. In the south the frontier is not transgressed save at Olivenza, near Badajoz, where Portuguese still holds to an older political frontier that lay

to the east of the existing line. Thanks to the autonomy of each commune within this area it is only possible to describe the northern dialects *grosso modo*. For a more exact treatment it would be necessary to trace the area occupied by each several phenomenon, noting its centre of diffusion, its frontiers and islets of resistance at certain points.

Speaking generally, then, there exist in northern Portugal, between the Douro and Minho, many local speeches which are transitional between Galician and Portuguese. They fall into two main divisions: those of Tras-os-Montes and those of Entre-Douro-e-Minho. The former lead eastward to Leonese dialects of Spanish. The latter are commonly called *minhotos*, from the colloquial name for the province (*Minho*); but it is convenient to keep this term for the dialects spoken on the Minho itself (on its higher or lower course), by way of distinction from those employed on the Douro (similarly divided into higher and lower). To cover the whole area a latinism, *dialectos interamnenses* (subdialects: *minhoto—alto e baixo* and *duriense—alto e baixo*), is employed, to march with the *dialectos trasmontanos* (of which the frontier varieties are the *dialectos raianos*). Crossing the frontier, as the Reconquest first did, into the hilly inland province of Beira, we meet with *beirão*, a dialect in the course of which the northern peculiarities are shed and those of the south acquired. Estremadura, Alemtejo and Algarve form the southern area, which is that of the standard tongue. Towards the extreme south this southern Portuguese acquires distinctive features, due to instances where the local habit of speech has developed beyond the point attained by the capital.

The bilabial pronunciation of *v* as *b*, normal in Galicia, extends over the whole northern and central area—Entre-Douro-e-Minho, Tras-os-Montes and Beira. It connects Portuguese with one of the most characteristic speech-habits of the Peninsula, from which Lisbon and southern Portugal dissent, in company with some Catalan dialects. Similar in extension is the pronunciation of *ch* as an affricate [č], for which Lisbon and the south has employed a fricative [ʃ]

since about 1700. The ancient distinction between *s* [ʃ] and *ſ* [s] is maintained along the frontiers of Entre-Douro-e-Minho and Tras-os-Montes and in parts of Beira; but at other places in these provinces the distinction has been lost, as it has in literary Portuguese and throughout the south. The conservation of the old *-ONE-* *-om* takes place on the Lower Minho and Douro, and also in a fraction of Beira contiguous to this region. The termination is sometimes attributed to words where it has no historic justification, as CANE *cõu* Ptg. *cão*. In the Minho district also we find characteristic developments of purely local range, such as the de-nasalization of final *-m* (*birge foro* Ptg. *virgem foram* 'virgin, they were'), the change of *l* + consonant into *ur* (*urma siurba úrtemo* Ptg. *alma silva último* 'soul, wood, last'), and the diphthongs formed from *é ó* in contact with a labial (*piéra tiém̥po puóco fuônte* Ptg. *péra tempo pouco fonte* 'pear, time, little, fountain'). Lisbon shows some local characteristics, such as the occasional use of an *r*-grasseýé [R] as used in French, and the value [eɪ] for *ei*, with the corresponding nasal diphthong. Characteristic of the southern dialects (*alemtejano*, *algarvio*) is the tendency to reduce diphthongs to single vowels, viz. *eu* to *é* and *ou* to *ö*. The latter is the accepted practice in standard Portuguese wherever *ou* is not respelled *oi* (or so pronounced contrary to the orthography): *cousa* is pronounced [kózə]. The southern dialects, however, have not merely *côsa*, but also *Dês, morrê-lhe* Ptg. *Deus, morreu-lhe* 'God, died to him'. These peculiarities ascend through Beira to portions of Tras-os-Montes. Similarly the diphthong *ei*, at Moncorvo in Tras-os-Montes, in Lower Beira and throughout the south, becomes the monophthong *é* (*madéra* Ptg. *madeira*); in the north it is pronounced [eɪ], but in Lisbon [eɪ]. In some cases *ai* may be reduced to *a* in the south, as *vas* for *vais*. Both *u* and *o* are sounds which, in the south, change their basis of articulation to some extent, the latter becoming *ö* in the diphthong *öu* for *ou*.

The rich store of archaic or obsolete expressions which have survived in the dialects to the north of the Douro makes

*minhoto* and *trasmontano* unrivalled reservoirs of pure Portuguese upon which the literary tongue may draw.

This section and all that follow are based on J. Leite de Vasconcellos, *Esquisse d'une dialectologie portugaise* (Paris, 1901).

### INSULAR PORTUGUESE

Madeira and the Azores (Ptg. *ágor* 'hawk') appear on the Catalan map of 1351, based on the previous voyages of Arab and Christian merchants, and were occupied by the Portuguese in the first half of the fifteenth century. Concerning Madeira a romantic legend is told of the runaway lovers Robert Machin and Anne d'Arfet, said to have been driven out of their course from England to France by a storm which threw them up on the uninhabited Madeira. Effective settlement was undertaken by a certain João Gonçálvez *o Zarco* ('the blue-eyed'), despatched by Prince Henry the Navigator in 1420 from the Algarve, after having already touched at Porto-Santo in 1418. The occupation of the Azores was somewhat later, 1432-57, by Gonçalo Cabral. This also was an incident in the vast scheme of African exploration directed by Henry from his naval academy at Sagres, in Algarve.

The Portuguese here spoken is, like the Spanish of the Canaries, essentially European, and moreover reproduces the principal features of the southern dialects. The simplification of diphthongs and the occurrence of modified forms of *o u* are signs of its immediate parentage in Portugal. In the islands *ó* becomes *u* in *flur amur* Ptg. *flor amor* 'flower, love'. The Azores simplify *-ão* to *-ã* (*mã* for *mão* 'hand'), and in Madeira *cousa* is pronounced with a special diphthong approximating to *a* (*coasa*), and the quality of the *lh* is such as to resemble the *l* of Portuguese.

# CHAPTER IX

## THE PORTUGUESE LANGUAGE OVERSEAS

### IN AFRICA

Portuguese seamen entered the Senegal River in the year 1445. The event aroused the keenest excitement in Portugal, as it seemed to justify the dream of attaining powerful alliances behind the back of the Moslems of Morocco. It was recorded in Gómez de Zurara's *Conquista da Guiné*, and even when other explorations had eclipsed its fame, and the political hope had proved empty, it was from the Guinea coast that barbaric wealth was drawn and Guinea slaves appeared in the streets of Lisbon. They formed, in fact, by the opening of the sixteenth century a recognized comic type. Gil Vicente's *Fragoa d'Amor* (1525) introduces a negro *falando Guiné* or *língua do preto* for the amusement of King Manuel's court, both in Portuguese and Spanish. Though to some extent conventional this language of the negro has some of the features of the extant Guinea-Portuguese: the negro drops the *-s* of the plural in nouns (*por quatro dia*), confuses the persons of the verb (*das* for *dais*), employs a possessive pronoun for a relative (*boso* for *vos*), fails to pronounce *lh* (*abéia oio*) and *l r* (*maruvada* for *malvada*, *doromia* for *dormia*), simplifies the diphthong *ou* in the southern fashion (*matô* for *matou*), and is vanquished by gender (*bosso roupas*), etc. Actually Portuguese of this kind—insular Portuguese, with certain grammatical and phonetic modifications—is to be found in S. Tomé, Principe and Annobom (where it is called the *fá d'Ambú*—*fala d'Anobom*) in the Gulf of Guinea, and in Portuguese settlements on the coast. Formerly it existed in Saint Helena also, one more among the naval stations on the road to India. Portuguese is also spoken in the Cape Verde Islands.

The situation of the language in the great colonies of Angola and Moçambique is quite different. Under the old naval system these coasts were held but slightly, and the hinterland has been occupied only since the end of the nineteenth century. The Portuguese there used is official. The natives speak their own dialects, which tend to be much affected by official Portuguese. The reverse influence is slight. On the east African coast the language has a certain currency as far north as Zanzibar.

### INDO-PORTUGUESE

The main strength of the Portuguese thalassocracy in the sixteenth century lay on the western fringe of the Indian subcontinent. The capital was Goa. It was held for Portugal not merely by European troops and settlers, but also by the class of Eurasians deliberately multiplied by the policy of the great Afonso de Albuquerque. Thanks to them the use of Portuguese has, in various places, outlasted the empire, so as still to be talked under French or English rulers. The sites chosen for occupation were those which provided ready defence against superior land powers, with an especial preference for islands (as Diu, Goa, Bombay, Ceylon), and nowhere did the language penetrate into the hinterland. At Goa and in Ceylon Portuguese has been used in local forms for a considerable body of religious literature. Diu and Daman are the most northerly of the line of old Portuguese factories. Next follows the region of the *dialecto norteiro* or *dos norteiros*, spoken at Bombay, Salsette, Bassein, etc., in the region ceded to England as part of Catharine of Braganza's dowry. To the south of Bombay we find the mid-point of the coast-line occupied by the Portuguese possession of Goa; on the Malabar coast the language is used by the Christians of Mangalor, Cananor and Cochin in English territory, and Mahé in French India; at Pondicherry (French possession), Tranquebar, Cuddalore and Karikal, Portuguese is spoken by Christians on the Coromandel coast. The island of Ceylon was first encountered by the Portuguese in 1503, but its sub-

jugation did not take place until towards the end of the century. Many of its natives became Christians and adopted the Portuguese tongue. About the middle of the following century the Dutch dispossessed the Portuguese, and strove also to eradicate the language, which was so well established that even the native ruler spoke it 'excellently well'. Finally, the English replaced the Dutch at the close of the eighteenth century, bringing with them the vast political and commercial prestige of our tongue; but Portuguese continues in use among certain classes, and supports a literature of hymns and devotional books.

The discussion of Indo-Portuguese forms belongs rather to the student of mixed (or 'Creole') languages than to our present purpose. One or two peculiarities alone need be mentioned. They are, in the first place, a prolongation of southern Portuguese dialects, and agree most intimately with the insular Portuguese of the Azores and Madeira. The diphthongs are either reduced to simple vowels or pronounced with an enfeebled semivowel (*azéte ôtro pôco feito*). As the occupation of Goa dates from the sixteenth century, the pronunciation of *ch* brought by the settlers was the affricate [č], which is still in use. *L* tends to become *lh* in the *dialecto norteiro* as in Madeira, and the plural of *oficial* is *oficials* (Ptg. *oficiais*), which may be compared with the Azorean *azul azules*. *Lh* becomes *y* in Ceylon (*oyá foya* Ptg. *olhar folha* 'look, leaf'); *r* ceases to be a vibrant, and at the end of words disappears; and *j* has here and there (as in Ceylon) the affricate pronunciation of an English *j* [j].

To these characteristics we must add, particularly in morphology and syntax, usages that are specifically Creole. The concords of gender and number are not maintained in conversation, the one indication being deemed sufficient for all the components of an expression (*bonito orta* 'pretty garden', *três animal* 'three animals'). Reduplicated plurals occur, showing an attempt at simplification of the plural idea (*Norteiro*: *fi-fi=filhos* 'sons'; *Diu*: *cão-cão* 'dogs'). The rules for the collocation of personal pronouns with reference to the verb are, as in Brazil, misapplied, and in Ceylon

prepositions are made to follow their noun through Dravidian influence. The verbal paradigm is altered, generally in an analytic sense (e.g. preference for the perfect tense over the preterite; or with *já* 'already'). A phonetic habit that occurs throughout this area is the loss of all final vowels: *dinheir*, *minh filh*, *ru*, *navi* = *dinheiro*, *meu filho* (*minh* < *minho* cf. *minha*), *rua*, *navio*, 'money, my son, street, ship'.

### MACAU AND MALAYA

Macau, situated at the mouth of the Si-Kiang, was occupied in 1557, and is still a Portuguese possession. The language there spoken has interesting analogies with that used in India and Ceylon, such as the simplification of *ei ou* to *é ô*, the affricate pronunciation of *ch j* [c j], save when the latter becomes *z* (*jardim* but *greza* = *igreja* 'church'), the loss of vibration in the *r*. Adjectives retain invariably the masculine form, and reduplicated plurals are frequent (*porco-porco* 'pigs', *nhônhônhâ* and *nhônhâ-nhônhâ* as plural of *nhôna* (*senhora*) 'young girl'). Past time is indicated with the help of an adverb (*eu já vesti*). Portuguese is spoken in Java, with Malayan admixture, at Malacca (conquered by Albuquerque in 1511) in the *dialecto malaqueiro* and by some Malaccan settlers in Singapore, and in the island of Timor. In the last case there is no Creole dialect properly speaking, but owing to contact with Macau there is some use of *crioulo macaista* among those who have recently arrived from China and servant-girls who have come from the interior. It represents for them an intermediate stage in the acquisition of correct Portuguese.

### BRAZILIAN PORTUGUESE (BRASILEIRO)

The development of Portuguese in Brazil presents some features in common with the Creole dialects of the Middle and Far East, in addition to peculiarly American elements; but it differs from them by its cultural claims as the native expression of so vast a society. The demand for a national

language arises in Brazil from the same sense of well-being, politically, socially and economically, which has given cause for the Argentine claim to an *idioma nacional argentino*. Brazilian authors are conscious of the gap that lies between the spontaneous and the literary expression of their thoughts. Authors complain, in perfect Portuguese, of the difficulty they find in expressing their ideas in a mould that does not serve for polite conversation. 'Our grammar' (says Professor J. Ribeiro, *A língua nacional*, São Paulo, 1921) 'cannot be exactly that of the Portuguese. Regional differences demand a difference of style and method. The fact is that when we correct our language, we risk mutilating the ideas and feelings that are our personal contribution. It is not our language that we correct; it is our spirits that we subject to an inexplicable servitude.' To bridge the gap numerous grammars and treatises on style are issued, which seek to define the literary usage; but as the authority for the latter is that of classical Portuguese literature, formalized and standardized, the idiom is neither Portuguese proper (which is continually recreated from the vernacular), nor Brazilian, but a third tongue called by Mário de Alencar *o idioma da seita gramatical*. Such a situation is not satisfactory; but its remedy is not easy. Various persons have been provoked into tempestuous onslaughts on the language of Portuguese writers, individually or collectively; but these attacks can hardly be sustained without compromising the usages of good society in Brazil. More numerous than the points of difference are those of contact: *a língua portuguesa será eternamente a língua do Brasil*. It is manifestly absurd, for instance, to banish the *Lusiadas* from Brazilian schools, as one patriot suggests, merely because Camões does not happen to devote to the discovery of Brazil more than a couplet. The maintenance of Luso-Brazilian linguistic unity is a necessary condition of its international importance; so that the situation calls for a certain amount of concession on either side. Portuguese must accept as 'correct' certain syntactical and phonetic features which strike them as provincial or unidiomatic; and Brazilians must continue to

reject alterations which break down the scaffolding of the language. This solution, in its essentials, is already adopted by responsible stylists, and the greater concession required from Brazilians is generally made.

The question of the *língua nacional* or *dialecto luso-brasileiro* refers mainly to the use made of the European heritage; but the most obvious basis for such a language is the new experience offered by America, and which leads to *nativismo* or *indianismo* in literature. To express this experience Brazilian has drawn on the Indian languages, and chiefly on Tupi-Guaraní. These additions to the lexicon have been made available for Portugal also, in so far as Portuguese writers may have cause to mention Brazilian beasts or plants or scenery. The difference in this respect between the two speeches consists in the much greater frequency of such words in Brazilian. Owing to the relatively late occupation of Brazil many American words are part of the common European stock of americanisms, learned in the Antilles, Mexico or Peru by Spanish discoverers, and passed by them into Portuguese. In such cases, there may also exist in Brazilian a Tupi loan-word of more exact local significance. Thus beside *canoa* we find Tupi *iga* and *ubá*; in the place of *bohío* 'hut' we find Tupi *oca*; alongside *maiz*, current in Portugal, we find Tupi and Brazilian *ubatim*. In other cases, where the object named was first encountered in Tupi-Guaraní territory, its name has equal currency in Spanish (through the Plate region) and in Portuguese-Brazilian: e.g. *banana*, *curare*, *mandioca*, *tapioca* and the animals *jaguar*, *tapir*, *aí*, *tucão*. The classes of words borrowed are chiefly the names of things, and especially of animals and plants peculiar to the country. Of such a nature are *capibara*, *coati*, *manatí* (Tupi?) *piranha*, *tamanduá*, *yacaré* and *cajú*, *cajoeira*, *ipecacuanha*. Features of Brazilian scenery often require special names: *sertão* 'unoccupied land, interior' is of European provenience, but *catinga* 'the thin white scrub of the Brazilian Campos', *capão* (Sp. *capón* in Plate countries) 'forest-clumps in the Campos', *capoeira* 'partially cleared land partially overgrown', *igapó*

'forest tracts liable to be flooded by the rivers of North Brazil', are necessary local terms. The life of the natives is relatively little noticed by these loan-words, since it had little to offer that could compare with the civilizations of Mexico and Peru. *Tupan* stands for a vague supernatural 'God, lightning'; *tapuya* 'non-Tupí' serves to denote an 'enemy'; *sarbacana* is a 'blowpipe', *tembetá* 'lip-plug', *tucapú* a kind of shirt, together with the words for hut and canoe already cited.

In the use made of its European inheritance Brazilian literature shows considerable diversity. Impeccable academic Portuguese, or Portuguese with only involuntary *brazilianisms*, is characteristic of many of the best authors. A regional Portuguese appears in the works of José de Alencar, author of *Iracema*, *O Guarani* and other 'nativist' novels, standing at the head of the emancipated literature of his country. His speech employs the Brazilian order of pronouns, the affirmative form of questions, copious *indianisms*, but maintains the grammatical framework unimpaired. The *Poemas bravios* of the popular bard Catulo Cearense are typical of the attempt to write in the *idioma brasileiro*, based on the vernacular and local forms. These forms, however, include many vulgarisms which would not be part even of the colloquial idiom of educated persons, represented more exactly by the regionalism of Alencar. To reach academic Portuguese it is admitted that the educated Brazilian must submit his manner of speech to a further formal test. There occurs, therefore, in Brazil the same oscillation between extremes both in writing and in speech as we have already seen in the Spanish of America; and in the same fashion we must give specific attention to those matters in which the former colony departs most from the parent tongue without affirming that these points of contrast are universal or even deemed reputable in educated circles.

The parallel established between the Spanish and Portuguese of America extends also to the general description of their disagreement with the European tongues. Apart from

the Indian vocabulary already mentioned—the Tupi-Guaraní character of which is shared by the Spanish of Paraguay and the Plate—Brazilian differs from Portuguese usage in respect of archaisms, independent evolution, vulgarisms, dialectalisms, and creolisms. It is based on Portuguese of the south, approaching closely to insular Portuguese, and there are phonetic and morphological changes which connect it with the creole dialects of the African coast. Over the vast sub-continent we do not expect to find a completely uniform tongue, but the regional differences do not offer the rich dialectal diversity of northern Portugal. Those dialects go back to the romanization of the Peninsula and conditions moulding the primitive Reconquest; but Brazilian ascends only to the Portuguese of King Manuel's court and time, which is far enough to allow of words and sounds since rendered archaic in Europe, but not to permit of deep dialectal fissures. Brazil also, like Spanish America, was liable to constant increments of Portuguese influence during the whole colonial period.

The vowel-system of Portuguese as spoken in Brazil is readily distinguished by the greater clarity of atonics, which, as in Galicia, do not lose their timbre [e o]. An archaic feature is the retention of the [ɛ] in the diphthong *ei* and the nasal diphthong *em*. In Lisbon this element has passed into an obscure *a* [e], but the Brazilian usage is corroborated by the northern dialects. The denasalization of a final accented nasal diphthong also occurs in northern Portugal, and leads in Brazil to pronunciations like *capitá fazia vivia* for *capitão fazião vivião*. Final accented *a* tends, conversely, to become a nasal diphthong (*papāj mamāj* = *papá mamá*), and final *é* (sometimes due to loss of *-s*) becomes an oral diphthong (*féi tréi francei* = *féz três francés*). Marks of southern provenience are the simple vowels which arise from the diphthongs *ou* *ei eu*, and the feebleness of the *yod* in *ai*: *pôco andô madêra cuiê* = *pouco andou madeira colheu* and *caixa* (with much relaxed *i*). The *yod* of terminations tends to be lost (*consciênciâ matera negoço palaço* = *consciência matérâ negócio palácio*). In hiatus also vowels are reduced (*miô* from *melhor*), and a relaxed

*a* [ɐ] is heard frequently before initial *l r* or between consonants in an initial group (*arrespirar alembrar falô Cláudio* = *respirar lembrar flor Cláudio*). The above spellings are imitative, and are not used save to indicate colloquial forms. The standard orthography ignores the actual pronunciation, or else causes it to conform to the spelling.

The Brazilian *s* differs somewhat in timbre from the Portuguese, being described as less palatal. No distinction is made between *s* and *ſ* nor between *z* and the voiced sound corresponding to *s*. In this respect Brazilian shows its kinship with southern and standard Portuguese, but it does not transform *s* and its congeners into [ʃ ʒ] at the end of a syllable before a consonant. At the end of a word, where Portuguese uses only the voiceless [ʃ], Brazilian speech frequently drops the *s* (*cinco dia, trez ano, nós tudo, uns negoço* for *dias, anos, todos, negócios*, etc.) or replaces it with *ȝ* (*trei fei* = *três fêz*). This loss of *-s* affects the plural of nouns and adjectives since the plural sign is added to one member only of the group (*duas galinha* 'two hens'). In the verb the second person singular loses its final *-s* in this fashion, and the third plural is denasalized; while a combination of both processes may bring the first plural to the same form. Thus *come* may be *comes, comem, comemos*: *nós tudo fazia* = *nós todos fazíamos*. We meet also fuller forms of 1 Pl. like *nós havemo de andá* = *nós havemos de andar* 'we must go'; and the termination of the first conjugation in 3 Pl. may be the archaic *-om* in *dero* = *derom* = *deram*. Parallel with this loss of *-s* is the frequent loss of final *-r*, which particularly affects the infinitive, together with the interchange of *l r* which leads sometimes to the disappearance of *-l* also. Thus *salvado lealdade* become *sarvado lêardade* (with the open pronunciation of atonic *e* usual in Brazil), and *mel fel* become *mê flê*; while conversely *animal* gives *animar*. Loss of *-r* is exemplified in the infinitives *andá sé tá* = *andar sér estar*, in the future subjunctive *quizé* = *quizer*, and in *muié doutó mió faló* = *mulher doutor melhor flor*. *R* disappears from groups in *sempe dento* = *sempe dentro*. The metathesis of *er re* is current as in all vulgar Portuguese and Spanish: *perzidente* = *presidente*. The

lateral palatal *lh* is imperfectly conserved. It has passed to *l* (as in Madeira) in the pronunciation of some speakers (*aleio* for *alheio*, failure to distinguish *cavaleiro* from the castilianism *cavalheiro*), but normally *lh* has become *y*: *muié cuié véio oio paréia* = *mulher colher velho olho parela*. This development is found in European Portuguese only at Olivenza, on Spanish soil, where it may be due to the influence of Spanish vernaculars; but it takes place in most of the creole dialects, commencing with the Cape Verde Islands. The delateralization of *lh* occurred, no doubt, spontaneously in each region. Medial *-d-* may be lost: *tou* = *tôdo*. The deformation of Portuguese pronunciation is essentially vulgar in Brazil, and even when one or other of the above-mentioned sounds occurs in a person's speech, he feels bound to restore the standard pronunciation in reading poetry or making a speech.

There are some notable differences between colloquial Brazilian syntax and Portuguese, and they ascend into literature with authors of regionalist tendencies. What chiefly arouses remark is the failure to observe the traditional Portuguese order in grouping pronouns with the verb. In Portuguese, as in old Spanish, the personal pronouns of the unaccented order (*me te se*, etc.) are enclitics, with a strong tendency to gravitate towards the first accented word of the clause. They cannot, therefore, head a clause (*tenho-o* 'I have it', *não-me lembro* 'I do not remember', *assim se exprime* 'he expresses himself thus', *o homem que-me viu* 'the man who saw me'), but they do not rest on a noun (*o vizinho deu-lhe uma maçã* 'the neighbour gave him an apple'), nor on a co-ordinating conjunction like *e mas porem contudo todavia*. In Brazilian, as in modern Spanish, the pronouns are either enclitic or proclitic, and attached to the verb only. They thus frequently head the sentence (*me disse* 'he said to me'), intervene between the noun-subject and the verb (*a pobrezinha se cansou* 'the poor thing grew weary'), or follow the verb even when a preceding particle makes enclisis possible (*não lembro-me* 'I do not remember'). There is even a tendency to avoid these unaccented pronouns by using the disjunctive series

(*vi élle, encontrei éla = vi-o, encontrei-a* 'I saw him, met her'). There is a tendency in Brazil, also, to ask questions in the affirmative form (*Qual das bonecas tu amas?* 'Which doll do you like?') *Quando eu hei-de ter uma rôla?* 'When am I to have a dove?'). The imperative is used negatively as well as positively (*não faz isto* 'don't do this'), and there is a noteworthy extension of the use of the personal infinitive to serve for subordinate verbs which differ in person from the principal—a case in which Portuguese uses finite subordinate clauses. Thus 'he brought this for me to see' is *trouxe isto para mim ver* (Ptg. *para eu ver*), 'he made them all sit down' is *fez todos sentarem*. The association of prepositions with certain verbs differs from Portuguese practice, frequently through archaism: *olvidar de tudo, subir num galho, parecer com, passar uma lição no filho* (Ptg. *dar uma lição ao filho*).

In respect of vocabulary colloquial Brazilian shows many peculiarities. Among the particles we find *ansim* for *assim* (cf. OSp. *ansi ansina*, current in America), the dialectal *munto* for *muito*, *di si* for *de se*, *inté* for *até*, the use of *a* for *para* and the vulgar contractions *prá* *pró* *prú* = *para a*, *para o*. *Gintem* appears for *vintem* (a coin), *passo* for *pássaro* 'bird', and special senses are attached to common words like *doce* 'sugar' Ptg. *açúcar*, *queimada* 'ground cleared by burning for planting', *montaria* 'canoe', *sítio* 'place for agriculture', *manteiga* 'oil', etc. Sometimes Brazilian has made a choice between alternatives different from that made in Portugal: 'train' Braz. *trem* (cf. Sp. *tren*) Ptg. *combóio*. In minute respects the two countries exert different preferences: Braz. *minha senhora* Ptg. *minha mulher* 'my wife', Braz. *descarrilhou* Ptg. *descarrilou* 'ran off the rails', Braz. *uma casa mobiliada* Ptg. *mobilada* 'a furnished house'. Somewhat remarkable is the effusion of diminutives in Brazilian, doubtless due to the same cause (native nurses) as leads to the perpetuation of nursery terms in American forms of Spanish: *sinházinha* (from *sinhá* = *senhora*), *merunhanha* 'light drizzle', or (with a gerund) *dormindinho* 'sleeping lightly'.

## APPENDIX

### PHONETICS AND PHONOLOGY

The foregoing discussion has involved the use of phonetic symbols and of certain phonological conclusions. Peninsular phonetics should be studied in T. Navarro Tomás, *Manual de pronunciación española* (Madrid) and the general scheme published in *Revista de Filología*, ii, A. R. Gonçalves Vianna, *Portugais* (Leipzig, 1903), and J. Arteaga Pereira et P. Barnils, *Textes catalans avec leur transcription phonétique* (Barcelona, 1915). A. R. Gonçalves Viana compared the three languages in *Romania*, xii. The outlines of the phonology of the three Romance languages are found in the works noted in the first chapter. However, for the purpose of immediate reference, I give a tabular account of these two aspects of Peninsular philology.

#### I. PHONETICS

(C g mean c g before a front vowel, e i; k means occlusive c)

##### *Vowels*

- A. Sp. *a* is medial in timbre, but becomes slightly velarized in contact with *u l*. Ptg. Cat. accented *a* is more open than the Spanish, and is considerably velarized in contact with *u l* [a]. Spanish unaccented vowels retain their timbre and merely decrease the tension of utterance. Ptg. unaccented *a* becomes [e], as *a* in Eng. *above*. Cat. unaccented *a e* are pronounced [ə] before the accented syllable.
- E. Sp. *e* is medial in timbre. It is more open in a closed syllable or in contact with *j g rr* and more closed in an open syllable or one closed by *n* or *s*. Ptg. *é* Cat. *é* are more open than Sp. *e* and have the value [ɛ]; Ptg. *é* Cat. *é* are more closed [e]. Ptg. unaccented *e* is much relaxed [ə]. Cat. unaccented *a e* are pronounced [ə] after the accented syllable.
- I. Sp. Ptg. Cat. *i*. The sound varies according to circumstances but retains its timbre.
- O. As for *e*. Sp. [o] Ptg. Cat. [ɔ ɔ]. Unaccented Ptg. Cat. *o* becomes [u].
- U. Sp. Ptg. Cat. *u*. Varies, as for *i*. It is sometimes whispered as an unaccented final in Ptg. [w] is found in some varieties of Chilean pronunciation. It resembles [u], but without rounding of the lips.

*Semi-vowels and semi-consonants.* These are principally *i u* in combination with a more open vowel. When that vowel comes first, the diphthong is described as decreasing, and the *i u* as semi-vocalic [i ɥ]; in the reverse case, the diphthong is said to be increasing and the *i u* semi-consonantal [j w]. The distinction is useful in philology, since the former lead to vocalic, the latter to consonantal changes.

For sake of brevity, any element akin to semi-vocalic or semi-consonantal *i* is called *yod*.

*Nasal vowels.* In Ptg. *a e i o u* are pronounced [ã ë ì õ ù] beneath the sign ~ or before *m n* in the same syllable. The *m n* has then no consonantal value, but the *m* indicates a labial semi-vowel [ɥ].

### *Consonants*

Nasal consonants take the point of articulation of the following consonant. In all three languages there is regressive assimilation, by which the first of two consonants may be voiced or unvoiced to agree with the second, e.g. Sp. *rasgar*, with [z]. In Cat. absolute finals are unvoiced.

*Occlusives.* Voiceless [p t k] Sp. Ptg. Cat. *p t c qu* (before *e i*). [kw] Sp. *cu* Ptg. Cat. *qu* (with a diacritic before *e i*). Voiced [b d g] Sp. Ptg. Cat. *b d g gu* (before *e i*). [gw] Sp. Ptg. Cat. *gu* (with a diacritic before *e i*). Sp. Cat. Gal. NPtg. *v = b*. These occlusives become fricatives [b ð g] in weak positions, i.e. when not initial nor preceded by *m n* (or *l* for *d*). The two sounds are so related that substitution of the fricative for the occlusive does not denaturalize the pronunciation. In Catalan the occlusive occurs more frequently than in Sp. Ptg., for instance in the group *bl*.

Peninsular occlusives differ from English ones in the absence of any aspiration with *p t k*, or any unvoicing of *b d g*.

*Fricatives* [b ð g]. Labiodental [f] Sp. Ptg. Cat. *f*. [v] SPtg. Catalan dialectal *v*. Bilabial [ɸ] occurs in some varieties of Chilean Spanish; it corresponds to a *f* without closure of the lips. Interdental [θ ð] Sp. *c z*, and *z* before voiced consonant. At Malpartida de Plasencia *c z* are two distinct sounds, the one voiceless, the other voiced; but in Spanish they are both voiceless.

The *sibilant fricatives* are complex. *s z* are alveolar. Their varieties are the cacuminal [s ɿ], pronounced with the tip of the tongue rising to the roof of the mouth; the coronal [s ɿ], and the dorsoalveolar [s z], pronounced with the tip of the tongue resting on the lower teeth, and point of articulation between the forepart of the back of the tongue and the alveoli. Sp. *s* is [s]. The coronal pronunciation occurs in Andalusia (see p. 218), and the dorsoalveolar [s] in southern Andalusia and America. In Sp. [z] occurs only through the influence of a following consonant. Cat. *s* is [s], but before a voiced consonant or between vowels [ɿ]. Cat. *ss*, used between vowels, is [s]. Cat. *z* is [ɿ]. But [s z] also occur. Cat. *ç = ss s*. At Bragança, in Portugal, *ss s* are [s ɿ], but *ç z* are [s z]. In standard

Ptg. *s* - *ss* - *ç* are [s], - *s* - (between vowels) *z* are [z]. Before a consonant Ptg. *s* *z* palatalize to [ʃ ʒ] according as the consonant is voiceless or voiced, and when absolute finals *s* *z* are both [ʃ]. This palatalization does not occur in Brazilian-Portuguese. [ʃ ʒ] are palatals, OSp. *xjg*, Ptg. *xjg*, Cat. (i)*xjg*. Ptg. *ch* is [ʃ].

Palatal [ʃ] Sp. Ptg. Cat. *y i* (consonantal or semi-consonantal). Velar [w] Sp. *hu*-, Sp. Ptg. Cat. *u* (semi-consonantal). Velar [χ] voiceless and vibrant, Sp. *jg*. Laryngeal [h] is the Andalusian and American pronunciation of *h* Lat. *f*, and also results from *s* at the end of a syllable. The latter may be slightly voiced [h].

*Affricates.* These are treated by some phoneticians as compounds of an occlusive (generally represented by *t*) and a sibilant fricative. The alveolar affricates [tʃ ʒ] occur in Cat. *ts tz* and western Leonese *tsabe tsobu*. The palatal affricates [č ʃ] are Cat. *ch tx* and *tj (i)g*, Sp. *ch* [č], Gal. NPtg. *ch* [č]. It was the general pronunciation of Ptg. *ch* until the eighteenth century. *Tr* in Chilean *otro* [ótr̩o], with palatal *t* and fricative *r*, closely resembles the affricate [č]. Sp. init. *y* and after *l n* is [ʃ].

*Laterals.* Sp. Ptg. Cat. *l* is [l], but in Ptg. Cat. it is velarized at the end of a syllable [ɫ]. In Spanish it is then only slightly modified in a velar sense. The *l* may be interdental, dental or alveolar, according to the following consonant in Spanish. The palatal [ʎ] is Sp. Cat. *ll* Ptg. *lh*.

*Vibrants.* Sp. Ptg. Cat. *r* has one vibration [r]; but initially, or after *n* or *s*, or when written *rr* it is a multiple vibrant [r̩]. Finally it is relaxed, and disappears in Catalan and in Andalusia. The relaxed fricative pronunciation occurs in Chile, both simple [r] and compound [ɾ], and this resembles English *r*. The French *r-grasseyé* [r̩] is sometimes heard in Lisbon. In correct Spanish *r* assimilates a preceding *s* in the form of an additional vibration.

*Nasals.* Bilabial [m]. Labiodental (before *f*) [m̩]. Dental and alveolar [n]. Palatal [ɲ] Sp. *ñ* Ptg. *nh* Cat. *ny*. Velar [ŋ]. In Sp. Cat. the nasals take the position of articulation of the following consonant. In Ptg. they are consonants only initially or between vowels. Otherwise *m* indicates a nasal diphthong, and *n* a nasal simple vowel.

## II. PHONOLOGY

Latin	Rom-	Spanish	Sp.	Ptg.	Cat.	Examples
<i>TONIC VOWELS</i>						
AE Ě	ε	e ia a ie	ie	ε	ε	Moz. <i>ben Alporchel Gudiel Cazalla</i> <i>šahmiilla</i> . Leon. <i>siellas Peni-</i> <i>alla ya</i> . Arag. <i>tene kien</i> . Sp. <i>viene tierra viento cielo</i> , but <i>lecho</i> (before a palatal). Ptg. <i>vem</i> <i>terra vento céu leito</i> . Cat. <i>vé</i> <i>terra vent cel</i> , but <i>llit</i> (before a palatal)
Ö	ø	o uo ua ue	ue	ø	ø	Moz. <i>bono nohte Ferreirola welyo</i> <i>porco puerco</i> . Leon. <i>tuorto vortos</i> <i>duano puable Quoencha poesta</i> <i>Valbuena</i> . Arag. <i>malluolo Uosca</i> <i>Fuanti Lascuarre Pueio Aragués</i> . Sp. <i>bueno luego majuelo puente</i> , but <i>ojo noche</i> (before a palatal). Ptg. <i>bom logo forte noite olho</i> . Cat. <i>bó lloc fort</i> , but <i>nit ull</i> (be- fore a palatal)
OE Ě Ī	ɛ	e	e	ɛ	ɛ	Sp. Ptg. <i>mesa verde vez ameno</i> . Cat. <i>mesa vert</i>
Ö Ü	ø	o	o	ø	ø	Sp. Ptg. <i>sol monte lodo</i> . Cat. <i>sol</i> <i>mont llot</i>
A	a	a	a	a	a	Sp. Ptg. <i>andar</i> . Cat. <i>anar</i>
Í	i	i	i	i	i	Sp. Ptg. <i>cinco</i> . Cat. <i>cinc</i>
Ü	u	u	u	u	u	Sp. <i>luna</i> . Ptg. <i>lua</i> . Cat. <i>lluna</i>
<i>Palatalizations</i>						
AI (ARIU ASI A + C > ai) AGINE	ai ein en	ai ei e ein en	e	ei agem	e atge	Moz. <i>baika atarey pandair yanair</i> <i>carreyra Ferreira plantay bega</i> . Leon. <i>baica ueika ueca ferrajne</i> <i>ferreynes ferrenes molineiras</i> . Arag. <i>terzero uerdaderos Veila</i> <i>peitet Reimon Remon</i> . Sp. <i>vega</i> <i>ataré pandero llantén herrero</i> <i>pechar</i> . Ptg. <i>veiga feito beijo</i> <i>cavaleiro</i> , but <i>chantagem</i> . Cat. <i>vega fet bes ferrer</i> , but <i>ferratge</i> Sp. <i>tibio vidrio cirio</i> . Ptg. <i>tibio</i> <i>vidro cirio</i> . Cat. <i>tebi vidre ciri</i> Sp. <i>lluvia rubio sucio</i> . Ptg. <i>chuva</i> <i>ruivo sujo</i> . Cat. <i>pluja roig</i>
E + yod						
O + yod						

Latin	Rom-	Spanish	Sp.	Ptg.	Cat.	Examples
<i>TONIC VOWELS (continued)</i>						
ORIU		oiro	uero	oiro	uri	Leon. <i>teriturio cobertoira Doyro</i>
URIU		uero		ouro		Boisone Bueso Sp. <i>cuero Duero</i>
<i>E + I</i>						
						agüero <i>cobertera</i> . Ptg. <i>coiro</i>
						Douro <i>agouro agoiro</i> . Cat. <i>auguri</i>
						Sp. <i>hice vino</i> . Ptg. <i>fiz vim</i> . Cat. <i>fiu</i>

*Velarizations*

AU	au	au ou o	o	ou	oi	o	Moz. <i>lausá</i> . Leon. <i>sauto soutu</i>
AL + cons.	al	au ou o	o	ou	al	o al	ouro <i>xosa</i> . Sp. <i>losa cosa soto</i>
		al	al				<i>salto oro</i> . Ptg. <i>lousa cosa soutu</i>
A + U		ou o u	u	ou			<i>salto ouro ciro</i> . Cat. <i>cosa altre</i>
							OSp. <i>sope ove</i> . MSp. <i>supe hube</i> .
							Ptg. <i>soube ouve</i>

*Hiatus*

é ò		i u					Sp. <i>mío mia judío tua sua</i> . Ptg. <i>meu minha judeu judia teu tua</i>
-----	--	-----	--	--	--	--	--

*ATONIC VOWELS (other than final)*

A	a	a	a	a	a	a	Sp. Ptg. Cat. <i>amar</i>
Í Ë Ë AE	e	e	e	e	e	e	Sp. Ptg. Cat. <i>mesura</i>
í	i	i	i	i	i	i	Sp. Ptg. Cat. <i>mirar</i>
Ü Õ Õ	o	o	o	o	o	o	Sp. <i>orgullo</i> . Ptg. <i>orgulho</i> . Cat. <i>orgull</i>
AU	au	au ou o	o	ou	o		Moz. <i>Laujar Mourqât</i> . Leon. <i>outeiro otero auctorigare obtorigare</i> . Sp. <i>otero otorgar posar</i> . Ptg. <i>outeiro outorgar pousar</i> . Cat. <i>posar otorgar</i>
							Sp. Ptg. Cat. <i>mudar</i>
Ü	u	u	u	u	u	u	

*FINAL VOWELS*

A	a	a	a	a	a	a	Sp. Ptg. Cat. <i>mesa</i>
I E AE	e	e	e-	e-	e-	-	Sp. <i>pared ved ven sol mar cortés</i>
							<i>paz noche rey hace nueve Lope</i>
							(OSp. <i>nog faz nuef Lop</i> ). Ptg. <i>parede vem sol mar noite rei faze</i>
							<i>nove</i> . Cat. <i>nou ben set rei ve</i>
							<i>sol mar</i>
O	o	o -	o	o	-		Moz. <i>pandair yenair Gudiel bono</i> .
U	u	u o -	o	o	-		Sp. <i>bueno enero Gudillo</i> . Ptg. <i>bom (bõo) janeiro castelo</i> . Cat. <i>bo ou</i> . Glos. Sil. <i>kematu asfitos</i>

Latin	Rom-	Spanish	Sp.	Ptg.	Cat.	Examples
<b>VOWEL OF SUPPORT</b>						
<b>INTERTONICS</b>						
e      Cat. <i>pare pere</i>						
Sp. <i>huérfano limpio duda deuda yerno sesenta castigar tilde prólogo</i> . Ptg. <i>órfão dívida dívida genro sessenta til</i> . Cat. <i>orfe dubte gendre titol próte</i>						
<b>CONSONANTS</b>						
(Strong position is at beginning of word or of syllable after another consonant; weak position is between vowels or between a vowel and <i>r l</i> )						
<i>L</i>						
Initial	l	ll y l š	l	l	ll	Moz. <i>lauša Laujar yengua</i> . Ast. <i>lluna tsuna</i> . Sp. <i>luna losa lengua</i> . Ptg. <i>lua lousa língoa</i> . Cat. <i>lluna llengua</i>
Strong	l	l	l	l	l	Sp. <i>hablar</i> . Ptg. <i>falar</i> . Cat. <i>faula</i>
Weak	l	l	l	-	l	Sp. <i>cielo salir</i> . Cat. <i>cel</i> . Ptg. <i>céu sair</i>
Final	l	l	l	ł	ł	Sp. Ptg. Cat. <i>mal</i>
Doubled	ll	ll y ž	ll -l	l	ll	Sp. <i>caballo</i> [kabálo -jo -žo] mil. Ptg. <i>cavalo mil</i> . Cat. <i>cavall mill</i>
<i>N</i>						
Strong	n	n	n	n	n	Sp. Ptg. Cat. <i>ni</i>
Weak	n	n	n	-	n	Sp. <i>landa mano</i> . Ptg. <i>lã mão ter vir</i> . Cat. <i>tenir</i>
Final	n	n	n	m	-	Sp. <i>bien</i> . Ptg. <i>bem</i> . Cat. <i>bé mà vé orfe</i> ( <i>bens</i> , etc.)
Doubled	nn	ñ -n	ñ -n	n	ny	Sp. <i>año paño</i> . Ptg. <i>ano pano</i> . Cat. <i>any pany</i>
<i>M</i>						
Strong	m	m	m	m	m	Sp. <i>cama llama</i> . Ptg. <i>cama chama</i> . Cat. <i>om flama</i>
Weak	mm	m	m	m	m	Sp. <i>harén</i> . Ptg. <i>harem</i> . Cat. <i>Guillem</i>
Double	m	n	n	m	m	
Final	m	n	n	m	m	
<i>R</i>						
Str. Double	r rr	(r)r	(r)r	(r)r	(r)r	Sp. Ptg. <i>rosa garra</i> . Cat. <i>rosa esquerra</i>
Weak	r	r	r	r	r	Sp. Ptg. Cat. <i>pero</i>
Final	r	r -	r	r	-(r)	Sp. <i>mujer</i> . Ptg. <i>molher</i> . Cat. <i>mulle(r)</i> . Arag. <i>nullé mulles</i>

Latin	Rom-	Spanish	Sp.	Ptg.	Cat.	Examples
	ance	dialects				

*CONSONANTS (continued)*

	S						
Strong	s	s	s	s	s	Sp. <i>soy</i> . Ptg. <i>sou</i> . Cat. <i>soc</i>	
'Impure'	is	es	es	es	es	Sp. <i>estoy</i> . Ptg. <i>estou</i> . Cat. <i>estic</i>	
Weak	[z]	s [z]	s	s [z]	s [z] -	Sp. Ptg. Cat. <i>rosa</i> (OSp. Ptg. Cat. [z]; MSp. [s]) (Cat. <i>veible</i> )	
Final	s	s h -	s	s [š]	s	Sp. <i>más</i> . Andal. <i>mihmo ma'</i> . Ptg. <i>mais</i> . Cat. <i>més</i>	
Doubled	ss	ss	s	ss	ss	OSp. Ptg. Cat. <i>passar</i> . MSp. <i>pasar</i>	

*P T C [k]*

Strong	p t c	p t c	p t c	p t c	p t c	Sp. <i>pasar tener castigar</i> <i>queso</i> ( <i>qu</i> =[k] before <i>e, i</i> ). Ptg. <i>passar ter castigar queijo</i> . Cat. <i>passar tenir casa quiet</i>
Weak	b d g	p t c	b d g	b d g	p t c	Moz. <i>boyáta merkatal</i> . Arag. <i>marito capeza cocote</i> . Leon. <i>baséliga tidulare La Sagra</i> . Sp. <i>mercado marido cabo cogote conde</i> (OSp. [b d g]; MSp. [b d g]). Ptg. <i>caber saiba cada lago liberdade</i> . Cat. <i>llibertat comte vegada naba</i>
Final	t c	-	-	-	-	Sp. <i>ama sí aquí</i> . Ptg. <i>ama sim aquí</i> . Cat. <i>ama si aixi</i>
Doubled	p t c	p t c	p t c	p t c	p t c	Sp. Ptg. Cat. <i>copa</i> . Sp. <i>hasta</i> . Ptg. <i>até</i> . Sp. <i>pequeño</i> . Ptg. <i>pequeno</i> . Cat. <i>petit</i> . Sp. Ptg. Cat. <i>vaca</i>

*B D G*

Strong	b d g	b d g	b d g	b d g	b d g	Sp. <i>buey dar gozo</i> . Ptg. <i>boi dar gozo</i> . Cat. <i>bou donar goig</i>
Weak	b	b v u	b v u	b v u	b v u	Sp. <i>cabu beber cautivo</i> . Ptg. <i>bébedo beudo cavalo</i> . Cat. <i>haver heure beure cavall faula paor</i>
[b d g]			-	-	-	
	d	d -	d -	d -	- u	Sp. <i>nudo nido frío</i> . Ptg. <i>desnudo ninho nû</i> . Cat. <i>cru veure</i>
	g	g	g	g	g	Sp. <i>negro llaga jugo migaja</i> . Andal. <i>miaja</i> . Ptg. <i>negro chaga</i> . Cat. <i>negre plaga</i>
Final	d				u	Cat. <i>peu creu</i>

Latin	Rom- ance	Spanish dialects	Sp.	Ptg.	Cat.	Examples
<i>CONSONANTS (continued)</i>						
						<i>F</i>
Strong	f	f h	h - fr fu	!	f	Moz. Leon. Arag. <i>fillo</i> . Andal. <i>jamelgo</i> . Extrem. <i>jechu</i> . Cast. <i>hijo</i> <i>hecho</i> <i>frente</i> <i>fuente</i> . Ptg. <i>feito</i> <i>filho</i> . Cat. <i>fei</i> <i>fill</i>
Weak		v -	v -	v	f v	Moz. <i>proiectura</i> . Sp. <i>provecho</i> <i>dehesa</i> . Ptg. <i>proveito</i> <i>deveza</i> . Cat. <i>profit</i> <i>proiecte</i>
<i>V=B</i>					u	Cat. <i>breu</i>
<i>Final</i>						
						<i>W</i>
German		g	g	g	gu g	Sp. <i>ganar</i> <i>guerra</i> . Ptg. <i>ganhar</i> <i>guerra</i> . Cat. <i>guany</i> <i>guerra</i>
Arabic		w	gu	gu o	gu	Sp. Ptg. Cat. <i>guad-</i> Ptg. <i>Odiana</i>
						<i>H</i>
Latin	-	-	-	-	-	Orthographic in Sp. <i>haber</i> . Ptg. <i>haver</i> . Cat. <i>heure</i>
German}		- h f	- h f	- f	-	Sp. <i>arpa</i> <i>farpa</i> <i>fardido</i> <i>fonta</i>
Arabic }		- h f	- h f	- f	- f	<i>yelmo</i> <i>Alhambra</i> . Ptg. <i>farpa</i> <i>Alfama</i> <i>forro</i> <i>alfageme</i> . OCat. <i>alforro</i>
						<i>Ć</i>
Strong	c	c [s]	c [θ]	c [s]	c [s]	Sp. Ptg. <i>cinco</i> . Cat. <i>cinc</i>
Weak	z	z [s]	c [θ] < z	z [z]	z [z]	Sp. <i>hizo</i> <i>diciembre</i> . Ptg. <i>feze</i> <i>dezembro</i> <i>vizinho</i> . Cat. <i>desembre</i> <i>vei</i>
Final		z [s]	z [θ]	z [š]	u	Sp. <i>paz</i> <i>diez</i> . Ptg. <i>paz</i> <i>dez</i> . Cat. <i>pau</i> <i>deu</i>
						<i>J G D I</i>
Strong	j g	j g y x	j g -	j g	j g	Moz. <i>Junqueira</i> <i>yenair</i> . Leon. <i>Yeluira</i> <i>Junco</i> . Astur. <i>xente</i> . Gal. <i>xente</i> , etc. Sp. <i>enero</i> <i>her-</i> <i>mano</i> <i>junco</i> <i>jornal</i> <i>Elvira</i> <i>gente</i> (from <i>yente</i> with <i>ye</i> from <i>ñe</i> ). Ptg. <i>janeiro</i> <i>irmão</i> <i>junco</i> <i>jornal</i> <i>gente</i> (with original <i>g</i> ) <i>junho</i> . Cat. <i>gener</i> <i>germà</i> <i>gent</i> <i>junc</i> <i>jorn</i> <i>joc</i>
Weak		- y			t j	Sp. <i>rey</i> <i>saeta</i> <i>vaina</i> <i>reina</i> <i>treinta</i> <i>peor</i> . Ptg. <i>rei</i> <i>rainha</i> <i>trinta</i> <i>peior</i> . Cat. <i>rei</i> <i>trinta</i> <i>veina</i> <i>pitjor</i>

Latin	Rom- ance	Spanish dialects	Sp.	Ptg.	Cat.	Examples
<i>CONSONANTS (continued)</i>						
<i>Consonantal Groups</i>						
<i>PL CL FL</i>	<i>pl cl</i>	<i>pl cl fl</i> Initial	<i>pll, etc.</i> <i>x ts ch</i> <i>y</i>	<i>ll</i> <i>ll l</i>	<i>ch</i>	<i>pl cl</i> <i>fl</i>
						<i>PL: Moz. plantain plâna. Ribagorza plorar plaza. Arag. plorar. Leon. xano. Sp. chopo (western loan-word). Sp. llorar llantén llano but placer. Ptg. chão chantagem but prazer. Cat. pla plantatge</i>
						<i>cl: Rib. claro. Arag. claro. Leon. xamado xosa. Astur. tsabe. Sp. llamar llave but clavo claro. Ptg. chamar chave but cravar cravo. Cat. clamar</i>
						<i>FL: Rib. flama. Arag. flama. Leon. Xainiz. Sp. llama hallar Llambla but Lambra Laínez lacio and flor flaco flojo. Ptg. chama achar Chaves cheiro but OPtg. frol MPtg. flor frouxo. Cat. flama</i>
<i>After m n</i>				<i>ch</i> <i>ll</i>	<i>ch</i> <i>ch</i>	<i>pl</i> <i>cl</i> <i>fl</i>
<i>Medial</i>						<i>Sp. ancho hinchar henchir. Ptg. encher. Cat. omplir. Sp. resollar allegar. Ptg. achegar. Cat. aplegar</i>
<i>BL GL</i>						
<i>Initial</i>	<i>bl</i>	<i>bl</i>	<i>bl</i>	<i>br</i>	<i>bl</i>	<i>Sp. blando blanco. Ptg. brando branco. Cat. blanc</i>
	<i>gl</i>	<i>gl l</i>	<i>gl l</i>	<i>gr</i>	<i>gl</i>	<i>Sp. landre lirón latir but gloria. OPtg. grolia</i>
<i>Weak</i>	<i>bl</i>	<i>bll bl</i>	<i>ll</i>	<i>br</i>	<i>ul</i>	<i>Rib. dobllar. Sp. trillar chillar but hablar. Ptg. obrigado but falar. Cat. faula</i>
<i>TL CL GL</i>	<i>tl cl gl</i>	<i>ll y</i>	<i>j</i>	<i>lh</i>	<i>ll</i>	<i>Moz. welyo. Leon. Arag. uello viello. Sp. ojo oreja conejo viejo hinojo teja reja but siglo. Ptg. olho relha rolha serralha velho governalho coalha abelha. Cat. ull abella relha</i>
<i>QU</i>	<i>qu c</i>		<i>cu c</i>	<i>qu c</i>	<i>qu c</i>	<i>Sp. cuando cuarenta cuajar catorce quedo quien. Ptg. quando quarenta quedo quem. Cat. quan quiet catorze</i>

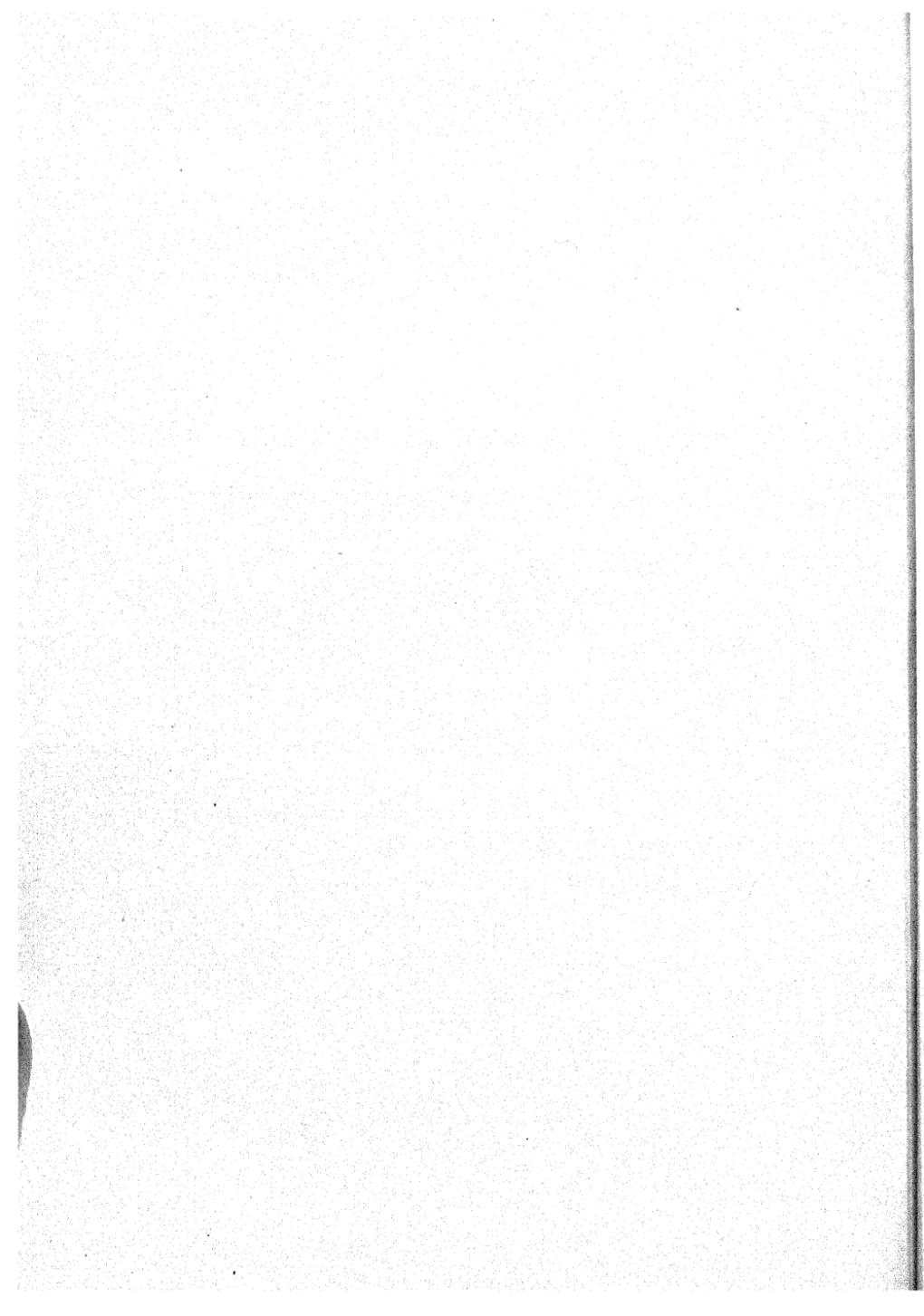
Latin	Rom- ance	Spanish dialects	Sp.	Ptg.	Cat.	Examples
<i>CONSONANTS (continued)</i>						
<i>CT</i>	<i>ULT</i>	<i>ct lt</i> <i>ct xt</i> <i>ht it</i>	<i>ch</i>	<i>it</i>	<i>it</i>	Moz. <i>noxe truhta lahtairuela</i> Arag. <i>feito peito muito</i> <i>mucho</i> . Leon. <i>confaita leito</i> <i>feichu muito</i> . Sp. <i>noche trucha</i> <i>lecho pechar mucho ocho lechuga</i> <i>hecho</i> . Ptg. <i>feito leito leite</i> <i>muito</i> . Cat. <i>set nit llit vuit but</i> <i>molt</i>
<i>X CS PS ULS</i>						
<i>Initial</i>			<i>x&gt;j</i>	<i>s</i>	<i>ix is</i>	<i>(i)x s</i>
<i>SC</i>			<i>s</i>	<i>s</i>	<i>s</i>	<i>ls</i>
<i>ST</i>		<i>ç</i>	<i>z</i>			<i>Sp. dejar mejilla cojo seis fresno</i>
<i>Tod</i>	<i>bi</i>		<i>bi</i>	<i>bi</i>	<i>ig</i>	<i>caja pujar soso</i> . Ptg. <i>deixar eixo</i>
	<i>api</i>		<i>ep</i>	<i>aib</i>		<i>frouxo coixa seis puxar ensôsso</i> .
	<i>cj</i> <i>ti</i>		<i>z&gt;[θ]</i>	<i>ç</i>	<i>- ss</i>	<i>Cat. cuixa sis caixa pols</i>
						<i>Sp. salterio</i> . Orthographic <i>ps=s</i>
						<i>Sp. ciencia centella mecer peces</i> .
						<i>Ptg. sciênciâa mexer peixes</i> . Cat.
						<i>centella peixes pêixer</i> .
						Moz. Sp. <i>Zaragoza Écijamozárabe</i>
						Sp. <i>rubio</i> . Cat. <i>roig</i>
						Sp. <i>sepa queña</i> . Ptg. <i>saiba caiba</i>
						Sp. <i>razón pozo pereza</i> . Ptg.
						<i>razão juizo Galiza</i> . Cat. <i>raô</i>
						<i>perea menassa</i>
	<i>after</i>		<i>ç&gt;z</i>	<i>ç</i>	<i>ç</i>	Sp. <i>fuerza verguenza oazar ter-</i>
	<i>cons.</i>					<i>cero</i> . Ptg. <i>força caçar terceiro</i> .
		<i>di gi</i>	<i>y -</i>	<i>i</i>	<i>j tj</i>	Cat. <i>força calça tercer</i>
						Sp. <i>rayo poyo correia</i> . Ptg. <i>raio</i>
						<i>meio correia</i> . Cat. <i>raig mig puig</i>
						<i>major corretja</i>
	<i>after</i>		<i>ç</i>			OSp. <i>orçuelo berça goço</i> . MSp.
	<i>cons.</i>					<i>z [θ]</i>
	<i>li</i>	<i>li ll y</i>	<i>j</i>	<i>lh</i>	<i>ll</i>	Moz. Leon. Arag. <i>fillo muller</i> .
						Sp. <i>hija mujer ijada paja majuelo</i>
						<i>hoja mejor</i> . Ptg. <i>filho folha</i>
						<i>melhor palha molher</i> . Cat. <i>fil</i>
						<i>muller</i>
<i>mni</i>	<i>nj</i>		<i>ñ</i>	<i>nh</i>	<i>ny</i>	Sp. <i>caloña señor</i> . Ptg. <i>senhor</i>
<i>ndi</i>						<i>Espanha aranha vergonha</i> . Cat.
<i>ari</i>	<i>air eir</i>		<i>er</i>	<i>eir</i>	<i>er</i>	<i>senyor vergonya</i>
	<i>er</i>					See under vowels, above
<i>eri</i>	<i>eir er</i>		<i>uer</i>	<i>oir</i>	<i>ur(i)</i>	Sp. <i>madera</i> . Ptg. <i>madeira</i>
<i>ori</i>	<i>oir</i>					See under vowels, above

Latin	Rom- ance	Spanish dialects	Sp.	Ptg.	Cat.	Examples
<i>CONSONANTS (continued)</i>						
<i>Yod</i>	asi		es	eij	es	Sp. <i>besar</i> <i>beso</i> . Ptg. <i>beijar</i> . Cat. <i>bes</i>
	ssi	x	x>j	ix	(i)x	Sp. <i>bajar</i> <i>rojo</i> . Ptg. <i>baixar</i> <i>roxo</i> . Cat. <i>baixar</i>
	sci sti	x	ç	x	x	Moz. <i>faſa</i> . Leon. Arag. <i>faxa</i> . Ptg. <i>faixa</i> <i>enxada</i> . Cat. <i>axada</i> <i>faixa</i> . Sp. <i>hacinas</i> <i>haza azada</i> <i>mozo</i> . OSp. <i>uço</i>
<i>NG</i>	ng		nz ñ	ng nh nz ny		Sp. <i>uncir</i> <i>renir</i> <i>lueñe</i> . Ptg. <i>renhida</i> <i>longe</i> . Cat. <i>senzill</i> <i>renyir</i>
<i>MB ND</i>	mbnd	mbmnd	n m	mbnd	m n	Leon. <i>palomba</i> <i>lombo</i> . Arag. <i>paloma</i> <i>lomo</i> <i>demanar</i> . Sp. <i>paloma</i> <i>lomo</i> <i>demandar</i> <i>andar</i> . Ptg. <i>pomba</i> <i>lombo</i> <i>demandar</i> <i>andar</i> . Cat. <i>coloma</i> <i>llom</i> <i>de- manar</i> <i>anar</i> <i>ona</i>
<i>MN</i>	mn	ñ	ñ	n	ny	Sp. <i>daño</i> <i>dueño</i> <i>otoño</i> . Ptg. <i>dano</i> <i>outono</i> . Cat. <i>dany</i>
<i>GN</i>	gn	ñ	ñ	nh	ny	Sp. <i>tamaño</i> <i>leña</i> . Ptg. <i>tamanho</i> <i>lenha</i> <i>conhecer</i> . Cat. <i>leny</i>
<i>NGL</i>	ngl	ñ	ñ	nh	ngl	Sp. <i>uña</i> . OSp. <i>seños</i> . MSp. <i>sendos</i> . Ptg. <i>unha</i> <i>senhos</i> <i>sendos</i> . Cat. <i>ungla</i> <i>sengles</i>
<i>NF</i>	ff		ff nf	ff nf	nf	OSp. OPtg. <i>iffante</i> . MSp. MPtg. <i>infante</i>
<i>NS</i>	s		s	s	s	Sp. Ptg. Cat. <i>mes</i> <i>mesa</i> . Cat. <i>Anfos</i>
<i>TR DR GR</i>						
Weak			dr gr	dr gr	dr gr	Sp. <i>padre</i> <i>negro</i> <i>entero</i> <i>pereza</i> <i>cadera</i> . Ptg. <i>padre</i> <i>negro</i> <i>enteiro</i> <i>cadeira</i> . Cat. <i>pare</i> <i>Pere</i> <i>pedra</i> <i>enter</i> <i>cadera</i>
<i>RS</i>	ss	ss	s	ss	ss	Sp. <i>oso</i> <i>suso</i> <i>coso</i> <i>tieso</i> <i>quids</i> (popular). Ptg. <i>péssego</i> <i>traves- sia</i> <i>almoco</i> . Cat. <i>dos</i> <i>bossa</i> <i>mossegar</i> <i>colors</i> (pron. s)

## SOME ROMANCE GROUPS

## Examples

<i>ml mr and</i>	Sp. <i>hombre</i> <i>hembra</i> <i>hombro</i> <i>cohombro</i> <i>rambla</i> <i>semblar</i> . Ptg. <i>homem</i> <i>femea</i> <i>cogombro</i> <i>ombro</i> <i>semblagem</i> .
Sp. <i>mr &lt; mn</i>	Cat. <i>om</i> <i>femella</i> <i>cambra</i> <i>semblar</i>
<i>nr ñr lr</i>	Sp. <i>tierno</i> <i>viernes</i> <i>tendrá</i> <i>pondré</i> (OSp. <i>porné</i> <i>verrá</i> ) <i>prenda</i> <i>saldré</i> <i>valdré</i> . Ptg. <i>tenro</i> <i>terei</i> <i>prenda</i> <i>sairei</i> <i>valerei</i> . Cat. <i>tendre</i> <i>gendre</i> <i>pondré</i> <i>saldré</i>
<i>rl sl sn nl</i>	In infinitive: OSp. <i>rogalle</i> . MSp. <i>rogar-le</i> . Ptg. <i>enviá-lo</i> . In finite verb: Sp. <i>vámonos</i> . Ptg. <i>procuramo-lo</i> . Prepositions: Leon. OCast. <i>eno cono pelo</i> . Ptg. <i>no pelo</i> . Ptg. <i>todos los Sp. Ptg. alma</i>
<i>nm</i>	Sp. <i>tilde</i> <i>espalda</i> <i>cabildo</i> <i>rienda</i> <i>candado</i> . OSp. and classical Sp. <i>dalde</i> <i>dandos</i> . MSp. <i>dadle</i> <i>dadnos</i> . Cat. <i>títol</i> <i>espatilla</i> <i>motille</i>
<i>tl dl tn dn</i>	Leon. <i>dulda</i> <i>belda</i> . Sp. <i>deudo</i> . Ptg. <i>beudo</i> <i>bébado</i>
<i>bd</i>	Leon. <i>judgar</i> <i>-algo</i> . Sp. <i>juzgar</i> <i>-azgo</i>
<i>dg</i>	OSp. <i>aztor</i> . Sp. <i>azor</i> <i>amistad</i> <i>rezar</i> . Ptg. <i>amizade</i> <i>rezar</i> <i>praço</i>
<i>çt çd</i>	Popular Sp. <i>nueso</i> . Ptg. <i>noso</i>
<i>str</i>	Sp. <i>manzana</i> <i>ponzoña</i> <i>comenzar</i> <i>mensajero</i> <i>mancilla</i> <i>monzón</i> <i>ren-glón</i> . OSp. <i>algundre</i> <i>-mientras</i>
<i>Epenthesis</i>	



# INDICES

## I. RERUM

Aboriginal Tribes and Languages of America 232-257; Aimará (Colla tribes) 230, 233, 236, 243; Alakaluf 236; Arawak 213, 235, 239, 240, 241, 244, 296; Carib 234, 235, 239, 240, 241, 296; Charrúa 244, 257; Chibcha 236, 244; Choni 249; Chontaqiruan 240; Cueva 239; Hia-Hiu (Otomí) 233, 235, 237; Katukina 234; Lingoa Geral 233, 236, 244; Mapuche (Araucanian) 182, 185, 187, 190, 191, 230, 236, 244, 246, 251, 252, 257-259; Mixtek 230, 233, 235; Nahuatl (Aztek, Toltek, Uto-Aztek) 185, 187, 190, 213, 230, 232, 233, 235, 237, 238, 239, 241, 242, 244, 246, 251, 258, 269, 270, 296; Nahuatl loan-words from Spanish 238-239; Pueblo 235, 237; Quechua 213, 230, 233, 235-239, 242, 244, 245, 250, 252, 258, 272, 296; Quiché (Maya) 230, 232-234, 240, 242, 317, 318; Tayno 239; Tupi-Guaraní 230, 233, 236, 240, 241, 243-245, 250, 271, 272, 296, 318-320; Yahgan 236; Zapotec 230, 233, 235, 251; Ze 236; evidence for changes in Spanish 246-247

Academy, influence of the Spanish 50, 158, 185, 196, 215, 250, 254

Accent 45, 53, 260, 308

Affricates 17, 94, 110, 122, 124, 154, 155, 181, 188, 190, 218, 288, 306, 307, 310, 315, 326

African languages and Basque 29-31; African dialects of Portuguese 4, 298, 313-314; fala d'Ambú, falar Guiné, lingoa do preto 313

Alans 77

Alliance Israélite 183

American Spanish 229-277; loan-words 208, 239-257, 304, 318-319; sub-strata 250-252; diversity 252-259; andalucismo 255-257; phonology 258-260; morphology and syntax 260-263; vocabulary 263-267; frontier against English 267-268; other references 4, 6, 71, 75, 158, 159, 160, 164, 182, 185, 186, 187, 188, 190, 191, 208, 212, 221, 229, 285; Antilles 4, 6, 233, 234, 240, 241, 317; Argentina 6, 75, 76, 122, 164, 215, 216, 237, 238, 243-245, 248-251, 253-259, 261, 262, 269, 271-277, 305; cocaliche 274-275; idioma nacional argentino 254-255, 272; Atotonilco 252, 258-269; Bogotá 'the Athens of America' 265; Bolivia 6, 233, 234, 236, 243, 257; Central America (Guatemala, Honduras, Nicaragua, Costa Rica, Salvador, Panamá) 6, 7, 230, 232-235, 242; Chile 6, 75, 185, 212, 234, 236, 244, 246, 248-259; Colombia 6, 236, 243-245, 248, 253, 254, 257-259, 261, 262; Cuba 6, 229, 239, 253; Ecuador 6, 253; Mexico 4, 230, 233-235, 237, 241, 242, 251, 252, 257-259, 267-271; New Mexican Spanish 230, 252-261, 267-271; Paraguay 6, 106, 229, 236, 243; Peru 6, 75, 230, 233, 240-245, 248, 257-259, 317, 318; Puerto Rico 6; Santo Domingo (Hispaniola, Haiti) 6, 229-239; Uruguay 6, 257, 261, 272, 273; Venezuela 6, 215-245

Andaluz 216-224; Andaluz and American Spanish 255-257, 264; Andalucía, Al-Andalus, Baética, Guadalquivir Valley 9, 88, 89, 106, 108, 124-126, 132, 159, 160, 162, 184, 185, 197, 216-224, 246, 255-257, 264, 285

Andorra 92, 95, 98

Arabic (Ar.) of Spain 113-118, 125-126; feminine -a, -at 128; final consonants 128; fugitive vowels 129; imála 125-134; influence on Spanish 127-134; nunciation 125; other references to Arabic 11, 47, 91, 124, 129, 137, 181, 235, 241, 250, 284, 296

Aragonese (Arag.), Navarro-Aragonese, medieval 141-145; modern 224-228; frontier against Catalan 91-97; frontier against Valencian 98; Ribagorzano 92, 93, 96, 98, 141, 142, 168, 226, 227; Riojano 141-143, 148, 149, 161, 171, 204; Romanzado 26; Sobrarbe 141, 144; romanization of Aragón and Navarre 26, 74-75; other references 3, 19, 35, 60, 61, 64, 81, 84, 94-96, 99, 100, 102, 107, 108, 121, 124, 140, 146, 148, 149, 151, 156, 159, 162-165, 167, 171-173, 181, 190, 196, 217, 218, 222, 224-228, 247, 255, 285

Article 68, 98, 99, 103, 128, 144, 148, 226, 227; Arabic 128, 299; particitive 24, 207

Aspirate 126, 129, 155, 159, 160, 206, 218, 220, 258-260, 308

Asturian dialects (bable), Asturias, see Leonese

Authors cited:

SPANISH: Alberdi 255, 272; *Alexandre* 49, 125, 138, 139, 159; Alfonso X 169, 192, 203, 290, 292, 293; Almosino 179; Alvarez de Villa-sandino 171, 294; S. and J. Álvarez Quintero 223; Alvarus 48, 112, 113; *Amadís* 179, 180, 267; *Apolonio* 171; Arias Montano 219; *Auto de los Reyes Magos* 130, 156, 157, 167, 204; Ávila y Zúñiga 189; Juan de Baena 171, 294; Barahona de Soto 199; C. Böhl de Faber (Fernán Caballero) 223; Boscán 174, 197; Cabanyes 103, 174; Cádalso 214; Calderón 76, 160, 201, 223; M. A. Caro 248, 253, 266; Carvajal 182; Cervantes 2, 10, 76, 185, 199, 208, 213, 248, 265; *Cid* 12, 210, 212; *Danza de la Muerte* 183; Ruben Darío 202, 266; *Disputa del Alma* 157, 167; *Elena y María* 171; Encina 228; Enríquez Gómez 178; Ercilla 159, 184; Estébanez Calderón 223; Eulogius 48, 112, 113; Feijóo 214; Fernández de Heredia 173; Fernández de Moratín 201, 214; Fernández de Oviedo 245; Fernán González 147; Ferrara Bible 179; Forner 201, 214; *Fuero de Medina* 165; *Fuero Juzgo* 140; Gabriel

y Galán 223; Garcilaso 159, 172, 174, 197, 198, 200; Garcilaso el Inca 242; *Glosas Emilianenses* 15, 23, 27, 142, 143, 145, 151, 160; *Glosas Silenses* 142, 145, 148, 151; Góngora, 196, 198, 200, 201, 220; Gonzalo de Berceo 143, 145, 161, 171, 206; Gracián 173, 200, 201; Groussac 255; G. Gutiérrez 254; J. M. Gutiérrez 255; Hayton 173; Hernández 254; Herrera 158, 160, 172, 184, 187, 192, 196, 198, 199, 213, 219, 220; F. Imperial 171; *Infantes de Lara* 147, 149, 170; Isidore 39, 45, 51-53; S. Juan de la Cruz 196; Don Juan Manuel 125, 162, 172; Las Casas 245; *Lazarillo* 209; Leonarte 170; Luis de León 160, 184, 197, 201; Leonardo de Argensola 170; López de Ayala 118, 219; Lugones 251; Luzán 214; Mandeville 173; Marco Polo 173; Martínez Ruiz (Azorín) 202; Medina 223; Mena 49, 192, 194, 195, 197, 203; Montalvo 253; Núñez Muley 219; Pardo Bazán 305; Pereda 227; Pesado 234; Pinto Delgado 178; Prete Jacopin 172, 219; Quesada 255; Quevedo 185, 199, 201; F. Rojas 180, 197; R. Rojas 251; Ruiz 162, 170, 171, 180, 203-206; Ruiz de Alarcón 199; Sánchez de Vercial 172; Marqués de Santillana 171, 194, 195, 294; M. Sarmiento 305; D. F. Sarmiento 254, 255, 272; Sem Tob 179; Silensis 49; Silva 253; Stúñiga 173; Téllez (Tirso de Molina) 185, 199, 213; St Teresa 196-198, 267; Torres Naharro 213; *Tres Reis d'Orient* 171; Tristán 173; Unamuno 10; Valencia 253; Valle-Inclán 305; Lope de Vega 160, 184, 185, 199, 200, 220; R. de la Vega 253; Villegas 185; Villena 49, 194; Vives 49, 50; Ximénez de Rada 49; Yáñez 172; Yosef 179, 180

GALICIAN (MODERN): Rosalía de Castro 171, 305, 306; Cura de Fruíme 305; Curros 171, 305, 306; Pondal 171, 305

PORTUGUESE AND GALLAECO-PORTUGUESE: Airas Nunes 292; J. Alencar 319; M. Alencar 317; Barros 176, 298, 299, 303, 309; Bernardes 176,

Portuguese and Gallæco-Portuguese:  
(cont.)

299; Bocage 177, 297, 299; Camões 2, 46, 76, 176, 177, 191, 278, 296, 297, 299, 301, 317; *Cancioneiros* 290, 292, 293, 300; Castanheda 299; Catulo Cearense 319; Codax 292; Couto 299; A. da Cruz 176, 298; *Demanda* 294; Dom Diniz 292, 293; Dom Duarte 294, 303; *Ecá de Queiroz* 299; Faria 176; A. Ferreira 176, 298, 299; Garrett 177, 299; Herculano 177; João IV 176, 177, 295; *Livro de Linhagens* 34, 292, 294; *Livro de Montaria* 294; Fernão López 130, 158, 294, 297, 300, 301; Melo 176, 208, 299; Mendes Pinto 294; Pedro de Barcelos 172, 292; Pedro de Portugal 175; Sá de Miranda 176, 298; Usque 179; Vicente 175-176, 290, 295, 298, 300-302, 309, 313

CATALAN: Aguiló 104, 174; Aribau 103, 104; Carner 104, 174; Desclot 173; Ferrer 101; *Grail* 98; Guimerà 104; *Homilies d'Organyà* 97, 99; Jaufre de Foixà 100; Jaume I 91, 98, 173, 217; Llorente 105; López-Picó 174; Lull 101, 102, 173; Maragall 104, 174; March 102, 173; Margarit 101; Martí l'Humà 101; Martorell 102; Metge 101, 173; Milà 104, 174; Muntaner 98, 101; Pere del Punyalet 99, 101, 173; Pujades 97; *Repartiment de Mallorca* 119; Roig 102, 173; Rubió 104; Sant Jordi 102, 173; Verdaguer 104, 174; Vidal 100

HISPANO-ARABIC: Pedro de Alcalá 116, 121, 122, 125; Al-Khushaní 115, 116, 124; Ibn al-Baitar 116; Ibn Jubair 116, 119, 123; Ibn Khaldún 116; Ibn Quzmán 115, 116, 120, 121, 122; Leiden glossary 116; Muqaddam 115; Valencian glossary 116; Virgil of Córdoba 113

BAKUE: *Codex Compostellanus* 32, 34; Dechepare 15; A. von Harff 15; Leizarraga 15

Auxiliaries: Basque 23, 26; Romance 60, 63, 70, 212

Basque, uniqueness 1, 8; statistics 5; verbs 14, 15, 20-23, 30; nouns 23,

24, 27, 29; pronouns 25; numerals 25, 30; palatalizations 36; origins 29-31; 'Iberian' 25-31; Alcoy tablet 28, 31, 43; Basque and Romance 33-37, 73, 80, 149, 161; dialects (Biscayan, Guipuzcoan, Upper and Lower Navarrese, Labourdin, Souletin) 14, 15, 17, 32, 37, 39

Berbers (Kabyle, Riff) 28, 30, 111, 117, 230

Betacism 51, 52

Brazil and Brazilian Portuguese 4, 7, 9, 11, 76, 177, 229, 236, 240, 243, 261, 272, 273, 295, 296, 315-323

Bulgarian 182

Cantes flamencos 220, 223

Cases: agent 21, 24, 29; patient or inert 21, 24, 29; recipient 29; nominative 69; genitive 20, 24, 69; dative 22, 29, 226; adjectival 23, 24, 29; ablative 69; vocative 69; locative 24; instrument 29; sociative 24, 29; aditive and abitive 24; ethic dative 22; construct 128; survivals of Latin cases in Spanish 54, 58, 69; personal object 210, 211

Castilian dialect (Cast.), origins in Cantabria or Bardulia 146-148; early state, Old Castilian (OCast.) 148-150; expansion 159-169; other references 27, 35, 55, 73, 86, 87, 107, 109, 121, 124, 140, 141, 198; castilianisms in Catalan 102-104; castilianisms in Galego 304, 305

Catalan 5, 37, 60, 61, 75, 76, 82-105; medieval 99-102; modern 102-105; emancipation from lemosí 100, 101, 104; catalanesc 100, 104; Eastern and Western dialects 97-99; Rousillonese 5, 60, 73, 86, 91, 94-97; Valencian 104, 105; Mallorquí 105; Alguerés 99; frontiers against Spanish and Provençal 91-94; cultural conflict with Spanish 173, 174

Caucasian languages and Basque 30, 31

Causes of linguistic divergence 71-77

Cédille 152

Celtic and Spanish Romance 37-41; Celtic and Basque 18; other references 14, 33, 46, 47, 53, 72, 80, 91, 95, 230, 280, 284

Chinese and China 213, 214, 289, 295, 316

Cities mentioned: Astorga 73, 159, 163, 166, 228, 280; Avila 147, 149, 163, 278; Badajoz 112, 114, 278, 309; Barcelona 61, 78, 81, 82, 96, 97, 105, 117, 133, 172, 174; Bragança 186, 187, 285, 302; Burgos 9, 136, 137, 146–150, 161–165, 167, 172; Cáceres 224; Cádiz 42, 117, 219; Cartagena 42, 98, 219; Coimbra 136, 282; Córdoba 9, 120, 122; Elne 73, 95; El Payne 137; Énguera 186, 227; Ermisinde 309; Estella 26; Granada 86, 87, 111, 115, 120, 121, 133, 162, 166, 216–224, 284; Huelva 218, 219, 221; Huesca (Osca) 26, 74, 142, 163; Jaén 218; Lérida 74, 78, 93, 97; Lisbon 9, 187, 281, 282, 291, 295, 300, 302, 309, 310, 313, 320; Madrid 162, 164, 172, 184, 199, 220, 222, 305, 306; Medinaceli 123, 149, 164–167, 221; Mérida 166, 278; Mieres 285; Miranda do Douro 73, 166, 228, 280, 309; Olivenza 278, 309, 322; Orihuela 98, 111; Osma 147, 163, 165; Oviedo 75, 78, 106, 135–137, 149, 161, 169, 227; Plasencia 224; Riodonor 309; Salamanca 118, 137, 138, 162, 164, 184, 201, 217, 225, 228; San Ciprián 137, 228; Santander 146, 160, 162, 164, 167, 225, 227; Santiago 76, 136, 138, 152, 206, 292, 305; Sevilla 39, 111, 117, 121, 166, 184, 191, 198, 216–224, 256, 298; Tamarite 26, 60, 76, 92, 93, 94, 97, 118; Tarragona 74, 97, 166; Toledo 9, 106–112, 116–118, 124, 151, 154, 157, 162–167, 171, 172, 184, 197, 198, 217; Valencia 92, 96, 98, 101, 102, 105, 109, 117–124, 132, 133, 172, 174, 218, 227, 307; Zamora 118, 136, 166; Zaragoza 26, 112, 118–120, 141, 144

Combined changes: apocope and syncope 84, 211; assimilation 64, 148; epenthesis 52, 335; hiatus 320; liaison 309; metaphor 284, 285; metathesis 18, 211, 321, 335; synecrisis 203, 290

Conjugation: Basque 20–23; inceptives 59, 90, 283; infinitive 59,

211, 283; personal infinitive 59, 175, 290, 323; participle (past) 59, 70, 90, 204, 212, 303; participle (present) 70, 227, 303; participle (future) 70; gerund 70, 227, 262, 323; imperative 211, 261, 262, 308, 323; present 261, 262; periphrastic present 262; imperfect 103, 205, 308; preterite 70, 90, 103, 144, 204, 226, 227, 262, 293, 306–308; perfect 59, 60, 205, 316; pluperfect 59, 211, 227, 262, 283, 305, 306; future 54, 67, 70, 262; future perfect 205; conditional 70; subjunctive 103, 262, 283; passive 70; middle 70; impersonal 262, 303; other references 54, 62, 63, 69, 100, 102, 111, 185, 186, 199, 204–206

Consonantism (principal matters): initial f 15, 27, 28, 35, 36, 51, 55, 73, 84, 87, 93, 109, 126, 129, 140, 142, 149, 153, 154, 157, 159, 206, 218, 220, 223, 224, 246, 285, 331; initial j g 55, 121, 122, 140, 142, 149, 155, 163, 164, 179, 181, 186, 191, 206, 270, 285, 302, 303, 325, 326, 331; b=v 51, 52, 105, 153, 154, 184, 307, 325, 326, 331; medial p t c 52, 54, 126, 184–186, 188, 246, 283, 325; palatalization of cl gl ll ni gn mn nn 55, 87, 110, 122, 140, 142, 149, 155, 164, 190, 221, 226, 258, 282, 285, 293, 326, 329, 334; palatalization of ct 40, 50, 51, 56, 87, 122, 140, 142, 149, 150, 165, 166, 196, 226, 285, 299, 333; palatalization of initial b 88, 93, 100, 110, 122, 141, 142, 168, 221, 227, 286, 287, 329; initial pl cl fl 60, 76, 88, 110, 121, 139, 141, 142, 168, 169, 227, 228, 286, 287, 332; sibilants (ç z s x, seseo, ceceo) 17, 109, 110, 123, 124, 125, 128, 152, 153, 155, 158, 166, 168, 176, 181, 186–191, 218–220, 224, 227, 246, 249, 250, 258, 285, 300–303, 311, 320, 325, 330, 331, 333, 'impure's 193, 196, 270, 297, 330; group st 124, 188, 308, 333; elimination of medial n 76, 118, 288–290, 300, 301, 307, 329; elimination of medial n 59, 76, 85, 89, 109, 143, 203, 288, 289, 300–302, 307, 329; elimination of final n 90, 329; Greek consonants 43, 44;

Consonantism (*cont.*)

German consonants 77, 80, 81; Arabic consonants 126, 128, 129; American languages 238

Declension 53, 54, 58, 62, 69, 80, 81, 148, 199, 303; *imparisyllabic* 53, 54

Diphthongs and monophthongs from AI AU 88, 109, 111, 119, 121, 139, 140, 143, 148, 150, 166, 167, 227, 228, 285, 311, 313, 315, 316, 320, 328

Diphthongs from ē ö 26, 56, 59, 93, 96, 111, 119, 120, 139-143, 148, 166, 167, 278, 284, 285, 327; prevented by palatal element 56, 148, 166, 327; not prevented by palatal 86, 87, 120, 139, 148, 225, 327

Diphthongs from ē ö 311

Diphthongs (nasal) 59, 320

Dravidian 316

Dutch 178, 214, 295, 315

Eastern and Western Spanish Romance 88, 119, 121, 123, 140, 167, 168

Enclitics 261, 262, 322

English and England 178, 187, 209, 214, 215, 230, 245-247, 269-271, 272, 273-277, 291, 296, 314, 315

Extremeno 160, 188, 218, 223, 224, 264

Familiar construction 22

French 183, 187, 190, 201, 203, 206-209, 213-216, 263, 266, 267, 272-276, 297, 314; Franks 47, 62, 79, 80, 96; Gallo-Romance 47, 57, 58, 62, 82, 83, 86

Frontiers: Mozarabic 118-119; Catalan 5, 60, 73, 75, 86, 91-94, 95-97, 144, 145; Valencian 98; Basque 87, 137, 146, 151, 159, 224; Andalusian 217-219; Galician 279-282; Portuguese 279-282, 309; New Mexican 4, 267-269

Galego (Gal.) 304-309; statistics 5, 6; dialects 306; *Gallæco-Portuguese* origins 278-282; compared with Spanish 282-290; break up of *Gallæco-Portuguese* unity 291-294;

other references to Galician and Galicia 11, 28, 38, 76-79, 87, 88, 96, 106-111, 115, 116, 121, 122, 134-141, 146, 166-169, 175, 190, 206, 212, 224, 227, 247, 256, 310

Gascon 15, 84, 98, 140, 225

Gauchos, guasos, huasos, rotos 252

Gender 69, 128, 204, 226, 261, 303, 313, 315; Arabic gender 128; neuter 69

Germanic languages and Peninsular Romance 77-81; other references 47, 53, 55, 62, 91, 154, 187, 209, 230, 272, 273, 284

Grammarians and other authorities mentioned:

(1) Ballot 103; Dávila 189; Doerganck 189; Du Bruillar 302; C. de las Casas 189; L. C. de Lima 302; Minsheu 188-191, 208, 219; Miranda 189; Nebrija 46, 158, 159, 172, 182, 184, 188, 190, 191, 195, 197, 204, 208, 219, 240, 255; Núñez do Lião 299, 309; Oliveira 309; Oudin 189, 208; Owen 189; Percival 189, 190, 208; Sebastián 189; Torquemada 189; Valdés 158, 172, 187, 189-191, 213, 219

(2) Abeille 255; Alonso 94, 232; Arteaga 324; Azkue 14; Baist 12; Baralt 215, 248; Barnils 324; Barros Arana 256; Bell 293; Bello 12, 248, 250, 253, 255, 261; Bouda 14; Bourcier 12; Carnoy 52; Castro 224; Cornu 12; Crews 183; Cuervo 12, 231, 248, 253, 266; D'Arbois de Jubainville 39, 41; Dottin 41; Dozy and Engelmann 124, 126; Espinosa, sr. 232; Espinosa, jr. 191, 224; Ewert 13; Fabra 105; Ford 13, 191; Fouché 94; Friederici 232; Gamillscheg 81; García de Diego 309; Gavel 14; Giese 13; Gómez-Moreno 31; Gonçalves Viana 158, 324; González-Llubera 13, 179; Griera 13, 94, 105; Gröber 12; Grossmann 231, 277; Hadwiger 94; Hanssen 12; Henríquez Ureña 231, 256; Hermosilla 103, 174; Hervás 8; Huber 13; Hübner 31, 41; W. von Humboldt 20, 31; Jeaspersen 13; Kuen 99; Lafon 31; Leite de Vasconcellos 12, 41, 311; Lenz 12, 231, 236, 252; Lerch 12; Marden

Grammarians mentioned (*cont.*)

232; Meier 77; Menéndez Pidal 12, 13, 31, 150, 169, 202; Meyer-Lübke 13, 94; Navarro-Tomás 14, 105, 224, 324; Nunes 13; Par 101; Ribeiro 317; Rivet 232; Rodrigues 13; Rodríguez-Castellano 224; Rohlf 19; Sachs 81; Salow 94; Sanchis-Guarnier 105; Schuchardt 14, 20, 30, 31, 224; Seybold 116; Sofer 53; Steiger 126; Thayer Ojeda 256; Tiscornia 231; Toro 231, 256; Toro y Gisbert 202; Tschudi 239; Uhlenbeck 14; Van Eys 14; Vinson 14; Wagner 231; Von Wartburg 13; Zauner 13

Greek and Ibero-Romance 43–45; modern loan-words 266; in Jewish Spanish 183; other references 47, 51, 153, 180

Gypsies (*gitanos*, Romany) 216, 223, 298; Romany words in *cantes flamencos* 223; o çéçear çigano de Sevilha 298

Hebrew and Spanish 127, 178, 179

Hispani 95

Homonymy 265

Honorifics 144

Hybrid names 28

Iberian (see Basque)

Ibero-Romance (see Latin)

Indo-Portuguese, Diu, norteiro, Goanese, Ceylonese 314–316

Interdentals 186, 191, 305, 306

Iotacism 44

Italian 64, 65, 68, 69, 70, 123, 148, 180, 183, 189–194, 196, 198, 201, 203, 208, 209, 213, 252, 258, 273–275, 292, 297, 304; *cocoliche* 274, 275

Jewish Spanish 177–183, 184, 186, 187, 188, 190, 249; Jewish Portuguese 298, 300; Jews in Spain 6, 127; dispersions 177, 179, 208

Latin of Spain 46–81; pre-classical 63; classical 48–50, 63; Spanish, African, Balkanic 57; learned and half-learned words 48; revivals of Latin 49, 113, 191–202; testimony of authors and inscriptions 51–53;

development into various types of Romance 53–62; characteristics of Ibero-Romance 62–70; Italic dialects 63, 64, 74, 75; Romanization 26, 73, 75, 167; Romance element in Basque 19; Latin and Germanic 77–81; Catalan vocabulary 91; *latinum circa romanicum, latinī* 113; Latin and Arabic 132; loan-words, 13th century 191–194, 15th century 194–196, 16th century 196–198, 17th century 198–201, 18th century 201, 19th and 20th centuries 201–202, Latin and Italian 213; notarial Latin 48, 123, 135, 141 Lemosí and Provençal 29, 80, 82, 94, 100, 104, 166, 173, 293, 297

Leonese, Asturo-Leonese (Leon.) medieval 134–141; modern 224–228; western (WLeon.) 139, 141, 162, 164, 168, 227, 228, 288; eastern, Carrión, Saldaña, Liébana 137, 164, 165; eastern Asturian 225, 227; central Asturian 227; Leonese expansion and decline 136–138; *sayagués* and *charruno* 228; other references 11, 35, 48, 76, 78, 86–88, 106–109, 115, 149, 161–167, 175, 217, 222, 247, 249, 284–288, 291, 310

Ligurians 29, 230

Lucayo 230

Macau, dialecto macaísta 4, 229, 295, 316

Malay 214, 316

Monasteries: Albelda 145; S. Pedro de Arlanza 147; Cardeña 147, 163; Eslonza 138, 141, 164, 166; S. Juan de Peña, 143; S. Millán de la Cogolla 27, 142, 145; Oña 147, 148, 159, 161, 163, 167; Sahagún 138, 139; Sto Domingo de Silos 142, 145, 149, 164

Mozarabic and Mozarabs, described 111–125; adaptation of Arabic words 126–134; prevalence in Al-Andalus 113–118; other references 11, 35, 74, 84–88, 96, 97, 106–111, 136–143, 149, 151, 163, 167, 168, 170, 188, 220, 221, 225, 258, 278, 281, 284, 285, 291, 300

Murcia and Murcian 92, 98, 112, 120, 162, 217, 218, 223–224

Neologismo y extranjerismo 276  
 Numerals 23, 30, 133; vigesimal system 18

Occlusives 87, 109, 123, 154, 181-186, 325, 330  
 Orthography 44, 152-158, 282, 297

Paternosters 23, 32, 61, 62  
 Patronymics 58  
 Philippines 6, 229, 230  
 Plural 69, 85, 94, 108, 209, 226, 227, 260, 283, 301, 303, 313, 315, 316, 321  
 Polynesian 232, 241  
 Portuguese (Ptg.), statistics 4, 6, 7; characteristics 8, 59, 60; cultural struggle with Spanish 175-177; origins 278-282; early development 282-290; divergence from Galician 291-294; modern (MPtg.) 294-304; northern Portuguese (NPtg.), minhoto, intercambriense, duriense, transmontano, beirão 309-311; southern (SPtg.) alemtejano, algarvio 311; Saloios 300; insular, Madeira and Azores 312; Brazilian (q.v.), Indo-Portuguese (q.v.), other references *passim*

Prefixes 23, 28, 130, 222, 260, 265  
 Prepositions and postpositions 23, 148, 210, 211, 227, 316

Pronouns: Basque 25; personal 58, 90, 144, 203, 211, 226, 261, 293, 315, 322, 323; relative 57, 58, 90, 144, 212, 261; interrogative 90; demonstrative 212, 304; possessive 90, 144, 227, 293, 303; polite 102, 261  
 Punic 42, 43

Race and language 29  
 Raši script 179, 181  
 Rhymes 105  
 Rhythm 45, 49, 53, 84, 85, 174, 200, 202, 203, 265, 290, 306  
 Ribagorza, Rioja (see Aragonese)  
 Romance, divisions 53-61  
 Rumanian 40, 54, 57, 148, 182, 210

Semi-vowels 325  
 Serbo-Croatian 180  
 Sertorius 63  
 Seseo and ceceo 218-220, 255, 256, 258, 298  
 Sibilants (see Consonants)

Slavonic 210  
 Spanish, *passim*, American Spanish (q.v.), Jewish Spanish (q.v.), Portuguese Spanish 175-177  
 Style and stylistics: antithesis 201; aureate style 195-196; baroque 45, 199-201; *cacosyntheton* 195; conceptismo 176, 200, 201, 299; culturanismo, *culta latiniparla*, gongorismo 49, 176, 192, 200, 201; euphemism 182; familiar construction 22; humanism 196; hypothesis 23, 212; interrogation 323; meiosis 201; metaphor 200; modernism 192, 201, 202, 265-267; negation 22, 90; oxymoron 198, 201; paronomasia 201; personification 211; polite address, *estilo cortesano*, cortesanía 9, 102, 196, 209, 210, 261; realism 63, 211; *volgare illustre* 191, 194

Substrata 33, 72, 250, 251

Suffixes: Basque 20-25, 28, 29; -able 48, 193; -aço 281; -ado -atu 48, 109, 123, 186, 193, 204, 247; -ada -ida 109, 186, 193; -agine 121; -al -fíco -ción 195; -anu -ana -ane -itudine -one -unt 301, 302, 309, 311; -ariu 109, 148, 150, 167; -ear -ecer -iar 90, 265; -eccu -occu 49; -ejo 193; -ello -ola -illo -iculu 119, 120, 148, 163, 164; -eso 187; -í 127, 250; -ia -ia 45, 260; -idad 48, 193; -ido -ado 204, 303; -iguar 193; -ín 227; -ísimo 187; -ismo -ista 202; -izar 44; -mente -s guisa 81, 85, 226; -oriu 227, 299; -oso 188, 198; -ro 205; -y 237, 238

Swabians 77, 135, 146, 280, 281

Tagalog 230  
 Tartessos 14, 42  
 Turkish, 179, 180, 183

Ultra-correction 175  
 United States 4, 230, 233, 235, 246, 247, 252, 261, 267-271, 273

Valencia, Valencian (see Catalan, Cities)  
 Vandals 77  
 Visigoths 27, 74, 75, 77-81, 96, 106, 111, 135, 146, 151, 152, 280, 281  
 Visigothic Romance 108, 111, 112

Vocabulary: administrative 151, 152, 157, 194; archaisms 202, 264, 323; arts and crafts 132, 215; astronomy 133; body 65; chivalry 207; church 194; colour 264; depreciative 65; diminutives 18, 198, 264; doublets 194, 196; military 130, 131, 213; nautical 131, 231, 264; nursery 323; popular etymology 265; relationships 64, 65; vulgarism 259, 260, 271, 305, 320, 322, 323

Vowels (see Diphthongs): a, 58, 85, 98, 105, 108, 119, 125, 128, 204–206, 210, 226, 251, 278, 289, 321, 324, 327; e 56, 58, 59, 85, 86, 93,

96, 98, 105, 109, 119–121, 125, 128, 139, 140, 143, 148, 166, 167, 203–206, 223, 225, 226, 270–278, 282, 284, 285, 289, 325, 327; i 125, 153, 155, 156, 251, 270, 320, 325, 327; o 56, 58, 59, 85–87, 93, 96, 108, 109, 119–121, 128, 139, 140, 143, 148, 166, 167, 223, 225, 226, 278, 284, 285, 327; u 58, 86, 89, 90, 92, 105, 108, 148, 153, 155, 184, 223, 227, 251, 270, 311, 312, 325, 327; w 251; y 44

Yeísmo 180, 221, 255, 258, 269

Zejel 115

## II. *NOMINUM*

Abdalla presbyter 134	Almorávides 131	Auch 35
Abdara 42	Alporchel 327	Auritze 35
Aben 129	Am- 162	
Acinippo 39	Amalobriga 39	Badajoz 123, 124, 189
Adalsind 78	Amarillo 268	Badalhouce 123
Adur 39	Ampudia 140, 162	Baetis 28
Ag(g)adir 42	Ampurias 43	Baetulo 28
Agarnáta 123	Andalíes 78	Baigorri 26
Agro de Savili 78	Andalucía 77, 78	Bájja 125
Ahuilzapan 245	Andulf 78	Baldus 78
Aibto 179	Anni 161	Balsa 34
Aimará 245	Antonián 115	Barcelona, Barsalúna, Barcino 42, 96, 128
Aiza 78	Aquilué 26	Báscones, Baškuné 106, 136
Akrab 133	Arabriga 39	Baselgas 44, 278, 299
Al-Afranj 106, 129	Araduey 28	Batalyús 123
Al-Andalus 77, 78	Aragüés 26, 327	Beja 124, 125
Al-Asbúna 118, 128, 187, 278	Arcobriga 39	Benagorri 26
Albufera 133	Argentea 114	Bercianos 137
Albuquerque 268	Arguriega 34	Bertrand 78
Alcalá 131, 133	Arias Salomoniz 278	Besalú 39
Alcántara 133	Armentero 148	Besteiro 301
Aldebaran 133	Arotrebae 38	Betanzos 38, 39
Aldegode 281	Arrábita 131	Betelgeuse 133
Alfama 33	Artabri 38	Bezaudun 39
Alfonso, Ánfos 79, 335	Arteaga 34	Bizent 119, 124
Alfoz de Lara 131	Arunda 39	Bonloc 35
Algeciras 133	Asido 28	Boudica 38
Algol 133	Asprilla 163	Braga, Braaguua 300
Alhambra 133, 331	Assur 161	Bragança 39
Alkalay 182	Asta 39	Brazos 268
Alkor 133	Asturianos 137	Brigaecium 39
Almagest 45	Atair 133	
	Atrebates 38, 280	

Brigantia, Brigantium 38, 39  
 Bueso, Boisone 328  
 Burgos de Osma 79  
 Burgos 59, 79  
 Burguete 35  
 Buriel 122  
 Caçela 278  
 Cádiz 42, 125  
 Cadreggas 165  
 Caesaraugusta 35  
 Calabriga 39  
 Calaforilla 163  
 Calatayud 128  
 California 267, 268  
 Calle Cuyo, 'Cage Cugio' 258  
 Camões 301  
 Caracuey 120  
 Garagoça 124, 188, 278  
 Carlos, Carlli 58, 69, 142  
 Cartagena 42  
 Carteia 42  
 Casal da dos Godeis 78  
 Casal de Goda 281  
 Casaldoufe 78  
 Casale 78  
 Casanande 78  
 Castalla 120  
 Castejón = Castellón 123, 170, 221  
 Castellanos 136, 137, 138  
 Castil de Ferro 163  
 Castilla 140, 148, 163; Castella 140; Castellá 140, 148; Casticilla 156  
 Castillo 163  
 Castro Adalsindo 78  
 Catalonia 78  
 Caurel 279  
 Cazalla 120, 327  
 Cértigos 194  
 Cetobriga 39  
 Chámoa 287  
 Chaves 332  
 Chipiona 128  
 Chuchis 270  
 Cid 134; Cidi Adaredici 278; Cite, Citez 134  
 Cintia 199  
 Cintila, Cintillán 79  
 Cláudio, Caláudio 321  
 Cofiñal 161  
 Coimbra, Conimbriga 38, 118  
 Colla 245  
 Colorado 268  
 Comes 115  
 Compagni 156  
 Contrebia 39  
 Córdoba 123, 126, 194  
 Cortina 38  
 Cottaeobriga 39  
 Cuenca 120  
 Quibixa 189  
 Cullera 123, 170, 221  
 Cumae 44  
 Daralviejo, Dar-al-belyo 122  
 Deneb 133  
 Denis 297  
 Deobriga, Deobrigula 39  
 Descoll 98  
 Deva 39  
 Díaz, Dídad 58  
 Diniz 297  
 Duero, Douro, Doiro 39, 299, 328  
 Echaberry, Echeverría 17, 26, 34  
 Écija 124, 128, 188, 278, 333  
 Egíptio 179  
 Eiximenic 34  
 Eliberris 35  
 Elne 28  
 Elvira 28, 35, 79, 128, 331  
 Emdeira 148  
 Emporion 43  
 Erramon 17  
 Estéban 45  
 Estreya 182  
 Euskeria, Euskalerrri 15, 28  
 Fáfila, Fáfia 288  
 Farfán 163  
 Febeire 163  
 Felipe 36  
 Fenares 161  
 Fernández 58  
 Fernando 79  
 Ferreira 148, 327  
 Ferreirola 119, 121, 163, 327  
 Fiiz 288  
 Firmoza 181, 187  
 Florida 268  
 Fombellida 162  
 Fompedrada 162  
 Fon- 162  
 Fonfría 162  
 Fonseca 162  
 Fontalba 162  
 Fontanar 162  
 Fontanas 278  
 Fontanilla(s) 162  
 Fontasquesa 162  
 Fontechia 141, 162, 165, 166  
 Fonte tega 165  
 Fontellas, Fontilgas 163  
 Fornes 163  
 Forniellos 161  
 Frachela, Fregas 165, 166  
 Francillos 163  
 Fruela 79  
 Fuanti 327  
 Fueyo 139  
 Funes 163  
 Gades, Gadir, Gadara, Gadeira 42  
 Gaia 118  
 Galati, Galata 38, 280  
 Galicia 123, 125  
 Galindo, Galino 143  
 Gallacei 38, 280  
 Gállego 194  
 Gallegos, Galleguillos 137  
 Garnáta 123, 129  
 Gehleria 127  
 Generalife 133  
 Gibralfaro 133  
 Gibraltar 133  
 Godón 281; Godos 78, 281; Godinhos, Godinho 78; Goda 78, 281; Gotones 78  
 Gómez, Gomes 294  
 Gondómar 79  
 Gondomil 79  
 Gracuris 28  
 Gracia 182  
 Granada 35, 123  
 Guadalajara 133  
 Guadalaviar 133

## INDICES

Guadalete 133  
 Guadalquivir 129, 133  
 Guadarrama 133  
 Guadiana 133  
 Guadix 133  
 Guasilgu 163  
 Guayaquil, 'Guallquil' 258  
 Guayomén 270  
 Gude, Gudín, Gudiña 78  
 Gudiel 327, 328; Gudillo 328  
 Güile 270  
 Guillem 329  
 Hacinas 87, 166  
 Hanniz 161  
 Harriaga 17  
 Harrigorriá 17  
 Hazas 166  
 Helizes 36  
 Hemeroskopion 43  
 Henar(es) 161, 162  
 Hermosa 181  
 Hfelippo 36  
 Hispania 43  
 Hllantada 287  
 Hontalbilla 162  
 Hontamio 162  
 Hontanada 162  
 Hontanar(es) 162  
 Hontangas 162  
 Hontecillas 162  
 Hontillas 162  
 Hontoria 162  
 Hormaza, Hormazuela 161  
 Hornillos 161  
 Hoyo(s) 139  
 Huelva 120  
 Huesca 63, 74  
 Ignacio 34  
 Ilbira 128  
 Illerda 28  
 Ilberrius 28, 35  
 fñigo 34  
 Iria Flavia 28  
 Iriberry 26, 35  
 Irigoyen 35  
 Iruña 35  
 Iñibilla 128, 187  
 Istigi 128  
 Istodatios 37  
 Iturbide, Iturbide 45  
 Iznalloz 133  
 Jabalde 78  
 Jabariz 78, 281  
 Jacinto 124  
 Jalikiya 106, 115, 123, 125  
 Jáuregui 35  
 Javier 26, 34  
 Jimena, Jiménez 34  
 Johanillo 163  
 Juan 191, 246  
 Juan Pérez Strait 268  
 Junco 331  
 Junqueiro, Junqueira 121, 331  
 Kabilyo 182  
 Kaisall 156  
 Kalderón 182  
 Kallaikoi 38, 280  
 Karaunios 37  
 Koan 191, 246  
 Laiešcen = Laietanorum 28  
 Lain, Lafínez 169, 286, 332  
 Lambra 169, 286, 332  
 Lanquet 189  
 Lascuarre(s) 26, 167, 327  
 Las Fontanillas 163  
 Las Hormazas 161  
 Laujar 121, 328, 329  
 Lecuine 35  
 Lérida, Lleida 28  
 Lig 24  
 Ligüerre 26  
 Lisboa, Lisbona, Lis-bonne, Lisbon 59, 118, 128, 187, 278, 289  
 Lizarraga 35  
 Llambla 286, 332  
 Lope, Lop 85, 120, 328; Lopel 120  
 Los Fueyos 139  
 Lumbier 36  
 Lusaide 35  
 Madariaga 35  
 Maestro 182  
 Mafumetez 134  
 Mahón 42  
 Mainaca 42  
 Malinche = Marina 269  
 Manzaneque 149  
 Marcos 58, 69  
 Mauchuel 120, 121  
 Maurel 120  
 Medinaceli 133  
 Medina del Campo 133  
 Medina Sidonia 133  
 Me(i)dubriga 28, 39  
 Mendizábal 34  
 Mérida 109, 120, 194, 278  
 Merobriga 39  
 Mértola 109, 118, 278  
 Miramamolín 131  
 Mirobriga 39  
 Moenictapus 37  
 Monneka 149  
 Monterey 268  
 Montesinos 58  
 Montiberri 36  
 Montiel 85, 115, 118, 119  
 Montiya 182  
 Moradel 120  
 Mourqât 121, 328  
 Mozarbitos, Mozára-vez, Mozárvez 137, 138  
 Mundobriga 39  
 Nájera, Naggara 148  
 Nandus 78  
 Navarra 33  
 Navianos 137  
 Nemetobriga 39  
 Nertobriga 37  
 Nevada 268  
 New Mexico 268  
 Nocedo, Nocito 143  
 Nueces 268  
 Obecoz 161  
 Odiana 278  
 Olisipo 28  
 Oliveros 58, 69  
 Oncebreros 162  
 Ontígola 162  
 Orihuela 120  
 Orizaba 245  
 Ormaza, Ormatia, Or-mazola 161  
 Ornilla 161  
 Orreaga 35  
 Osca 63

Palla 297  
 Palo Alto 268  
 Palomba 182  
 Palomeque 149  
 Pamplona, Pompaelo 28,  
 35  
 Pascual 85, 118  
 Paternuy 26  
 Pedro, Pero 89; Peydro  
 148; Pere 334  
 Perera 182  
 Pérez, Peres 294  
 Pinto 182  
 Plasencia, Pladencia,  
 224  
 Popayán, 'Popallán'  
 258  
 Poqueira 121  
 Portogaleses 138  
 Portugal 118  
 Pucio 327  
 Puerto del Alano 78  
 Puerto del Sueve 78  
 Qádis 42, 125  
 Qardiel 120  
 Qórtuba 109, 123, 126  
 Quijote, Quixote 191  
 Quoenchá 327  
 Rambla 133  
 Ramiro 77  
 Ramón, Reimón, Re-  
 móñ, 17, 327  
 Reberter 85  
 Refoyo, Rehoyo 161  
 Requejo 34  
 Requena 34  
 Rezende 301  
 Rigel 133  
 Rojuelo, Royol 85, 116,  
 120  
 Roliça 278  
 Romão 301  
 Roncesvalles 35  
 Rosa, Roza 181, 187  
 Rosas, Rhode 43  
 Roussillon, Ruscino 42  
 Ruiz, Roiz, Roys 294  
 Sabín, Sabegode, Saboy  
 78, 281; Sav- 78;  
 Sabrigo 281  
 Sacasa 98  
 Sacramento 268  
 Saetabis 28  
 Sáñudi=Cefalù 123  
 Sagra 330  
 Sahagún 161  
 Salduba 35  
 San Andreas 268  
 San Angelo 268  
 Sánchez, Sanggiz, 34,  
 148, 153, 155  
 Sancho, Sancha 34  
 Sanchuelo, Sanchol 85,  
 116, 120  
 San Diego 268  
 San Felices, Santelices,  
 Sahelices, San Fiz,  
 Safiz 161  
 Sangre de Cristo 268  
 San Joaquin 268  
 San Juan 268  
 San Juan de Fuca  
 268  
 Santiague 69  
 Saragüsta 118, 124, 125,  
 188  
 Sarqúsa=Syracuse 123  
 Sasamón, Segisamo 39  
 Scallabis, 28  
 Scemeno 156  
 Secunda, Shaqunda 187  
 Segorbe, Segobriga 38,  
 39  
 Segovia 39, 194  
 Señora 182  
 Sevilla 128, 187  
 Sierra Nevada 268  
 Sigüenza, Sigüenza, Se-  
 gontia 39  
 Síqiliya=Sicily 123  
 Soenga(s) 78  
 Suegos, Sueve, Suevos  
 78  
 Tajo, Tejo 123, 125  
 Tarifa 78  
 Tarragona 96  
 Tayunquera 122  
 Terradillos 163  
 Teruel, 120  
 Texas 268  
 Tinteiro 148  
 Toldanos, Toldaos 136  
 Toledo, Tulaitula 118,  
 128, 149  
 Toreses 138  
 Torsario Daviz 278  
 Ualilio 163  
 Ulliberri 26  
 Uosca 327  
 Urkskn=Urcitanorum  
 28  
 Urraca 34  
 Váasco 288  
 Valbuena 327  
 Valcarlos 35  
 Valgode 281  
 Vascois 136  
 Vascuel 85, 119, 120  
 Veila 327  
 Vélez-Málaga 131  
 Vicente 115, 119, 124  
 Vida 182  
 Vilabertran 78  
 Vilagude 281  
 Villa Albarenga 78  
 Villabalde 78  
 Villagallegos 136  
 Villalán 78  
 Villanueva 35  
 Villasabariego 78  
 Villatoro 78  
 Villeza 78  
 Vindeleia 39  
 Visagra 134  
 Vivarrambla 133  
 Wamba, Wambán 81  
 Xainiz 141, 228, 287, 332  
 Xavier 34  
 Xefermecer 189  
 Xemeniz 156  
 Ximeno, Ximena 24  
 Yeluira 331  
 Yenair 115, 119  
 Yishak 179  
 Yoçef 179  
 Yunquera 122  
 Zaragoza 35, 124, 125,  
 172, 278, 333  
 Zeit diaconus 134  
 Zidi presbyter 278  
 Zocodover 131  
 Zumalacárregui 34

## III. VERBORUM

## (a) Spanish, Portuguese and Catalan

a 323  
 a agua, ay agua; a alma,  
     ay alma 309  
 abadengo 81  
 abanderado 276  
 abarca 34  
 abati 245  
 abatis 273  
 abdega, adega 44  
 abedul 41  
 abeja, abelha, abella 66,  
     332; abêia 313  
 abelar, abillar 223  
 acá 69, 130  
 acabar 70, 299  
 academia 45, 260  
 açalá 188  
 accebi 49  
 aceche, aseche 176  
 acedilla, ajetilla 120  
 aceite, azeite 132, 244;  
     adeite 244; azête 315  
 aceituna 132  
 acelga 132  
 achar (cf. hallar) 57, 68,  
     332; achades 303  
 acharat 297  
 achicar 265  
 acto, auto 48, 193, 194,  
     196, 298, 299; aito  
     298  
 adalid 130  
 adarga 130  
 adarme 45, 128, 131  
 adarve 131  
 adduitos 145  
 admitir 275  
 adobe 132  
 adonde 207  
 aduana 131  
 adufe 128  
 advertido, alvertío 222  
 afé, ahé (cf. he) 129  
 aficionados 223  
 aflare (cf. hallar) 145  
 afilots 148  
 afuera, ajuera 260  
 agasajar, agasalhar 81  
 agora 68, 69, 207, 212,  
     269  
 agua 123, 186, 200;  
     awa 186  
 aguacate 241  
 agudeza 200  
 agüero, agouro, auguri  
     328  
 águila 123, 143; álica  
     143  
 aguja, agulha 222, 226;  
     agulla 226; abuja  
     222  
 agutí 244  
 ahí 69  
 ahorra 207  
 ahorrar 130  
 aí 244, 296, 318  
 aina 175  
 aínda 182  
 aíj 240; ajés, ajises 260  
 ajos, achur 246  
 al 52  
 al 290  
 alacrán, alacram, alac-  
     rão 128  
 alarde 130  
 alarife 132  
 albañil 132  
 albarda 132  
 albardero 132  
 albaricoque 132  
 albéitar 132  
 alberca 132  
 alberchigo 123, 124,  
     128, 132  
 albuera, albufera 132  
 alburia 195  
 alcaide 131, 134  
 alcalde 126, 129, 131,  
     134, 157  
 alcantarilla 132  
 alcanz 189  
 alcaparras, táparaš 119  
 alcarria 130  
 alcazaba 130  
 alcázar, alcáçar, alcá-  
     cer(e) 129, 130  
 alcoba 132  
 alcurnia goda 79  
 aldea, aldeia 129, 131,  
     281  
 aleve, aleive, alevoso,  
     alevosía 80  
 alfageme 132, 284  
 alfanje 130  
 alfarero 132  
 alfayate, alfaiate 128,  
     131, 134, 284  
 alférez 130, 134  
 alfonsí 127  
 alforja 130  
 alforro 331  
 algara 130  
 algarada 130  
 algarroba 132  
 algebra 133  
 algorísmo 133  
 alguacil 131, 134  
 alquandre 207, 335  
 alguien, alguem, alguén  
     308  
 alguno, alguum 300  
 alhajara 134  
 alheo, alheio 301, 322;  
     aleio 322  
 alembiar 321  
 alhóndiga, alfândega,  
     alfóndech 128  
 alienado 275  
 alifar 130  
 aljibe, aljube 132  
 alkúñas 182  
 allá 69, 269; ayá, aá, á  
     269  
 allegar, achegar, aplegar  
     145, 332; aplecat 145  
 allí 69  
 alma, aurma 311, 335  
 almácén 131  
 almadia 241  
 almena 131  
 almofrej, almofrés, 259  
 almogàver 130  
 almojarife 131  
 almotacén 131

almud 131  
 alnado 52  
 alojar 213  
 alondra, aloa, aloza 41  
 alosa 40  
 alpaca 243  
 altar 10  
 alteza, altesa 176  
 alto 89  
 altre (cf. otro) 88, 328  
 altura, artura 222  
 alxad 182  
 amanecer 70, 90; amane-  
 ció muerto 70  
 amante 70  
 amar, amaren 290, 328;  
 amo, amas, ama 205;  
 ama 262, 330; amades,  
 amaes amáis amás  
 185; amava amavas  
 205; amábades 185;  
 amáisteis, amasteis  
 262; ama, amad,  
 amaos 185, 186;  
 amade, amai, amade  
 308; amá 262, 308;  
 amardes, amasse 205;  
 amaram, amarão,  
 amarom 309; amado  
 186, 204  
 amarrar 10, 256, 264  
 amauta 242  
 ambición 197; ambici-  
 oso 193  
 ambos, ambas 64, 149;  
 amos 64, 149; intra-  
 mas 143  
 amén 86  
 amenaza, menassa 333  
 amenazar 181  
 amistad, amizade 335  
 amor, amur 312  
 añafil 130  
 anana 244  
 ancho 331  
 andaluz 160, 221  
 andar 68, 327, 334;  
 andá 321; andou,  
 andô 320; anduviéra-  
 mos, andáramos 262;  
 andae 303; anar 327,  
 334  
 ángel 44; anjel 181  
 animal, animar 321  
 anís 207  
 año, ano, any 87, 88,  
 329  
 anochecer 70  
 añoranza, anyorâncâ  
 272  
 ansias 222  
 anta 241  
 antisepsis, antisepsia 275  
 apenas 263  
 apichu 241  
 a pobrezinha se cansou  
 322  
 apostolado 275  
 apuestas 275  
 aquel, aquele, aquell  
 25, 68, 69, 130, 304;  
 aqueles, aqués 307  
 aquese 212, 304  
 aqueste 212, 304; aquest,  
 aquast 98; achesta  
 155  
 aquí, ací 57, 68, 69, 130,  
 330  
 aquillotrar 305  
 aquistar 213  
 aramá 298  
 arapende 39, 40, 41  
 árbol 180  
 arcadores 202  
 arder, ardo, arço 303  
 ardid, ardil 260  
 ardiment 207  
 ardité 34  
 ardores 199  
 armonía, harmonía 199  
 arpa 206, 331  
 arrabal 131  
 arreceio, arrecea 301  
 arrecirse 265  
 arrivar 182  
 arrivista 275  
 arroba 131  
 arrobdâ 131  
 arrogar 199  
 arroyo, arróio 34; ar-  
 ruoyo 139  
 arroz 132, 134  
 arrumaco, arremueco  
 265  
 artículo, artejo 193, 194;  
 artigulo 288  
 arxiu 105  
 asar, assar 181, 187  
 asesinar 213  
 así, assim, ansí 182, 207,  
 212, 269, 323; ansina  
 269, 323; assim se  
 exprime 322; així 330  
 assaz 297  
 astualdus 79  
 atajo 264  
 atalaya 131  
 atambor 130  
 atar, ataré, atarey 121,  
 327  
 atáud, atáud 260  
 até, té (cf. hasta) 130,  
 323, 330; inté 323  
 atramuz 45  
 auçir 91  
 áulico 202  
 aunque, anque 198, 269  
 ausir 91  
 autairo 49, 328  
 auto de fé (da fé) 208  
 avanguarda 130, 207  
 ave 66  
 avellanales 281  
 averiguar 157, 193;  
 averigüé 157  
 aviat 92  
 avisar, avisaae 303  
 avispa 81, 164  
 ayer, ajer 181  
 ayollo 242  
 ayuda, ayudar, ajudar  
 145, 181; ayutorio  
 145  
 azada, axada, enxada  
 334  
 azagaya, azagaia 241,  
 296  
 azor, açor 311, 335;  
 aztor 325  
 azotea 132  
 azúcar, açúcar 188, 323  
 azuda 132  
 azul 132; azús, azuls  
 307  
 azulejos 132  
 azumbre 131  
 babero 222  
 babor 214  
 bagual 244  
 bailar, ballar 92  
 bajando la plaza 262

bajar, baixar 334  
 bajel 207  
 balada 207  
 baleo 206  
 baluz 34  
 banal 275  
 banana 318  
 banca, banco 213  
 banda 79  
 bandó 266  
 baño, banios 156  
 barba, barbilla 65; bar-va 182; barbudo 204  
 barbacoa 208, 240  
 barbecho 165  
 barragán 182  
 barranca 265  
 bastardo 81  
 bastido, baſtít 121  
 batalla 207  
 batata 240, 241  
 batlle 157  
 baúl, bául 260  
 bautizar 44  
 bayllía 206  
 beber, bever, beure 154, 182, 330; bevienda 182  
 becerro, bezerro 34  
 beesta, beesteiro 300  
 belén 249  
 bentónica, bentrónica 119  
 beodo, bébado 282, 330, 335; belda 335  
 berça 333  
 berro 40  
 besbol 271  
 beso, beijo, bes 327, 334  
 bésoso la mano 209  
 bestia, besta 300  
 betting 276  
 bico, bec 41  
 bien, bem, ben, bé 86, 90, 92, 120, 182, 289, 300, 302, 327, 328, 329; bens 90, 302; biens 226; beem 300  
 bienandant 193  
 bienquito 70, 204  
 biforme 202  
 biftec 215  
 bisnes 271  
 bisoño 213  
 bispo, bisbe (cf. obispo) 19, 44, 294  
 bisutería 215  
 bizarro 34, 209  
 blanco, branco, blanc 80, 175, 176, 182, 222, 332  
 blando, brando 332  
 blasfemar 44  
 blau 80  
 blondo 80  
 bluff 275  
 bluffman 275  
 bobo, bubu; bobos, boba, bobas 285  
 boca, boka 182  
 bodega, botiga, botica 44  
 bofá 298  
 bogar 63  
 bohío, boío, boyo, bo-chío, buhío, buío, bujío, buhiyo, boa 240, 245, 318  
 bolada, boyáta 109, 114, 123, 126, 330  
 bonito orta 315  
 borocán 119  
 borrachez divina 198  
 boteros 202  
 boxeo 275, 277  
 bragas, bragues 40, 41  
 bramar 80  
 brasileño, brasileiro, brasileros 272  
 bravo 209  
 breve, breu 89, 226, 331  
 brió 40  
 broquis 271  
 bruja, bruša 181  
 brújula 213  
 bruno 80  
 buba 122  
 bueno, buena, bom, boa 59, 120, 121, 221, 289, 301, 327, 328; bono 120, 327, 328; bún 120, 121; bo, bons 90, 301, 327, 328; bôa, boña 301; güeno 221  
 buey, güey 221, 222, 330; boi, bou 330  
 buitre 245  
 bulbul 266  
 buñuelo, guñuelo 222  
 burgués 214  
 burocracia 215  
 buscar, buškar 181; busqué 157  
 ca 207, 332  
 caá 243  
 cabadelant 203  
 caballo, cavalo, cavall 41, 66, 87, 88, 185, 285, 329, 330; cahu-allu, cahuayo 185, 246; caballero, cavaleiro 164, 209, 221, 322; cavalheiro 322, 327; cabayero 221  
 cabaña, cabana 41, 52  
 cabello, cabells 92  
 caber 330; quepa, caiba 333  
 cabeça, cabeça 61, 142, 181; kavesa 181; capa, capeças 142, 143, 330; cap 65, 91; capot 142; cabo 65, 142, 330; cabe 65; cabildo 335; cabra 54, 185, 246, 261; cabrón, cabro 261; capra 246; cabres 54  
 cacahuete 241  
 cacao 241  
 cachorro 34  
 cacique 208, 240, 242, 304; caciquismo 240  
 cada 44, 45, 330; cada hum, cadaguno, cadal-guno, cadascú 44; cadaldía 175; cada nada 263  
 cadera, cadeira, catedra 45, 333  
 çact almatran 112  
 cahiz 131  
 caja, caixa 320, 332  
 cajoeira 318  
 cajú 318  
 calaix 105  
 calandria 41  
 calaveira, caveira 301  
 calcetín, carsetín 269  
 caldeiro 227

callar, calar 284  
 calle 67  
 caló 223  
 caloña 333  
 caluroso 199  
 calzada 67  
 calzar, calçar 333  
 cama 67, 329  
 camba, cama 41, 66  
 cambiar 143  
 cambra 335  
 camino, caminho, camí 40, 67, 143, 264  
 camisa 52, 94  
 camote 241  
 campo, campana 275  
 can, cão, cà 66, 301, 311, 315; cães 289; cam 301; cõu 311  
 cànamo, càñem 84  
 cancha 275  
 candado 52, 335  
 candidato, candidato 260  
 candor 199  
 canéforas 266  
 caney 240  
 canjilón 264  
 canoa, canana, canahua, canagua 208, 238, 240, 245, 304, 318  
 cantar, canta, cantas, cantan, cantes, can- ten 137, 227; cantáis, kantás, cantats, can- taz, cantaç, canteu 100, 181, 188; cantábamos, cantábemos 137; cantabámos 308; cantey, cantou 227; cantaré, cantarei 54  
 cantigas, cántigas 45  
 canto 34  
 capibara 244, 296, 318  
 capitán 134  
 capoeira 318  
 capón, capão 318  
 cápsula, cáusula 269  
 cara 92  
 caramanchel 264  
 carbón, carbom 301  
 cargadores 202  
 carn 92  
 carnero 66, 261  
 carnícero, carnicer 92  
 carrer 67  
 carrera 140; karreira, karrera 140, 148, 167, 327; carreras criollas o del país 275  
 carretera 67  
 carro 40  
 casa 66, 86, 92, 94, 105, 181, 186, 227, 265, 307, 330; cas, ca 66; cases 86, 94, 137, 227; kaza 181, 187  
 casamiento 200  
 casar 333  
 caso, casun 187  
 castaño, kastango 156  
 castigar 329, 330  
 castillo castiellyo 164; castelo 328  
 casuso 298  
 catalanes 91  
 catar 68, 207, 298, 299  
 catedrals 307  
 catinga 244, 296, 318  
 catorce, catorze 332  
 causa 63  
 causen 91  
 cautivo, cativo 121, 196, 330; katibu 121  
 cava 213  
 caza, cacería 265  
 cazabí 240  
 cazar, caçar 333  
 cazatorpedero 201  
 cebada 186  
 cebó, ceba 195, 265; cibo 195  
 ceiba 240  
 celada 213  
 celaje 199  
 cenar, senar 181  
 céñit 134  
 ceniza, siniza 181  
 censo 194  
 centella 333  
 centinela 213, 304  
 cerca, cierca 176  
 cerraja 53, 332; serralha 332  
 cerro 265  
 certidão, certidões 301  
 certificats 100  
 cerveza, cerveja, cer- vesa 41  
 cha 214, 286, 296; chavena 296  
 chai 223  
 chaga 60, 110, 286, 330  
 chama 60, 110, 286, 332  
 chamar 286, 329, 332; chamam, cramar 287  
 champán 213  
 chamuscar, čamuškar 181  
 chancillería 207  
 chanico 228  
 chanta 287  
 chantagem 327, 332  
 chantre 206  
 chão 286, 307, 332; chao, chan 305, 306, 307  
 chapitel 207  
 charca, chacra, chacara 242  
 charquí 243  
 charretera 215  
 chave 228, 286, 287, 332  
 che, chu 293, 294, 308, 309  
 chegar (cf. llegar) 57, 284, 286  
 cheio (cf. lleno) 286, 301  
 cheirar, cheiro 228, 287, 332  
 chicarreros 202  
 chillar 332  
 chimenea 207  
 china 243  
 chinampas 241  
 chinchilla 243  
 chocolate 241, 304  
 chopo 332  
 chor (cf. flor) 287; chorudo 287  
 chorar (cf. llorar) 286  
 chousa 286  
 chover (cf. llover) 286  
 chumbo, chombo 228  
 churi 251  
 chus 69, 91  
 chuva (cf. lluvia 327)  
 cielo, céu, cel 59, 327, 329  
 ciencia, scienzia 195, 196, 333  
 cifra 133, 134

## INDICES

cima, cim 44  
 cinco, sinko 181; cinco  
     día 321; cinque, synqy  
     302; cinco, cinc 327,  
     331  
 cine 201; cinematógrafo,  
     sietemógrafo 276  
 cingidur 49, 141  
 cirio, ciri 327  
 ciruela 263  
 cisne 264  
 ciudad, cibdade, cidade  
     294; cidadão, cida-  
     dom 309  
 cizallas 206  
 clamar, clamás 168, 226,  
     332  
 claraboya 213  
 clarifico 195; claror 195  
 claro, clairo, 332  
 claroscuro 213  
 clausura 195  
 clavo 332; cravo, cravar  
     332  
 clérigo, crego, crigo 175  
 clientela 275  
 clinch 276  
 club 215, 275; clubman  
     275  
 coacción 201  
 coati 244, 318  
 cobertera, cobertoira  
     227, 328  
 coca 243  
 cocer, cocinar 265  
 cofre 207  
 coger, colher, cuié 320,  
     322; collitura 142,  
     145; coio' Salon ajusto  
     203; cuejan 148  
 cogote, cocote 330  
 cohombro, cogombro  
     335  
 cojo, coixu 156, 333;  
     cuixa, coixa 333  
 collazo 52  
 coloma 64, 88, 334  
 color, colors 334  
 colorado, côrdo 301;  
     colorida 290  
 comadreja 183  
 comandante, comen-  
     dante 265; comendar  
     265  
 combóio 323  
 comenzar 335  
 comer 68; come, comes,  
     comem, comemos 321  
 cómodo 213  
 compañón, companhão,  
     companyô 81  
 comprar, compró, com-  
     praron, comparoron  
     144  
 común, comum 289  
 con, conno 286, 335;  
     conna 144, 148; cola  
     227; cuna 227; co-  
     migo 269; con ellos'  
     cojo 203  
 concamiamus, conca-  
     miationem 143  
 conceder 275  
 concejo, conceillo 142  
 concurren 195  
 conde, comte 330  
 condor 243  
 conejo, coelho, coello  
     305, 332; konelyo,  
     konjair 122  
 confeita 333  
 conoher, conoher, co-  
     nèixer 90, 334  
 conortar, konortar 182  
 conquista 118  
 consciéncia, consciênça  
     320  
 conscripto 273  
 consiûrade 303  
 construye 199  
 contenido, conteúdo 303  
 contento 198  
 contracaridad 264  
 contradicho, contradic-  
     go 148; contradic-  
     ción 264  
 contrasentido 264  
 control 275  
 contudo 322  
 cónyuge 181  
 copa 330  
 coraje 207  
 coral 200  
 corazón, coraçao 65;  
     corações 301; cor,  
     cuer 65  
 cordel 207  
 cordoan 99  
 cormano 65  
 coronel 208  
 correia, corrêia, corretja  
     333  
 correchero 202  
 corredor 276  
 cort, corte, cortes 176,  
     203; cortés 85, 328;  
     cortesía, coltesia, cur-  
     tisia 187  
 cosa, cousa 63, 87, 91,  
     92, 121, 227, 285,  
     299, 311, 312; coisa  
     121, 285, 298, 300;  
     coasa 312, 328; codah  
     244  
 coser 265  
 cosí, cosina 65  
 coso 334  
 cotal 197  
 coya 242  
 cranque 271  
 cras 63, 207  
 cravo 296  
 crecer, crecel 188; cre-  
     cido, crescut 90  
 crèdor 301  
 creer, creede 300; credes  
     303; creiga 262; creu  
     330  
 cresén 91  
 criminás 307  
 crisis 45  
 cristal 200  
 crudo, cru 330  
 cruz 89, 196; cruzes 308;  
     creu 89, 92, 98, 100;  
     crod 89, 100; crots  
     100; crau 98  
 cuajaleche 122  
 cuajar, coalha 332  
 cual 91, 226, 305; cualo  
     226; cuala 91, 226;  
     cal 305, 308  
 cuando 332  
 cuara 270  
 cuarenta 332  
 cuchillo, cuitelo, coitelo  
     307  
 cuerda 45  
 cuero, coiro 328  
 cuerpos 148  
 cueva, cova 63  
 cuidar 207

cuita, coita 307  
 cuitiar 271  
 curaca 240, 242  
 curandero, culandero  
     260  
 curare 244, 318  
 cute 270  
 cuyo, catio, cujo 63, 261  
  
 dama 207  
 dandos, dadnos 335  
 daño, dano, dany 87,  
     88, 156, 285, 334;  
     daynno 156  
 danta 241  
 dar 85, 227, 330; dais,  
     das 313; daros he 211;  
     daré 262; dió, diera  
     211; dieron, deram,  
     derom, dero 321;  
     diólle, dioye, dioi 227;  
     deu 92; dad, dai 85;  
     darle, dalle, dadie,  
     dalde 211, 335; da ó  
     demo 298; dar uma  
     lição ao filho 323;  
     diese, dase 227; ran 260  
 dársena 131  
 dayan 297  
 de 222, 260, 323; di  
     323; e 222, 260  
 decir 68, 224, 227, 308;  
 dizer 68; dicer 308;  
 dicir 308; decer 307,  
     308; dir 68; dice 222;  
 dizvos 205; diz que,  
     i que 263; decides,  
     decis 185; decid 185;  
 dizee 303; digaó  
     250; dije 227, 298;  
 dixe 298; decié 227;  
 dijo 58, 154; dijole  
     260; dixo 58, 154;  
 diss', disse, disso 293,  
     294, 298; dixiere 205;  
 direvos, dezirvos he  
     211; diredes 303;  
 dicho 69, 165, 204;  
 rise 260; ice 222; idil  
     224  
 decoro 197  
 defensión 175  
 defuncción 195  
 dehesa, deveza 331  
  
 dejar, dexar, deixar 284,  
     333; deñar 158; deja,  
     eja 222  
 delantero 130, 207  
 dellos dizien 207  
 délplico 195  
 demandar, demanar  
     169, 334  
 demo 69  
 demorar 207  
 dentro, dento 321  
 departío, departeu, de-  
     partiu 294  
 derechero 165  
 dernier cri 275  
 descarrilou, descarril-  
     hou 323  
 desde, dende 264, 269  
 desechar 236  
 desechar, desecha, de-  
     secho 264  
 desembuelto, desenvol-  
     tura 208  
 desnudo, esnúo 186, 222,  
     330  
 despacho, despatx 157  
 despedaza, ehpeasa 260  
 después, repué 260  
 destruycion 195  
 desvolcanarse 265  
 detrás, etráh 260  
 deuda, dívida 282, 329  
 deudo 335  
 dever 284; déve 185,  
     284; dévo, déva 284  
 día 67, 92; día de re-  
     unión 275  
 diablo 194  
 diciembre, dezembro,  
     desembre 330  
 diestro 65  
 diez, dez, deu 331  
 difcil 195  
 digno, dino 48, 50, 196  
 dilaten, ilaten 260  
 dilluns 100  
 dinero, diniru 285; din-  
     heir 316  
 dionisiaco 202  
 Dios, Deus 58, 69, 179,  
     182, 194, 204, 214;  
     El Dio 58, 179, 182,  
     194; Dés 311; diosa,  
     deusa, diesa 176  
  
 discurrir, discurso 213  
 diván 131  
 divinal 195  
 do 207, 212; donde, de  
     donde 207; donde mi  
     tio 263; ontá, ontava  
     259, 263  
 doblar, dobrillar 142, 332  
 doce, doze 181; dotze  
     105; dodze 181  
 doctor, doutor 300, 321;  
     doitor 298, 300  
 domingo 185  
 don 260; dona 92;  
     domgna 156  
 donar 330  
 doncel 207  
 dormir, dormo, dorm  
     102; dorma, dormi  
     103; dormia, dor-  
     mia 313; dormindin-  
     ho 323  
 dos, dous, duos 308, 334  
 drama 45  
 ducho 145  
 duelo, doo 300  
 dueño, duano 327, 334  
 dulce, duce 264; döce  
     323  
 dulo 308  
 duda, dúvida 282, 329,  
     335; dubte 329; dulda  
     335  
 durmiente 276  
  
 echar 264; echarlo, e-  
     challo 286; echa 142,  
     145; echenli 165; gei-  
     tat 142, 145; itare 165  
 eclipse, eclise 269  
 edecán 273  
 eixo 333  
 ejido, exido 204  
 él, ella (cf. also lo, la)  
     99, 103, 144, 145, 222;  
     ela 144; ellí 144, 145;  
     els 103; ele 308; elos  
     144, 148; ero, era 144;  
     enna 144, 148; elei-  
     sco 156; el que 23; er  
     222; ellí 204; il 308  
 embajador, embaxador  
     195  
 emboscada 213

## INDICES

en 227; eno 335  
 en, en vez de 275;  
     cenú 289  
 enajenado 275  
 enclín 206  
 encontrar 264; encuan-  
     tra 140; encontrei, -a,  
     encontrei éla 323  
 eñebo 226; chinebro  
     94, 226; ginebre 94  
 enemistad 197  
 enero (cf. janeiro) 55,  
     87, 122, 226, 285, 331;  
 xineru 226; yenair 55,  
     119, 121, 327, 328;  
 gener 55, 87, 119,  
     122  
 enfadar, enhadar 176  
 enfermedad 207  
 enhiesto 194  
 enjalma, chalma 246  
 ensayando, 'enzallando'  
     258  
 ensôso 333  
 entendudo 204  
 entero, enteiro, enter  
     334  
 entierro 264  
 entones, estonz 189  
 entrar, dentrar 222; en-  
     trar en, entrar a 264  
 entre más 263  
 entretener 213  
 enviâ-lo 335  
 enxofre 302  
 equipaje 214  
 er 298  
 era, eira 87, 148  
 eramá 298  
 eropeas 161  
 es, sa 98, 99  
 escéptico 193  
 esclavizar, esclavitzar  
     157  
 escopeta 213, 304  
 escopilla 164  
 escrepa 270  
 escribir, escrebir 269  
 escuela, escola 44, 45  
 esdrújulo 213  
 ese 25, 69, 308; eiso 156;  
     esotro 212; ise 308  
 esforzado 208  
 esmarte 270  
 esmorzar 92  
 espada, espasa 36; ešpa-  
     tiella 120  
 espalda, espatlla 335  
 espárrago, espàrrec 84  
 especiaras 296  
 espejo, spilli 142, 145  
 esperar, esperae 303;  
     speraee 100  
 espiche 215  
 espíritu, espirito, espe-  
     rit 36, 48, 193, 194;  
     spiritu 196  
 espuela, espora, espolón,  
     espolonada 79  
 espuenda, espona, spu-  
     enna, spuanna, spon-  
     na 143  
 esquin 18  
 estaca 80  
 estafar 213  
 estail 270  
 estala 80  
 estar 70, 212, 321;  
     estoy, estou, estic 330;  
     esté, esteja 303; es-  
     tade, estae 282; estu-  
     vimos 262; este, estea  
     175; estan, estando  
     226; estante 303;  
     está(s) escribiendo  
     259; tá 321  
 este 207  
 este 25, 69, 121; ešt 121;  
     estotro 212  
 estíercol 222  
 estrella, estréla 88, 276;  
     strela 156  
 estribo 185, 246; etipu,  
     irtipu 246  
 estribor 214  
 estudio 193, 260; eturio  
     260  
 etapa 275  
 etiqueta 214  
 evangelis, avangelis 98  
 exacto, esaito 269  
 examinar, esaminar 196  
 excepción 197; excep-  
     ción hecha de 275  
 exclusives 260  
 exir 204; escieret 156;  
     ixe 304  
 ez llaves 227  
 fablar (see hablar), falar  
     55, 57, 68, 284, 332;  
     falásemos, falasémos  
     308  
 fachada 213  
 fácil, jácil 197, 260;  
     facilitar 213  
 faja, faixa, faxa, faša,  
     fexa 87, 166, 334  
 famélico, jamelgo 221  
 familiar 195  
 fanega 131  
 fantasía 213  
 faraute 81  
 fardida lança 206, 331  
 farpa 206, 331  
 fatigante 275  
 faula 330, 332  
 fayamán 270  
 faz 199  
 fazer (cf. hacer), facer  
     306, 307, 308; far,  
     fayer 308; faguer 306,  
     308; faz 63, 205, 328;  
     fazian 205; fiz 205,  
     298; fige 298; fezeste,  
     fizeste 303; fijeché,  
     figueche 308; fiz, feze  
     fezo 293, 294, 320,  
     321, 331; fei 320, 321;  
     fiu 328; feu 100; fet  
     89, 100; fizerom, fize-  
     ram 309; fijen, figuen  
     306, 307, 308; faca  
     145; façades 303; fez  
     todos sentarem 323;  
     faze 328  
 fe 48, 129, 194, 300; fee  
     300  
 febrero, febrer 92, 119;  
     febrair 119  
 fecha, feyta, fegga 165  
 fecho (cf. hecho) 36,  
     165; feito 36, 55, 85,  
     142, 145, 165, 226,  
     227, 285, 320, 327,  
     331, 333; feto 55, 85,  
     142, 226; feit 226; fei  
     85; fet 36, 55, 165,  
     327, 331, 333; feichu  
     333  
 fel, fê 321  
 feliz 193  
 femea, femella 335

ferratge 327  
 ficar 70  
 fiel 48  
 fiemo, fem 222  
 fiesta 48, 194  
 fir, fir 299  
 fijo (cf. hijo) 186, 221;  
     figgos 148; fillo 122,  
     142, 285, 331; filla 56,  
     59, 87; filha 56; filhos,  
     fi-fí 315; filh 316; fill  
     331, 333  
 filacteria 127  
 filhar, filhay 303  
 fin, fim 289  
 finalmente 226  
 fincar 299  
 finestra, fresta, fëestra,  
     feestra, freesta 67,  
     299  
 fingir 194  
 fiveoclock 215, 275  
 flaco 286, 332  
 flanco 286  
 flaya 270  
 flecha, frecha 175, 285  
 fleje 286  
 flete 256, 264  
 flirted 275  
 flajo 286, 332; frouxo  
     332, 333  
 flor 286, 287, 312, 321,  
     332; flur 312; falô  
     321; frol 169, 287,  
     332; lore 169  
 florar 265; florecer 90,  
     265; florece, floreix,  
     florecemos, florim 59  
 flujo 286  
 follar 122  
 fone felo, jone jelo 271  
 fonta 80, 206, 207, 331  
 fontaina 207  
 formar 238  
 forte, fort 327  
 forzar, fuerzo, forzo 262  
 foso 213  
 fossatera 148  
 fracsas 213  
 fragata 213  
 fraile 206; freire 297  
 francês, francei 320;  
     franchutes 276  
 freno, freio 301  
 frente 160, 331  
 fresno 333  
 frío 330  
 friso 213  
 frisoles, frijoles 259  
 fruto, frutifero 196; fruit  
     92; fruito, froyto 294;  
     fruita, froita 307  
 fuego, fogo, foc 54  
 fuente 160, 162, 331;  
     fuante 140; fuonte  
     311; fonte 311; huente  
     181  
 fuero, huero 181  
 fuerte, huerte 181  
 fuerza, força 333  
 ful jul 270; fuliar 271  
 fulgores 199  
 fumos da Índia 295  
 fusiles, fusis 307  
 futbol 215, 275, 277;  
     futbolista 215  
 futuro 70  
 gabacho 276  
 gabayí 182  
 gaché 223  
 gage 213  
 gaire 91  
 galeaza 213  
 gallardo 81  
 gálico 195  
 gallo, gallina, gallinaza,  
     gallinazo 245, 263,  
     265  
 galpón 241, 242  
 gañán 207  
 ganar 66, 331; ganado  
     66; gado 66, 294, 307;  
     gâando 294; gando  
     307; ganar por la  
     mano 197; ganhar,  
     guany 331  
 ganivet 92  
 gardingus 79  
 garra 329  
 garzón 207  
 gasajar 81  
 gastar 81; gastado,  
     waštâo 121  
 gato 41, 52, 66; gat 41;  
     gata 285; guetu 285  
 gaucho 244  
 gemir, jemir 181  
 generación, geeraçam,  
     geração 300-301  
 general, geeral, geral 300  
 generoso, jeneroso 181  
 genovés 213  
 gente 186, 226, 331;  
     xente 190, 226, 331;  
     yente 331; gens 91  
 georgette 275  
 gloria, grolia 332  
 gobernar, governar 44  
 godos 79, 276  
 golpe 44, 45, 222; colpe,  
     cop 44; gorpe 222  
 góndola 213  
 gorrión 263  
 gota 91  
 governalho 332  
 gozo, goig 330  
 gozosa pena 198  
 grande 208, 226; gran-  
     día, grandeza, grandi-  
     oso 208; gran 293;  
     grando; granda 226  
 greda 44  
 gringo 276  
 grotesco 213  
 guacamayo 240  
 guagua, huahua 243  
 guano 243  
 guardar, guardats, guar-  
     deu 100  
 guarnicionero 202  
 guasa 270  
 guaso, huaso 243, 251  
 guerop, guirape 271  
 guerra 55, 79, 157, 331  
 guiangue 271  
 guijarro 34  
 guisa 81  
 guitarra 34  
 gurbái 270  
 gusto 198  
 habas, fabas 185, 246,  
     247; aghuas, ahuas  
     185, 246, 247  
 haber, haver, heure 10,  
     90, 303, 330, 331;  
     aber 180; haguí 90;  
     haveu, havets 100;  
     auya 205; auie 206;  
     hube 328; hubiera;  
     hubiese 211, 212;

## INDICES

haber (*cont.*)

he(i) de cantar 54;  
ha muerto, ha nacido 212, 264; habría 212;  
habido, hagut 90;  
houverão fim 303;  
hubieron temores 262;  
hubimos muchos heridos 262; ove, ouve 328

habillado 207

hablar 55, 68, 284, 332;  
avlar 181; habla, avla 181; habláis, habléis 205; hablasteis, hablastes 205

haca, faca 221

hacer (*cf. fazer*), hazer 162, 186, 188, 222, 224, 227; haz 63;  
hace 328; hice 227, 328; hizo 331; hecistes 175; haga 145; hágamen, háganme, haiga 262; hacer caso 187; jadel 188, 224; jacel 222

hacia, facia 130

hacienda, fazenda 66, 67

hadedura 162

hado 162

halcón 162

halfime 276

hallar, fallar (*cf. achar*) 57, 68, 145, 180, 286, 332; fallar(e), fallaro, fallares 205; hallado 186

hamihala 130

hamético 266

harén, harem 329

harto, jarto 259

hasta, fasta, fata (*cf. até*) 130, 330; hasta cada rato 263; hasta ayer comencé 263

hayuela 161

haza, haça 166, 334

hazaña 161

he, e, hete, he aquí 129;  
he, a la, 48, 194  
hecho (*cf. fecho*) 36, 55, 70, 85, 142, 145, 165, 204, 226, 331, 333;

jechu 331

helar, gelar, xelar 226

hembra 180, 335

henchir, encher, omplir

332

henequén 240

heñir 193, 194

hera 148

heraldo 81

herir, ferir 181; herida,

hería 260

hermano, hermana, ir-

mão, irmã, germã,

germana 51, 64, 92, 142, 226, 331; irmão

301; irmão, irmãos

307, 331; iermana

142; chirmán 226

hermoso, formoso 57;

hermosísima 197

herrén 162, 327; fer-

rajne, ferreynes, fer-

renes 327

herrero, ferreiro, ferrer

327

herropeado 161

hesitar 275

hiel, fel 48

hierba (see yerba)

hierro, fierro 181

highlife 275

hijo, hija (*cf. fijo*) 36,

56, 58, 87, 122, 142,

148, 186, 221, 331,

333; hižo, ižo 180,

181; jijo 260

hinchar 332

hiniestra 67

hinojo 175, 332; genojo

175; jolho 308

hilo 180

hipódromo 276

hipogrifo, hipógrifo 45

hogaño 68, 69

hoiats 100

hoja, folha, foya 315,

333; fueya 225; fulla

92

hojaldre 122

holanda 214

holgar, folgar 221

hombre, ombre, homem,

hom 53, 145, 180,

335; homens 53, 307;

homes 307; ome,

homne, omne, hoñe

150, 207; omnes 53;

uemne 145; uamne

44; om 329

hombro 335

homenaje 207

homérida 202

homicidio 193, 194

honra, honrra, onra 155,

180

hook 276

horca, forka 181

hormiga, formiga 84,

87

horno, furn 122; forno

285

horro, forro 180, 181,

331

hortolano, hortolà 92

hosco 162

hoy, uuoy, uey 139,

140

huaca 242

huebos 69

hueco, güeco, oco 305;

oca 92

huelga, juerga 160, 221

huérfan, órfão orfe 44,

45, 84, 221, 289, 329;

orfom 301

huerto, vortos 140, 327

huesa, ossa 80

hueso, hueso, osso, güe-

so, güesu 80, 181, 187,

305

huevo, buevo, güevo

221, 260;

óvo, óva,

óvos, óvas 284

huir, fuir 181; huiga 262

hule 241

humanal 195

huracán, furacán 240,

304

idiota 197

igapó 318

iglesia, igreja 44, 175,

294, 316;

elguesia,

elglesia,

es-

glézia 44;

iglesias, ile-

sia 294;

greza 316;

lazlesyo 94

igual, iguás 307

iguana 240

ijada 333  
 imagem, omagem 298  
 inca, inga, incásico 242  
 ínclito 195, 202  
 inclusives 260  
 incontestabilidad 201  
 indigno, indino 269  
 infalibilidad 214  
 infante, infanta, infant 58, 334; yffant 204, 334  
 infantería 213  
 infrascrito 261  
 infundamentabilidad 261  
 inhame 296  
 inhiesto 48  
 inquisición, inquisidor 198, 208  
 intención, entension 269  
 intervalo, intérvalo 45, 260  
 invierno 264  
 ipecacuana, ipecacuana 244, 318  
 ir (cf. va) 68, 222, 260, 308; dir 222; jir 260; ide, ides 303; iba, ia, iña 308  
 irrespeto 264  
 irreverencia 264  
 itálico 195  
 izquierdo, esquerdo, esquerre 17, 34, 35, 65, 329  
 jabalí 127  
 jabón, xabón, šabón 123, 181  
 jaguar, yaguareté 244, 250, 296  
 jaitón 270  
 jaló 271  
 jamachi 270, 271  
 jamelgo 160, 221, 331  
 jamón 41  
 jándalo 160, 221  
 janeiro (cf. enero) 55, 122, 285, 308, 328, 331  
 janela 67  
 jáquima 246  
 jardín, jardim, jardí 206, 297, 316; jardís 308  
 jarirú 270  
 jarrete 213  
 jarro 181, 190, 238, 246, 269; xalo 190, 246, 269; charu, kazu 190  
 jaula 207  
 jayán 207  
 jefe de obra 215  
 jejum, jejuns 301, 302  
 jícara, xícara 241  
 jilguero 263  
 jimio, ximio 302  
 jockey 275, 276  
 jocote, xocote 269  
 jolón 270  
 jorn 67; jornal 331  
 joven, jove 94, 199, 226; choben 94, 226  
 judío, judeu, judió, jidió 58, 179, 181, 226, 328; xudiú 226  
 juego, jozo, joc 331  
 juerga (cf. huelga) 160, 221  
 jueves 58, 69  
 juglar 68  
 jugo 330  
 juizo 333  
 junco, junc 331  
 junio, juny 105; junho 331  
 justicia 194  
 juzgar, julgar 335  
 kabayiku 183  
 kannariekas 149  
 krausismo 201  
 labrar, labrador, labranza, labor 67; llavore 287  
 lacayo, laqué 214  
 lacio 332  
 ladino 117  
 lado 186; lados, lats 54  
 ladrón, lladre 100  
 lago 330  
 lágrima, llágrima 84  
 lamer, llamber 227; lamber 269  
 lana, läa, lä, läs 59, 289, 301, 329; llana 227, 329  
 landre 332  
 lanza, lança, llança 41  
 largo, llarg 88, 168  
 lastar 80  
 latir 332  
 laud 134  
 laverca 79  
 laya 271  
 lays 91  
 lazo de llegada 276  
 leal 185; lealdade, leardade 321  
 leche, leite, llet 56, 165, 228, 287; tseiti 228, 287, 333  
 lechecinos, leitefinos 122  
 lechería 245  
 lecho, leito, llit 67, 109, 150, 157, 327, 333; leio 157  
 lechugas, leitugas 122, 333  
 leer 183; lea, leiga 262; leyerdes 205; leido 204; llegar 100  
 legua, légoa, llegua 40, 41  
 leilão 284  
 leiterola (cf. cuajaleche), lahtaira, laxtaira, lah-tairuela, laxtairuela, laitarola, lliterola 120, 121, 122, 333  
 lejos de 275; lejos 181  
 lembrar 321  
 lengua, língua, língoa, llengua, llingga 168, 227, 329; yengua 88, 122, 168, 221, 329  
 leño, leña 69, 334; lenho, lleny 334  
 letra, lletre 100  
 levantarse 264  
 levante 207  
 ley, leyes 203; lej 181  
 libre 180; libertad, liberdade, llibertat 283, 330  
 limpio 329  
 linaje 207  
 linchar 275  
 líquido 199  
 liróforo 199, 202  
 lirón 332  
 literatura 266  
 llaga (cf. chaga) 88, 110, 330; plaga 330

## INDICES

llama 243  
 llama (cf. chama), flama 60, 88, 110, 168, 169, 199, 228, 329, 332; flama 332  
 llamar (cf. chamar) 60, 88, 168, 329, 332; llamamiento, lamento 304; clamar 332; xamado 332  
 llana, plana 331  
 llano (cf. chão) 168, 305, 332; pla 168, 332; xano 332  
 llantén, plantain, plantatge 121, 168, 327, 332  
 llave (cf. chave) 141, 228, 246, 287, 332; llahuy 246; tsabe 141, 228, 287, 332  
 llegar (cf. chegar) 57, 182  
 llena (cf. cheio) 228  
 llevar 70, 212  
 llueram 287  
 llorar, plorar 332  
 llosa, xosa 141, 228, 287, 328, 332; plosa flausa 287  
 llover 286  
 llvizna 267  
 lluvia, pluja 269, 327  
 lo (cf. el), la, los, las 98, 99, 103, 144, 226, 304; loh enamorao 259; lu 148; le, les 99, 203, 226, 261; lle 227; li, lis 144, 145; o a os as 227, 289; lo soy es Pérez, lo hablaba era usted 263; le tréyamos papah 259  
 lobio 79  
 knockout 275  
 lodo, llot 327  
 lomo, llom, lombo 64, 88, 148, 149, 169, 334  
 lonchi 270  
 loor 300, louvees 303  
 lorica, lorika 142  
 loro, lora 261  
 losa, lousa, lauša 52, 121, 328, 329  
 lozano, louçana 290  
 luego, logo, lloc 145, 327; lloco 289  
 lueñe, longe 334  
 lugar, lugares, lugás 226  
 lujo, luxuria 193  
 lumbroso 150  
 luna, lua, lluna 86, 88, 93, 141, 168, 227, 327, 329; tsuna 141, 168, 228, 329  
 lunes 58, 69  
 lur, lures, llur 90, 144, 227  
 luto, luctuoso 50, 196  
 luz, lúj 124  
 machetear 265  
 macho 66, 180  
 madera, matera 143, 333; madeira, madera 311, 320  
 madre, mãe 64  
 madroño 263  
 mäer, maer 299  
 magnificat, maunifica 261  
 magnífico 195  
 maguer 44  
 maguey 240  
 maison Clothilde 275  
 maiz, maizal 240, 245, 318  
 majada, malhada, mala, mallada 43  
 majuelo, mallolo, mallol 52, 139, 327, 333; malluolo 327  
 mal 329  
 malentendido 275  
 maletía 207  
 malhadado 182  
 maloca, malón 244  
 malsín 182  
 malvada, maruvada 313  
 mamá, mamâe 320; mama, mamitay 238  
 mamacona 242  
 mañiana 63, 207; mane 207; manhanas 290  
 manati 318  
 mancebo, macip 52  
 mancilla, mandziya 181,  
 mandioca 244, 296, 318  
 manegga 165  
 manera 238  
 manga, mânega 84  
 manjar 68, 207, 297; menjar 68  
 mano, mão, mā, mà 312, 329  
 manteca 40; manteiga 40, 323; mantega 92  
 mantener, mantién 205  
 manto 52  
 manzana, maçã, mançanas 67, 290, 335  
 mapa 43  
 maquila 131  
 mar 328  
 maravedí 131  
 marchar 213  
 marcial 195  
 marfil, marfim 296  
 marido, marito 142, 330  
 mármol 195  
 martes 58, 69  
 mártir 194  
 marzo, março, mars 119, 124  
 mas 322, 330; más, mais, més 69, 91, 330; maj, ma 259, 330  
 masculo, masquûl 121  
 massanella 120  
 matamoros 209  
 matar 68; matey 227; matou, matô 313  
 mate 68  
 mate 243  
 matéria, matera 320  
 matiné 275  
 matrimonio 200  
 mayo 119, 181  
 mayor, mor 175, 333; moor 300  
 mayordomo, mordomo, majordom 66  
 mazal, mazalado 182  
 mbaracayá 251  
 me 58, 203, 261, 322; me disse 322; mha  
 mentido 293  
 mecânico 45  
 meçer, mexer 333  
 médico, metge 92

medio, meio, meo, mig 301, 333; mitja 157;  
 medio dia 207  
 meeting, mitin 215, 276  
 mejilla 333  
 mejor, mejón, 222, 333;  
 melhor, mió 320, 333  
 mel, mē 321  
 meldorf 183  
 mendigo, méndigo 45, 260  
 mensaje, mensajero 207, 335  
 mente, mientras 81; ment 85  
 mentira, mintiru 148  
 mercado, merkatal 330  
 mercar 264  
 merchante 207  
 merendar 52  
 merunhanha 323  
 mes 334  
 mesa 327, 328, 334  
 mesón 66  
 mester 297  
 mesura 328  
 meta 276  
 metate 242  
 metido, metudo 204  
 metlapil 242  
 métrica 199  
 mexericar, mišelikar 182  
 mezcal 241  
 mezquino 189  
 mí, mim 58, 90, 226;  
 ñia 308; meu, miño,  
 minha, miña, mia 308, 328; minh 316;  
 mha 293, 303  
 mica 91  
 mientras más 263  
 mentre 335  
 miércoles 58, 69  
 migaja, miaja 186, 260, 330  
 mil, mill 329  
 millón 213  
 mirar 68, 207, 298, 328  
 mismo, mihmo, mimmo 220, 330; mesmo 212, 269  
 mitad, metade, meatade 300  
 mitimaes 242  
 mobilada, mobiliada 323  
 modernismo 202  
 molde, motlle 335  
 moles, mos 307  
 molho, monllo 307  
 molín 227; mollinarum 288  
 molineiras, 327  
 monarquía 45  
 monasterio, monesterio 193  
 monje, monje 181, 206  
 montaria 323  
 monte, mont, montaña 265, 327  
 monzón 335  
 moro 264; moro lati-  
 nado 117; moiros 298  
 morrir, morrer, mor-  
 reu-lhe, morrē-lhe 311  
 mortales 307  
 mosca, moška 181  
 mossegar 334  
 mozarabe 333  
 mozo, moçu 148, 334  
 mucho, muito, mui,  
 molt 89, 142, 145,  
 158, 165, 226, 227,  
 285, 294, 323, 333;  
 muncho 269; munto 323; moy, moyto 294;  
 muchol tengo por  
 torpe 204  
 mudar 328; mudar  
 aires 265  
 muela, mó, mola 83, 86  
 muerte, muarte 140,  
 176; mórtro, mórtos,  
 mórtta, mórtas 284  
 mujer, molher, muller,  
 mullé 56, 89, 122,  
 285, 321, 322, 329;  
 muié 321, 322, 329,  
 333  
 mula 66  
 multidão, multidüe,  
 multidõe, multidom 301  
 mundanal 195  
 murillesco 266  
 muro, muros, mur, murs  
 54, 58, 92  
 nabos, napur 185, 246  
 nada, ná 186; nadie,  
 naide 198; naiden  
 269; nadi 204  
 nadir 133  
 nagual 242  
 nagüela 242  
 naire 296  
 najo 307  
 ñame (cf. inhame) 241  
 namorado 182  
 ñandú 244  
 naranja 132  
 naufragar, nafregatu,  
 nafregatos 148  
 náuseas 222  
 nava 9, 33; naba 330  
 navio, navi 316  
 necesidad, neceçedad 219  
 negócio, negoco 320  
 negro, negre 330, 334  
 neoyorkino 266  
 ni 329; nimbla 203  
 niche 207  
 nido, ninho 330  
 nieto, nieta, neto, neta,  
 nét 64; nebot, neboda  
 51, 65  
 nieve 200  
 nigua 240  
 ningún, dengún 222;  
 nenhuns, negús 307  
 niño 180  
 nispero 164, 263  
 nítido 195  
 no, não, non 91; no  
 bien 263; no viene  
 nada 263; não me  
 lembro, não lembro-  
 me 322; não faz isto  
 323  
 nobiizika 183  
 noche, noite, noute, nit  
 85, 86, 109, 121, 156,  
 157, 165, 166, 167,  
 203, 300, 327, 328,  
 333; noch 85, 203;  
 nog 155, 157, 328;  
 nueite 85, 167, 225;  
 nuet 225; nuxti 121,  
 122, 333; nohte 327  
 nopal 241  
 norte 207

nos 176, 261; mos 261;  
 nosotros 176, 181,  
 187, 261; mosotros  
 261; mozotrus 181,  
 187; lohotroh 261;  
 nós tudo fazia 321;  
 nós havemo de andá  
 321  
 notar, notade 303  
 notario 194  
 novela 213  
 novia 132  
 nudo, nu 330  
 nuestro, nuastro 140;  
 nueso, nosso 335  
 nueve, nuef, nove, nou  
 85, 203, 328  
 nuevo, nou 92  
 nulificar 275  
  
 o, ou 207, 327  
 o, os, a, as (see 10)  
 obedeciese 262  
 obispo (cf. bispo) 19, 44,  
 294  
 objetos 195-197  
 obligado, obrigado 332  
 obras, oabras 140  
 obscuro, escuro 212, 269  
 oca 245, 296, 318  
 occidente 207  
 occir 68  
 oceáno 45  
 ocell 57, 66  
 ocelote 241  
 ocho, oito, vuit 85, 86,  
 87, 92, 333  
 octubre, octobre, oktú-  
 bar, octubar 122  
 oeste 207  
 oficial, oficiais, oficiais  
 313  
 ofrecer, ojrecer 260  
 oír 89, 92, 185; oido  
 204; ofrdes 205; ou-  
 vir, ouviu, oyeu 294  
 ojo, olho, ull 48, 56,  
 65, 87, 109, 120, 166,  
 167, 221, 285, 313,  
 322, 332; oio 313,  
 322, 327; uello 167;  
 welyo 56, 120, 122,  
 327, 332; olhar, oyá  
 315

olear 265  
 oler, goler 222, 260;  
 huele, güeile 222, 260  
 olvidar de 323  
 omezillo, omezio 193,  
 197  
 omiciero 148  
 once, ondzi 181; onces  
 260  
 oncle 51, 65  
 onda, ona 64, 88, 92,  
 334  
 onde 207; ontá, ontava  
 259, 263  
 orçuelo 333  
 oreja, orelha, orella 65;  
 oreya 226, 332; ore-  
 judu 148  
 orgullo, orgulho, orgull  
 120, 328  
 oriente 207  
 oro, ouro, oiro 121, 285,  
 300, 328  
 ortodoxo, ortodojo 259  
 ortografia 197  
 oso 334  
 otero, outeiro 52, 285,  
 299, 328  
 otoño, outono 334  
 otorgar, outorgar, ob-  
 torgare 140, 328; oto-  
 rekare 143  
 otro, outro (cf. altre) 88,  
 89, 165, 252, 299;  
 oitro 300; ôtro 315;  
 otro dia 207; otrosí  
 207; otri 204, 207  
 ourívezes, ourives 303  
 oveja, ovelha, ovella 66,  
 156, 190, 246, 261;  
 obellgas 156; ovida,  
 ovisa, ovicha 190, 246;  
 ovejo 261

paadulibus 288  
 paca 244  
 padre, pare, pai 54,  
 64, 85, 89, 92, 329,  
 334  
 padroadigo 289  
 paga 54  
 page 206, 207  
 pais, país 260, 269  
 paja, palha 333

pájaro, páxaro, passaro  
 57, 66, 323; pašariku,  
 pašaru 180  
 palacio, palaço 320;  
 Palace Hotel 275  
 palacra, palacrana 34  
 paladino 193  
 palafrén 41, 207  
 palimpsesto 266  
 paloma, palomada, pom-  
 ba 64-88, 140, 149,  
 169, 333, 334  
 pampa 243, 265  
 pan 100; pa, pans 90;  
 pão, pam, pã 301;  
 panadero, padeiro 301  
 pandero, pandair 121,  
 327, 328  
 paneslavismo, pansla-  
 vismo 275  
 panida 202  
 panizo, painzo, painço  
 307  
 paño, pano, pany 329  
 paor 330  
 papá, papae 320  
 papel, papeles, papés  
 307  
 para (cf. por) 69, 323;  
 pora 69; pa, pal 260;  
 pa qué 246; pra, pro,  
 pru 323; para eu ver,  
 para mim ver 323  
 paradoja 197  
 páramo 33, 52, 265;  
 paramar, empara-  
 marse 265  
 parapeto 213  
 parar, parade 303  
 parecer, parece 222,  
 260; paese 222; paez  
 que, pasque 260;  
 parech, paregué 103;  
 parecer com 323  
 pared, parede, paredes  
 85, 222, 282, 328;  
 paeres 222  
 pareja, parelha, paréia  
 322  
 parlar 68  
 parna 270  
 parné 223  
 parra 40, 80  
 parsimonioso 275

partições, particoens 289  
 parvenú 275  
 parvo 67  
 passar, passar 155, 181,  
     186, 187, 330; passae  
     303; passar uma lição  
     no filho 323; passo,  
     passo 264, 307, 323;  
     pas 91  
 patria chica 71  
 patrón, patrões, patróis  
     307; patrona de kaza  
     183  
 paz 85, 328, 331; pau  
     92, 331  
 pechar, peitar 140, 141,  
     150, 165, 327, 333;  
 peyta, peyte 165;  
 peche, peccet 166;  
 peytet 327  
 pechos 69; pits 86, 92;  
 peito 333  
 pedante 213  
 pedruecos 149  
 penalty-kick 276  
 penal 223; penado, bê-  
     nâto 119  
 pendre 68  
 pennueco 149  
 pensar 207  
 peor, pior 265, 331;  
     pitjor 105, 331  
 pequeño, pequeno, 67,  
     330  
 péra, piera 311  
 perailes 202  
 perchadores 202  
 perder, perdo, perd 102;  
     perda, perdi 103  
 pereza, perea 333, 334  
 perfidia, perfilia 222  
 período 45  
 pero 68, 329  
 perro 66  
 perto 283  
 pescado, piškadu 181  
 pesebre 249  
 péssego 334  
 pessoa, pessoa 300  
 petate 242, 304  
 petimetre 214  
 petit 67, 330  
 pez, bij 124; peces,  
     peixes, péixer 333  
 philosophia 158  
 pianoforte 213  
 pícaro, picarón 208, 209;  
     picardía, picaldía 222  
 pichón 215  
 pie, pe, peu 83, 89, 92,  
     330; pia 140; pieses  
     260  
 piedra, pedra 54, 85, 86,  
     92, 334  
 piélagos 193  
 pierna, perna 41, 65;  
     pernil 41  
 piloto 213, 304  
 pimenta 296  
 piña 263  
 pintado 249  
 pioneer 275  
 piragua 240  
 piranha 318  
 pizarra, piçarra, pis-  
     sarra 34  
 placer, prazer, plaer,  
     plaz 205, 332; platz,  
     plau 89, 100; plach,  
     plagué 103  
 plaloró 223  
 planta, pranta 287  
 planura 195  
 plata, prata 200, 222  
 playa 52  
 plaza, plaza 142, 332;  
     praça 287, 332  
 plazo, praço 335  
 plexo, plejo 259  
 poblar 76  
 pobre 238  
 poco, pouco 227, 299,  
     311, 320; poica 298,  
     300; pôco 315, 320;  
 poch 155; puoco 311  
 poder, podedes 303;  
     pude 307; pud 205;  
     pudier, pudieres 205;  
     puderdes 303  
 poeniano 266  
 poesía 195  
 poeta 68  
 pols 333  
 poma 67  
 poncho 244  
 poner, pôr, pongo 243;  
     ponhaaes 303; pôrdes  
     303; pus 205, 303;  
 puši 271; puge, pugi  
     302, 303; pos, poso  
     293; pujen 303; puesto  
     204, 327; pondré,  
     porné 335  
 poniente 207  
 ponzoña 335  
 por, per 69; porem 322;  
     porque 207; por qua-  
     tro dia 313; pelo  
     335  
 porfiar 265  
 portar, porto, port 102,  
     103; portaz 100; porti  
     103  
 portero 207  
 portugués, portugalense  
     288  
 posada, podzada 181  
 posar, pouzar 328  
 poyo, pueyo, puig 86, 333  
 pozo, podu 224, 333  
 prado 175, 186; plado  
     175  
 prao 214, 241  
 precio 194; preu 92  
 prelado, perlado 283  
 prenda 335  
 prerrafaelista 266  
 prescindiendo de 275  
 presentir, presiente 199  
 presidente, perzidente  
     321  
 presuposición 194  
 preto 283  
 prevere, pravare 98  
 primo, primo hermano  
     65  
 príncipe, principe 48,  
     193; princép 193  
 prisión, presyón 193;  
     prišão, prijom 302  
 proa 213  
 procuramo-lo 335  
 prólogo, prólec 329  
 proponer, proponie 206  
 prouiciscor 123  
 provecho 165, 331; pro-  
     vecho 158; prouecta-  
     tura, proveito, pro-  
     vecte, profit 331  
 proveer, proveido, pro-  
     visto 204

## INDICES

psiquiatría, psichiatria 275  
 psíquis 202  
 púberes 266  
 pueblo 257; poboo, povo 300; pueblo 327  
 puente, ponte, pont 86, 327  
 puerco, porco 120, 327; porco-porco 316  
 puerta, porta 67, 134; puirtu 285  
 pues, pus 269  
 pulque, pulquería 241  
 puma 208  
 puna 243  
 punch 276  
 pundonor 208  
 puño, pungeo 156  
 punto, punt 91  
 púrpura, porpola, polbra, porpra 44; purpúrea 199  
 pus 69, 91  
 puyar 196; puxar, pujar 333  
 qual (cf. cual) 308; qual das bonecas tu amas 323  
 quando (cf. cuando) 143, 157, 332; quano 143; quandol vieron 304; quando eu hei-de ter uma rôla 323; quan 332  
 quarenta 332  
 que 207; quese=que es de 269  
 quedar 70, 212, 284  
 quedo 332  
 quemado, kematu 328; queimada 323  
 querelar 223  
 querer 67, 70, 284; quiero 157; quier 205; queredes, queréis, querés, quered 185; querria, querería 303; queiraes 303; quis 293, 298, 303; quise, quiso 293; quige, quigi 298, 302, 303; quijecche 308; quijen 303, 307; querido quies 334  
 queso 70; queijo 330  
 quessa 157  
 quetzale 241  
 qui 58, 90, 144, 204; quiskataqui uamne 44  
 quién, quem 57, 58, 212, 332; kien 327  
 quieto, quiet 330, 332  
 quiyotismo 10, 208; qui-jotizar 10  
 quilate 131  
 quillotro 197  
 quina 91  
 quina, quinina 208, 243  
 quincayú 244  
 quintal 131  
 quintás, quintans 307  
 quinto 273  
 raer, rer 299  
 raez, rafez, rece 189, 197  
 radio, radiación 201  
 rambla 335  
 ramillya 164  
 rapa 271  
 raya 276; rayo, raio, raig 333  
 razón, razão, razaom, razom 301, 333; raon 100; raô 333  
 realengo 81  
 recibir, rebre, rebeu 100  
 recién, recién casados, recién que llegó, recientemente 263  
 reclutar 273  
 récord 215  
 recordar 264  
 redondo, rotonto 121, 123  
 referee 276  
 referendus 123  
 reina, rainha 331  
 reir, rir, rijir 300  
 reja, relha, rella 332  
 rejuvenecer 90  
 religión, relisión 198; reliosis 49  
 reloj, relô, relós 259  
 remarcable 214  
 renglón 335  
 reñir, renhida, renyir 334  
 reo, 57, 261; rea 261  
 repórter 215, 275  
 reps 275  
 requiere, rikêri 119, 120, 121  
 res 63, 91  
 res, reses 66  
 resistir, registir 307  
 resollar 332  
 resona 289  
 respirar, arrespirar 321  
 resultar 70, 212  
 retaguarda, retaguardia 130, 207  
 retortoiru 227  
 reuocito 123  
 rey, rei 36, 203, 328, 331; rej 181; rees, reyes 203  
 reyerta, rehyerta 161  
 rezar, resar 176, 335  
 ría 9  
 riba 54  
 rico, riqueza, ric 80  
 rienda 335  
 rígido, rijo, regeo, rejo 294  
 rigoroso 198  
 rindibú 213  
 rinque 270  
 río 57; ribolo 49  
 robar 79  
 roblo, robledo 24  
 rodear, rodeio, rodea 301  
 rogar, rogalle 335  
 rojo, roxo 334  
 rolha 332  
 romance 176  
 rònega 84  
 ronronear 266  
 rosa 94, 155, 186, 329, 330  
 rosibf 215  
 rostro, rosto 65  
 roto 243  
 rua 67, 316; ru 316  
 rubeniano, rubenianismo, rubendarismo 202

rubio, ruivo, roig 327,  
     333  
 rueca, roca 80  
  
 sabao 296  
 sabana 240  
 saber 90, 227; sabede  
     303; supe 90, 227;  
     supiese, sabiese 227;  
     sapiendo 148; supien-  
     do 227; supido 90,  
     227; sabudo 304; sope,  
     soube 328; sepa, saiba  
     330, 333  
 sacanete 214  
 sacerdote 194  
 saeta 331  
 ſahamialla, ſahamiella  
     120, 327  
 saiguoque 271  
 sal 85  
 salir 204, 329; sair,  
     saeu, saiu 294, 329;  
     saldré, sairei 335  
 salterio 333  
 salto 89, 289, 328  
 salvado, sarvado 321  
 samicas 298  
 samorim 296  
 sangre de los godos 79;  
     sangriliger, sangri-  
     pesado 264  
 sangüichi 270  
 ſante 271  
 santiguar, santificar 193,  
     194  
 santolio 265  
 ſarape 270  
 saraviado 249  
 sarbacana 319  
 sarna 34, 53  
 sastre 134  
 saudade 272  
 sayo, sáio 41  
 sayón 52  
 se 70, 261, 323; se es  
     poeta 261; si 323  
 se o eu ouvisse 290  
 sebo 265  
 seglara 261  
 seguidilla, seguiriya 222  
 seis, seš 181; seis, sis  
     333  
 selfmademan 275  
  
 semblar 335  
 sencillo, senzill 334  
 senda 264; ſemtair, sem-  
     dero, sendero 121,  
     143, 148  
 sendo, senda, siendas  
     176, 334; seños 334;  
     sengles, senhos 334  
 señor, sennor, señor  
     155, 156, 261, 333; la  
     señor 204; señora 187,  
     204, 238, 246, 259,  
     269; senigor, senior  
     156; señor, sanyor  
     98, 333; senhora, sin-  
     há, sinházinha 323;  
     señó, señá 263; chinu-  
     ra 246; xenola 187,  
     238, 246, 258, 269;  
     nhónhónha 316  
 sentar, sentáte 261;  
     siéntense, siéntensen  
     262  
 sentir, sinto, senço 303  
 septentrión 207  
 septiembre, ſetember  
     123  
 ser 70, 212, 321; seer  
     300; seres 175; soy,  
     soc, som, sam, sou  
     298, 303, 330; es, ies,  
     ie, ya, yes, ye 140,  
     141, 143, 145, 226,  
     327; somos, semos  
     298; sodes, soes, sois,  
     sos 185; sou 100; yera  
     226; seja, sia, sa 303;  
     sé 321; fum, fuche,  
     foche, foi 308; foram,  
     foro 311; fuerdes 205;  
     fué a dar 70, 205;  
     es que, ello es que  
     263; es muerto, es  
     nacido 212, 264; Ser  
     Supremo 214  
 sergente 206  
 servicial 261  
 servir, ſerveixo 90, 102;  
     servesc 102; servim  
     90; servesca, serveixi  
     102  
 servitud 213  
 sessenta, sessanta 329  
 sí 330

siempre, sempre 63, 92;  
     sempe 321  
 siete, siet, sete, set 85,  
     86, 203, 328  
 siglo, sieglo, século, segle  
     48, 164, 194, 332  
 silla, ſela 88; ſiella 327  
 ſilueta 215  
 silva, ſiurba 311  
 sindicato 275  
 ſiniestro, ſestro, ſinistre  
     65  
 ſinſonte 241  
 ſítio 323  
 ſnob 275  
 ſobre 52  
 ſobrino, ſobrina 65;  
     ſobrín 227  
 ſocio 275  
 ſojornar 207  
 ſol 327, 328  
 ſoledades, ſoleares 222  
 ſoltóllilas, ſoltóſelas 144,  
     145  
 ſombrero 187, 238, 246,  
     259; ſombrero e paja  
     260; chumpiru 187,  
     246, 259  
 ſon 100, 207  
 ſoneto 213  
 ſope 270  
 ſorpresa 213  
 ſortú 214  
 ſosiego, ſociego 176, 208  
 ſoso 333  
 ſotegón 271  
 ſoto, ſouto 285, 289,  
     299, 328  
 ſtarter 276  
 ſu, ſeu, ſua 90, 328  
 ſuaré 275  
 ſubir 196; ſubir em 323  
 ſucessores, ſuſores 302  
 ſucio, ſujo 327  
 ſuegra, ſogra 52  
 ſueño 51; ſuaño 140  
 ſufrir, çufre 189  
 ſuichero 270  
 ſumiller 207  
 ſupé 275  
 ſuperficialidad 201, 214  
 ſur 207  
 ſuso 334  
 ſutiador 270, 271

## INDICES

ta 303  
 tabaco 240, 304  
 tabalião, tabaliom 309  
 tal, tar 222  
 taladro, trado, taladre 41  
 tálamo 200  
 taled 127  
 Talmud 127  
 tamale 241  
 tamanduá 244, 250, 318  
 tamaño, tamanho 52, 69, 198, 334  
 también, tambem, 59  
 tambo, tambillo 242, 245  
 tameme 241  
 tanger 306  
 tapete, tapiz 47  
 tapioca 244, 296, 318  
 tapir, tapiréte, tapiru-çu, taphire 241, 244, 318  
 tapuya 319  
 te, 203, 293, 294, 308, 322  
 té 213; té dansant 275  
 teja 332  
 teléfono, telefón, telejón 201, 270  
 telégrafo 45, 201  
 tembata 319  
 temer, temudo 303  
 temperar 265  
 tener, ter 70, 90, 212, 283, 300, 301, 329, 330; tener 90, 330; téer 300, 301; tengo, tiengo 225; tingui 90; tienen, tiens 226; tiene, tien 85, 205; tene 327; temiu 90, 92, 100; tenéis, tenetz, tenez 90, 226; tenéš 181; tēedes, tendes 300, 303; tienen 85; tenga, tienga 86; tenía, tene, tenies, tenie, teniemos, teniedes, tenien 205; tuve 90; teve, tevo 293, 294; tuvimos 262; toviés, toviesses 205; tenido, tingut, tuvido 90; teúdo e manteúdo 303; te-  
 nho-o 322; tenho visto uma ave 290; tendrá 335; terei 335  
 teniente 134  
 teocalli 241  
 tercero, terzero, ter-  
 ceiro, tercer 143, 327, 333  
 terceto 213  
 tercio 208  
 territorio, territorio 328  
 tesoro, tesaur 91  
 testa 65, 213  
 testigo, testiga 261  
 thiufadus 79  
 ti 90, 306  
 tiangue, tianguera 241  
 tibio 185, 327; tebi 327  
 tidular 330  
 tiempo, tiempos, tem-  
 pos, temps 54, 69;  
 timpu 285; tiêmpo 311  
 tierno 335  
 tierra, terra 327  
 tieso 334  
 tigre, tigra 261; tigres  
 tantas 241  
 tijeras, tiseras 259  
 tilde, til, títol 329, 335  
 tio, tía 51, 52, 65  
 tirada 275  
 tirano 193; tiranizar 197  
 todo, tóto 123; tôdo 322;  
 tou 322; tuto 142;  
 todavía 182, 322; tots  
 temps, tots jorns 63;  
 todo lo puede 22;  
 todollos 335  
 tomar 68  
 tomate 241, 304  
 tomillo 44  
 tona 40  
 topar 264  
 Tora 127  
 tornar a 70, 207  
 traer, trair 269; traz 205; traje truje 264;  
 traidrá 269  
 tráfico 213  
 traición 80  
 tranvía 215  
 transparente 195  
 trastornar, trastorné 143  
 trauto 193  
 travesía 334  
 tregua 79  
 treinta, trinta 331  
 tremebundo 70  
 tren, trem 323  
 trencar 92  
 tres, trés, trei 320, 321;  
 trés animal 315; trez  
 ano 321  
 triandáfila 153  
 tribu 48  
 tributo, treudo 194  
 trigar 79  
 trillar 332  
 trincar 214, 264  
 trinchea, trinchera 213  
 trinquis 214  
 triste 197  
 trobar, troba, trobador 57, 68, 207, 297  
 trocha 264  
 trucha, truhta 122, 333  
 tu, teu, tua 328  
 tu 90, 209, 210, 226, 261, 306  
 tucano, tucão 244, 318  
 tucapú 319  
 tuerto, tuorto 327  
 tundidores 202  
 túnel 215  
 tupan 319  
 tusón 213  
 ubá 240, 245, 296, 318  
 ubatim 318  
 ubérrimo 202  
 uço 67, 334  
 ugier 207  
 ul, ulo 308  
 último, úrtemo 311  
 uña, unha, unglia 334  
 uncerfater 189  
 unçir 334  
 uno 304; uma, unha 308; uns negoço 321;  
 uno es 261  
 upper-cut 276  
 urubú 244, 245  
 urutau 244, 250, 254  
 usaje 207  
 usted 9, 10, 102, 209,

210, 293; ucé, océ 209;  
 ostede 305; uté 220;  
 ustedes 261; vuestra  
 merced, v.m., vue-  
 sarcé, vuesasté 9, 209;  
 vesté 102; vestede 305  
  
 va, vanse 176; vamonós  
 250, 260; vamoh 259;  
 váganse 261; voy a  
 70, 262, 271; va donar  
 70; vaig anar 205; va  
 y llueve 262; voy ir  
 cogiendo 262  
 vaca 330; vámónos 335;  
 vaca danta, vaca  
 montés 241; huaca  
 246  
 vado, badhu 119  
 vagabundo, vagamundo  
 265  
 vagón 215  
 vagueza 199, 213  
 vaina, veina 331  
 valerei 335  
 vals, vales 307  
 varón 180  
 vasallos, yaçallos 219  
 vecino, vizinho, veí 89,  
 92, 181, 331; vizinu  
 181; vecín 227; viciño  
 307  
 vega 9, 34, 121, 285;  
 baica, bega, baiga,  
 baika 121, 327; veiga  
 34, 285, 327; ueika,  
 ueca 327  
 vela 181, 213  
 velludo 204  
 vena, veia 289  
 vencer, vencido, ven-  
 çudo 204  
 vengar 181  
 venir 70, 111; vir, viñr,  
 viñr 301, 329; viengo  
 225; ve, vem, viene  
 327; vindes 303; vine,  
 vingué 111; veio 289;  
 venido, vingut 111;  
 vino 328; vim 328;  
 ven 328; ve 328, 329  
 ventana 67  
 ver 204; veer 300;  
 veure 330; veía, vía  
 212, 269; vide, vi 269;  
 vido, vió 212, 264;  
 vede 303; ve, ved  
 328; veido 204; verrá  
 335; visto 69, 204; ver  
 gatos ensillados 265  
 verdad, verdade 282  
 verdaderos, verdaderos  
 327  
 verde, vert 327  
 vereda 264  
 vergüenza 156, 333;  
 vergoina 156; ver-  
 gonha, vergonya 333  
 verificar 193  
 vestir, festir 157  
 vez 327; vegada 330  
 vicuña 243  
 vida 54, 309; bida  
 309  
 vidrio, vidro, vidre 327  
 viejo, bieggó 148, 332;  
 velho, véio 322, 332  
 viento, biento, vento,  
 vent 182; vientos 264,  
 327  
 viernes 58, 69, 335  
 vino, vinu 181  
 virar 207  
 virgen, virgem 194, 311;  
 birge 311; virges,  
 virgens 307  
 viscacha 243  
 visible, veíble 330  
 viso 195  
 vispera, viéspéra 18,  
 164  
 vitrallas 275  
 vivir, bivir 154, 185  
 vogar 63  
 volcán 265  
 volcar 265  
 voler 67; vuel 67;  
 voldré 335; voleu,  
 vullau 100  
 voluntad, bolumtate  
 142  
 volver a 70, 207  
 vos 209, 210, 261, 271,  
 309, 313; bos 309;  
 boso 313, 333; voso-  
 tros 210  
 voz, veu, vots, vou  
 100  
 vueltas 140  
 vuestro, vossa, vossa,  
 bossa 309; bosso rou-  
 pa 313; Vuestra Se-  
 ñoría, Usía 210  
  
 winning-post 276  
  
 xe, xi 302  
 xei 133  
 xénef 182  
 xenoza 182  
 xilográfia, jilología 259  
 xop 105  
  
 y 226  
 ya, ye 130; hyáuen-  
 galuon 203  
 ya, ja, já 181, 316  
 yacaré 318  
 yacer, jazer 181  
 yanacona 242  
 yaraví 243  
 yatay 254  
 yaya 251  
 yegua, egua, euga 66  
 yelmo, elmo 79, 331  
 yerba, jerba 181; yerba  
 mate 243  
 yerno, gendre, genro 92,  
 329, 335  
 yeso, gesso, guix 44  
 yo, eu, jo 58, 90, 226;  
 yo fuí fué mar 263  
 yuca 240  
 yugo, jugo 181  
  
 zaga, çaga 130, 188, 207  
 zaguán 132  
 zalmedina 129, 131  
 zampoña 52  
 zamuro 245  
 zapatero, sabater 92,  
 100  
 zara 240, 245  
 zaragüelles, çaragüelles  
 189  
 zarza, çarça 186  
 zatico, çatico 34  
 zavazoke 129, 131, 134  
 zodiaco 193  
 zopilote 241, 245  
 zorra 34  
 zozobrar, çocobrar 189

## INDICES

## (b) Basque

[a. See also under *h*]  
 -a 23, 24  
 a(h)ate 19  
 aita 18, 20, 23, 24, 32  
 aitzinean 25  
 ala 25  
 alaba 28  
 andi 30  
 andre 18, 32  
 antzar 19  
 ap(h)ezpiku 19  
 ar- 25  
 ara 26, 28, 39  
 aragi 32  
 ardit 34  
 ardum 32  
 arima 19  
 artu 23  
 asto 19  
 asturu 19  
 atxeter 19

b- 23, 28  
 ba, bai 23, 25, 28  
 bage 18, 23, 30  
 bai 26  
 baizikan 32  
 bake 19  
 banintz 23  
 barka(tzen) 32  
 bat(zu) 25  
 bederatz 25  
 bei 34  
 belaterra 32  
 bere, bere, burua 25  
 berri 17, 26, 30, 34  
 berrogei 18, 25  
 besta 19  
 bezela 32  
 bi, biga 25  
 bigarren 25  
 bizar 34  
 borondate 19, 32  
 boronte 19  
 bortz, bost 25

d- 20, 22  
 da 20, 23, 28  
 dabe 22  
 difue 22

doa 21  
 dot 22  
 draukat 30  
 du, dut 20, 22

[e. See also under *h*]  
 e- 23  
 edin 32  
 edo 25  
 egin 30, 32  
 egun 32  
 e(h)un 25  
 ek(h)arri 17, 18, 22, 36  
 eman 30, 32  
 erda, erdera 28  
 erori, -ko, -tzen 23, 32  
 errege 17, 19, 32, 36  
 erreinu 32  
 esker 17  
 eskola 19  
 eta 24, 25  
 et(h)orri 17, 30, 32, 36  
 etxe 15, 17, 26, 34  
 euki, eduki 22, 32  
 ez 23, 25, 32  
 ezker 17, 34, 65  
 ezta 23

g- 22  
 gabe=bage  
 gaitz 32  
 gana 23  
 gara 28  
 gari 32  
 -garren 25  
 gaur 32  
 gauza 19  
 gisuarri 34  
 gorputz 19  
 gorri 26  
 gu 22, 25, 30, 32  
 gure 23, 24, 32  
 gurutz 19

[No aspirate in Spanish Basque]  
 h- 22  
 hamabi 25  
 hamaika 25  
 hamar 25

han 25  
 hari 17  
 hartz 18  
 haur 17  
 hemen 25  
 herri 15, 17  
 hi 25  
 hirur 18  
 hirurogei 18  
 hogei 18, 25

[i. See also under *h*]  
 i- 23, 28  
 ibaiko 34  
 ibiltze 23  
 -ik 28  
 ik(h)usi, -ko, ik(h)usten 17, 23, 36  
 ildu 28  
 ioan, joan 22, 30  
 iri, ili 17, 18, 26, 28, 29, 39  
 ixker 17  
 izan 23  
 izen 32  
 izoki 18

jaun, jaungoikoa 32  
 jon 22

-k 22, 24, 28  
 kanto(in) 34  
 -ke 23  
 -ki 22  
 kide 28  
 -ko 23, 25

-la, -lako 23, 28  
 lau(r) 25  
 laurogei 18, 25  
 lege 19  
 len(engo) 25  
 libra(tu) 32  
 liburu 19  
 lur 32

maitatu, maitatzen 20  
 mediku 19  
 mezpera 18  
 mila 25  
 miriku 19

n- 22; -n- 22; -n 23, 28	-ra 18, 28	z-, -z-, -z 22, 29
ña, na 22	saldi 35	zaldi 19, 35
naba 9, 33	santifikatu 32	zamari 19
nekarren, see ek(h)arri	sarna 34	zati 34
ni 23, 25	sei 25	zaudena 23, 32
nioan, see ioan	seme 19	zazpi 25
nor 25, 30		zekor 34
[o. See also under h]	-t 22	zen 25
ogi 32	ta 25	zentsu 19
-oi 26, 28	-te 22, 23	zer 25
on 25, 30	tentazio 32	zeru, zeruetan 19, 23
opus 19	toi 28	32
ori 25	-tu 23	zor 32
ork(h)atz 18	txakur 34	zordun 32
ortzi 32	-tze 23	zortzi 25
otz 26, 28, 30		zu 22, 25, 30
pake 19	ur 17, 28, 32	zugur 34
pizar 34	utzi 32	zure 32

